

I CHANGED A MONSTER

INTRODUCTION

her: he's never been like this with anyone.
You're different

I kept quiet. I really didn't have a comment.
This was way too much for me. I was shit
scared.

Her: how do you do it!? How!? *screams* I gave
him my all, I lost my family, I have lived in the
streets just for him to betray me and love you. I
was always there and then you come along
boring, fat and ugly yet he falls for you! He
never fell for the other girls at all! You
bewitched him! Sneaky bitch!

She jumped on me and started throwing punches and me, I defended myself, but it was hard especially when she picked up her gun and aimed at me. I knew I was going to get hurt today. I wiped the blood from my nose.

Her: "touch her and you'll see why I'm called Rellik" he says with so much pride. You're like his prize, isn't it wonderful? *laughs crazily* if I can't have him, you definitely won't. Witch!

I closed my eyes. Lord help me.

[02/17, 09:57] Wdz: ~I CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 1

.

.

.

--LONA'S POV--

I am Lelona Daniel. At 18 years I'm doing my first year in varsity, the institution I'm in is called University of Cape Town. I'm a shy person. Normally I don't talk to people I don't know. Most of the time I'm cuddled up in my bed watching movies or exercising at the gym or better yet I do my assignments and study hence I'm called a nerd by family members. I don't have a social life, the only friend I have is Kayla. We met in high school, we weren't friends in high school. I was shocked when she sent me an inbox on Facebook asking to meet up. We met up and from there on we've been friends. I am fat, that's why I go to the gym. I'm not the obese fat just the medium fat. I have okay boobs and I have a huge ass. I have 2 older

brothers. We live in Cape Town whilst our dad lives in our hometown Eastern Cape, King Williams Town. It has been 3 months here in Cape Town and I can say I'm actually enjoying it. I started the gym 3 months ago. I live with my brothers in a house they share. I never bother them because I'm always in my room or I'm at school, I really don't have a social life. I got a text from Kayla.

Kayla♥ : chomi. Me and my friend are hosting a little kickback at his house. You sliding thru right?

Kayla knows I hate parties but she invites me every time! Kayla is the opposite of me. She's beautiful with a slim body to die for, she's a colored and very popular. She parties almost every weekend. She always tells me she has one life to live and she's gonna live it to the

fullest. I decided to respond to her text because she hates me blue ticking her.

me: no. I have a test to study for and an assignment to do. Sorry best friend

Kayla♥ : liar. Lelona you need to go out, you'll think of this fun time when you're old and and wrinkled and nobody will want to party with you.

me: Kayla, books are more important. I know what I came to Cape Town for. I can ruin that by partying, it's just not me. You know that.

Kayla♥ : mxm whatever gogo.

I chuckled at her text deciding not to text back. She deserves this bluetick I laid my books in the little table I had and decided to study. I can't ruin my future, parties are annoying anyway. The loud music? I can listen on my phone, the

food? I can cook at home, the people? I just hate them. See sorted. Party by myself, that I like! After studying for 2 hours I decided to take a break. I went downstairs, to get some water. I greeted my brothers. The first born is Yanga'inkosi everyone calls him King and the second born is Khazimla, but everyone call him Muller.

King: oko ubufunda elixesha? (you have been studying this whole time?)

Me: yeah. Need to get ready incase we get a surprise test.

King: you do know people go crazy when they study a lot right? Uzo'blow'a (you'll go crazy)

Me: that's just a myth from amavila (lazy people).

Muller: *laughs* baby sis. You need to go out sometimes. Ayikho grand for umntu ona18

abe's serious ngolife. (It's not good for an 18 year old to be this serious about life.)

he wrapped his arm around my shoulders pulling me closer to his chest. In a brotherly hug

Me: so you wouldn't mind me going to a party full of varsity guys

varsity guys, they're all known to be players or corrupt people.

King: awuyi kwimbadla emuncu. (you're not going to a stupid party). We're just talking about you going to the mall or-

Me: I do go to the mall to buy stuff for myself.

King: uyandazi ba ndithini. (you know what I mean.) Go watch movies-

Me: ikhona iTV endlini (there's a TV in the house.)

Muller: (chuckles) go to a spa then. You being this antisocial iyasoyikisa (worries us.)

Me: I won't try to kill myself again. I have cuts to remind me of that day, no need to stress. I just love indoors can't I just stay at home all day? Ndiphuma xa ndisiya eskolweni. (I go out when I go to school.)

In high-school I got bullied because of my weight, and me being an nerd made it worse. my family didn't care about it, to them it was just kids teasing, I needed to grow tougher skin. They started taking it serious when I got suicidal. My brothers sorted the situation out and it was decided that I would move to Cape Town this year, and I did. That's why I stay indoors all the time, I have anxiety that I might get bullied again. I started the gym to get the

perfect body maybe then I'll have the confidence to go out more.

.

King: You need get to know more people.

Me: why are you guys talking about this? Zange yanixaphazela kuqala. (It never bothered you before.)

I removed myself from Muller

King: we're having a party tomorrow. We don't want you to get uncomfortable-

Me: I'll just go to Kayla's apartment. Don't stress.

Muller: *chuckles* Kayla's gonna be here.

Uyalazi ela'hule ulibiza ichomi zange yaphosa imbadla. (You know how that hoe you call a friend never misses a party.)

Me: don't do that to Kayla.

Muller: funny how she bullied you in high school but she's your friend now. Ndiyizonda nyan labitch (I really hate that bitch)

Me: she was following the crowd. She apologized and that's in the past. So I guess I have to be here by force?

King: yeah. I'll keep you by my side at all times.

Me: I thought you guys didn't want me to attend parties.

Muller: we don't want you to attend parties unless you have someone we trust there with you. Ndithemba uYanga, uYanga uthemba mna qha. (I only trust Yanga and Yanga only trusts me.)

Me: *laughs* smooth.

I took an apple with water since I can't eat loads of food. My diet doesn't allow me too. I'm on an extreme diet with an intensive exercise plan. In

about 6 months I want to be thin, then after my body is good. I'll go to my skin, I need it to be beautiful, like those instagram girls.

Me: what's the dress code?

King: (laughs) at our house parties there isn't a dress code. Nxiba lento uyifunayo. (Just wear what you wanna wear.)

Muller: no hoeish clothes, just your normal shit.

I nodded heading back to my room. My brothers are in a gang that do heists. I don't get involved in their stuff, and I am safe. I don't want people to know we're related because they might hurt me. I started studying again while eating the apple. I got disturbed by Kayla calling, I picked it up.

Me: skeem (friend)

Kay: skeem (friend). We're gonna shopping tomorrow.

Me: tomorrow? Can't. I have to go study with Cardo, he asked me to help him on something.

Kay: wait? Is that tomorrow? I forgot you're going on a date!

Me: what? No. It's just studying in a library. Not a date.

Kay: I didn't think Cardo was your type of dick. But get it on, sis. Andikhalazi. (I am not complaining.)

Me: Kayla! (laughs embarrassed) I am hanging up this phone. You're weird. Yenziwe nguwe lento! (You're the same one who did this!)

Kayla: ciao bitch!

Me: love you too idiot.

We both dropped the call, I decided to watch

some movie but first I checked my Facebook requests, I accepted people I knew and deleted those I didn't. My Instagram isn't private but I post things that are appropriate for it. I don't want to get turned down on a job interview because my Instagram, Twitter and Facebook were not appropriate. I sorted my books accordingly, then I texted Cardo that we should meet up early so I can get the rest of the day to myself.

me: let's meet up at 10am I need some time to myself. I'll be busy the whole day that's the only time I'm free.

Cardo : okay. We'll meet at the library?

Me: yeah. See you then.

Cardo:

I always lie to people and say I'm gonna be busy

but I'm always on my books or I'm watching tv. I just don't like being around people. That's why I lie and say I'm busy. I didn't tell my brothers about the study session with Cardo because they might get angry. Around the campus Cardo is know for gang representing [doing gang activities. Representing a gang]. He reps his gang, and he's always wearing American flag clothes. He reps the Americans gang. He had asked me to help him with the class he struggles in, although I was gonna say no, but Kayla jumped saying yes. I was angry but I had to do it because I'm one of the top students in my classes, currently, and I'll feel bad if I didn't help him.

~~~

Next day I showered after I returned from the gym. I could see I was losing a bit of weight, my stomach and waist was getting a little bit smaller. Thanks to the waist trainer but my thighs were still big. I need to work on that, my

ass was slowly improving. I started the gym 3 months ago but I'm already tired of it. Even though the results give me motivation. I wore my black baggy tee with my dark blue jeggings. Then I wore my sandals, I tied my braids into an 'idc style' I took my tiny bag. I went out, my brothers weren't here so I took a taxi to the school library. When I got there, I sat down waiting for Cardo. I decided on looking at what we'll do when he arrives.

Me: I'll just start in the basics.

I said to myself searching for gang things on Google. My phone vibrated while I was still busy searching on the web.

Cardo: you're inside?

Me: yeah.

After 10 minutes I saw him enter the library. He had his headphones on, he was wearing an American colored tee with jeans sagging on the back he had on red and blue Jordan 12s. American flag printed bandana was in his pocket but swinging around.

Cardo: sorry I'm late. Had to deal with something real quick.

I just nodded. I went back to the first page, he took out his books, I noticed a bag of weed in there. He quickly put it back in his bag.

Me: okay, how about we start from the basics. Then we go up from there?

Cardo: aight. Everything's cool with me.



We started studying, he was slow but I helped him. I tried using gang stuff as an example so help could catch it easily and my theory worked! He caught in quickly. I had to Google gang things to familiarise myself with it. After 3 hours, I told him we should get home now. He agreed

Cardo: thanks again for this. When can you help me again? I understand it to your way rather than Mr Maybank's way.

Me: I'm free almost everyday so it's up to you.

Cardo: okay. I'll text you.

I nodded walking off, I decided to walk to the taxi rank, but on the way I got a call from King.

me: mkhuluwa (big brother)

King: uphi? (where are you?.)

me: I'm at the taxi rank. I was at the library.

King: okay. Uqale nini ufunda kwilibrary yesgela ngoku? (Since when do you study at the school library?)

me: since you attacked me from being antisocial.

King: Lelona . You know we only want what's best for you.

Me: I know. I know.

King: good. Xa ubuya ungapheka. (When you return don't cook), I've ordered something.

Me: okay. Muller uphi? (Where is Muller?)

King: ukhona. (He's here)

Me: okay sure

King: love you.

Me: love you too.

We both dropped the call, I got inside and waited 30 minutes for the taxi to fill up. King called again and wanted to come fetch me but I told him that I can wait, he wanted me to be social this was my chance. Although I don't talk at all in the taxi but I didn't get an anxiety attack. This was an improvement. I arrived home to the smell of weed. I rolled my eyes, I asked my brothers nicely not to smoke when I'm around. I was shocked to find females I didn't even know, in our living room. I wanted to say something but I am held myself back. They greeted, I just waved going to my room. After a while I watched movies in my room, I heard girls' laughter. And loud music. I got annoyed, gosh why didn't I take the res life over this? I connected my headphones on the laptop and continued watching the movie. Later at night the house was packed and it was noisy, some

people would accidentally open my door thinking it's the bathroom. I ended up locking my room. I got a text from Kayla telling me to meet her downstairs. It's 11pm and these people are still not tired? I put on my gown, I opened the door, and some people's eyes were on me, some chuckled. I quickly closed the door. Gosh! Why the fuck did I wear pj's thinking it's okay. I changed into my grey matching sweatpants and sweatshirt with black tee underneath the sweatshirt and my chucks. I let my hair loose and headed downstairs, at least this time people won't be laughing at me. But I still hate people looking at me. Once I arrived downstairs, I met up with Kayla. She had a peach crop top on with a blue tight jeans, her weave was curly then she had on white airmax.

Kayla: really? Sweats to a party? Lelona.

Me: stop whining. Andifuni nobalapha ( I don't

even want to be here. )

I got a text from King saying they're in the living room I should be there

Me: King wants me in the living room.

Kayla: okay. I need a shot first.

Me: I'll ask them where the alcohol is. Come.

I dragged her to the living room. There were loads of people in the living room. I was a bit scared. I started breathing heavy. My brothers noticed, they quickly ran to me and took me to the other room without people noticing I was having an anxiety attack.

King: Lelona, cela uphefumle. [please breathe.]

I had tears in my eyes. I tried breathing slowly but my chest hurt so bad. It was like my lungs were closing in on me.

Muller: we're here. Just breathe. Yonke into igrand (Everything's okay.) Just breathe.

King: fuck! I should've known you weren't ready.

I started breathing slowly. I wiped my tears when I felt okay, I hugged my brothers shaking.

Me: I don't want these people here, please.

Muller: baby girl. You're not gonna die, you have to face people-

King: Khazimla-

Muller: no, Yanga. I love our sister but we have to stop babying her. Asizohlala silapha zizombamba isandla. (We won't always be here

to hold her hand.)

King: I'll always be here.

Muller: you know what this is?

Muller looked at me. I nodded getting teary-eyed.

Muller: what is it?

Me: tough love.

Muller: it's still love. I can't let you be weak like this. Weakness is not in our genes. You're not falling, we got you. Now head up high, guard up and let's go.

I nodded. King watched Muller walk out. Me and King walked out, people stared at us probably wondering why I had red eyes. And they probably now know I'm related to them. We

headed back to the living room. Only my brothers' gang members were there I know they're the gang members because each of them the same tattoo of an American dollar sign on their forearm, and a gang sign of a B on the forearm also. Nobody else was there, it made me wonder if Kayla was still around. I got introduced, there was X, Game, Trigger, Gunz and my brothers.

.

X: so this is the little princess we always hear about.

I smiled nodding. I got up to leave, King asked me where I was heading.

Me: to give you guys privacy. I'm going to my room.

King: you can sit.



I nodded sitting down, as they proceeded talking. I laugh every time each of them would tell a story even though I didn't even know their government names, they were really entertaining. The living room door opened and Cardo walked in.

Cardo: didn't know you fucked with Brims.

Everyone's got quietly wondering who he's talking to. My brother's gang is called "Brimms" I tried getting them to explain it to me but dololo answer

Me: King and Muller are my brothers.

Cardo: oh shit! No wonder I never see you off campus.

King: how do you know my little sister?

Cardo: she's helping me in studying. We went to the library today.

King and Muller looked at me. I looked down, I know I'm in trouble.

Muller: why are you here Cash?

Cardo: boss man wants to speak to yall tomorrow about a heist.

King: okay, now go.

Cardo walked out. I felt bad because they were so rude to him.

King: I don't want you hanging with gang members. It's dangerous.

Me: I'm hanging with yall.

Muller: don't get smart with us.

Trigger: at least it's Cash. He's harmless

King: still that nigga is hard-headed he might get her hurt.

Me: he's not even friends with me. I just help him with one class. How do you even know him? He's a American member.

Muller: what do you know about gangs?

Me: I just Google stuff.

Muller: we're a part of the American gang but on a different block. Just like 26s together they're 26s but some branch out with other names like Nasty Boys. But they're still 26s.

I nodded. I can see Muller wasn't happy with me hanging with gang members. He wanted me to be safe all the time.

King: maybe Cash can keep an eye out for you in school.

I shrugged. They continued on with their stories, I just listened. After a while people starting getting in the living room again, King looked at me. I nodded to show him I'm okay. Kayla sat next to me.

Kayla: you're okay now?

Me: yeah. Ubuphi? (where were you?)

Kayla: I wanted do give you space. I don't like it when you get anxiety attacks.

I noticed she was drunk, so I just smiled at her. Gunz continued telling the story when he almost got arrested when his two girlfriends

were fighting for him. Other people listened too, it was chilled. Maybe this party isn't bad after all. I started getting thirsty so I went to the kitchen to get myself some cool drink. There were a lot of people in the kitchen. I noticed they were mostly gang members. I took a Fanta can, when I turned around I noticed a guy staring hard at me. His friends were talking together but he's attention was on me. I quickly walked out the kitchen then I went to the living room. I opened my drink and sat down, the circle was still formed and people were still listening to the stories.

Kayla: I need to use the toilet.

Me: eww

Kayla: not in that way!

Me: okay, go. I'm not holding you back \*laughs\*

Kayla: come with me please.

Me: don't force it out, it's gonna get there passionately.

Kayla: \*laughs\* it's always the virgins that say freaky shit.

We both laughed as she dragged me towards the bathroom. When we got in she peed then washed her hands.

Kayla: bestie I have been waiting for my bae to show up; but tjo aka'poppi ( he's not arriving.)

Me: it's a good thing he can't see you drunk.

Kayla: voetsek wena! Iyandi'dika futhi lento yakho umdala kangaka unga'tyiwa [you, fuck off! And this thing of yours not being fucked annoys me]

Me: mxm. Leave my virginity alone. I didn't tell you when to lose yours.

Kayla: uya'thanda uthetha ikaka yakho futhi, mnqundu wakho. \*laughs\* (You love talking shit, you ass)

I'm used to Kayla being drunk so whatever she says goes on one ear and out the other honestly. I dragged her out the bathroom. Once we were on the corridor I saw the cute kitchen guy approaching us with one of his friend. Kayla rushed to hug the other guy shifting all of her weight on him. I shook my head.

Kayla: Scrappy where the fuck have you been! ?

Scrappy: get yo stupid drunk ass off me, bruh.

Kayla: no. Anyway that's my friend Lelona. We wanna go to the race babe.

I looked at her like she had 2 heads. I'm not going anywhere with people I don't know.

Scrappy: Lelona doesn't look like she wants to go \*laughs\*

Kayla: Zay will keep her company. Chomi, uyamazi uXavier mos? (Friend, you know Xavier right?)

I shook my head no , not even looking at the cute kitchen stranger whom now I know as Xavier .

Kayla: kanti uzomazi kwi'race ke. (You'll know him at the race then)

I pulled Kayla away from Scrappy, and took her to my room. As I said before I don't like talking to people I don't know or around people I don't know.



Me: what are you doing?

Kayla: taking you to the race.

Me: andifuni ukuya kule'race mna (I don't want to go to this race.)

Kayla: fine then be a boring bitch with no niggas.

Me: with pleasure.

Kayla: you're gonna fucking die alone and you won't cry to me complaining nobody loves you. You want everyone to pity you because of stupid anxiety attacks. Grow some balls and confidence while you're at it. Your brothers won't be there forever to lie to you every time. Stop being a baby, this is life. I won't pity you because these attacks are stupid! You won't die from them.

Me: you don't understand-

Kayla: I'm happy I don't. Grow up man! I'm not gonna be friends with weak bitches . And save

those tears for the pillow. You're in varsity, act like it!

Then she stormed out. I sat down my bed wiping the tears I had. I shouldn't have let Kayla drink knowing how she gets when she's drunk. I locked my door and changed into my PJs then I proceeded to sleep with my hurt feelings. Tomorrow is another day, and I know Kayla's gonna apologize saying she didn't mean anything, but drunk mouths speak sober minds  
[02/17, 09:58] Wdz: ~I CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 2

.

.

--LONA'S POV--

So the next day arrived quicker than I expected.

My 6:30AM alarm woke me up reminding me I have to go to the gym. My trainer must be waiting for me, I appointed a female trainer to avoid the awkward looks men give to females. I never had a boyfriend and I'm not looking for one anytime soon!

Me: looks like I'm free after the gym today.

I usually just sit and watch TV on Saturdays after I come back from the gym. After my shower, I wore my gym kit and proceeded there. When I arrived at 7:40AM only a few people were there. Naledi and I started, after 3 hours I was tired as hell. I showered in the showers and wore my other sweats, sweatpants and sweatshirt, my phone rang, I frowned when I saw it was Kayla.

me: hey. \*frowns\*

Kayla: hey skeem sam (my friend). Look about last night-

Me: you apologize and you're sorry. Alcohol and your mouth just don't mix?

Kayla: Lona. ...

Me: I've heard it all before, Kayla.

Kayla: xolo nyan. (I'm really sorry), I don't know what came over me. I should've understood why you've become this way I'm sorry.

Me: ewe kakade (yes you should have), especially since you also participated in it.

Kayla: we never meant for the bullying to be extreme. It was just supposed to be teasing. I didn't think they would go far as to beating you up or trying to rape you. I'm really sorry, bendicinga sishiye ngasemva izinto ezigqithileyo. (I thought we left the past in the past.)

Me: nam bendicinge lonto. (I thought so too.)  
Until you emotionally hurt me again. Bye Kayla.

Kayla: skeem please, just meet me in my  
apartment so we'll talk. Please now.

I dropped the call wiping my tears. Thank god the showers were empty. In high-school Kayla's group of friends tried to rape me once in the school toilets, but the school's cleaner heard the noise, I was making screaming for them to stop tearing up my clothes, she stopped them. I only told my brothers that they tried to fight me, not that they tried to rape me. I got too embarrassed, not everyone can say girls tried to rape them. I was too ashamed I was that weak. I didn't want to talk to Kayla but my heart didn't want to lose my best friend because I don't have any other friends so I went over there. It wasn't too far, I walked. When I was nearby I texted her to wait for me at the gate. I finally

arrived.

Kayla: I'm so sorry. I'm never drinking again.

She hugged me tight, and I forgot all the wrong things she said to me last night. I love my friend. She's my best friend for crying out loud.

Me: I'm sorry too, I shouldn't have brought up the past when you were trying to apologize.

Kayla: friends forever? \*smiles\*

Me: friends forever

We locked our pinkies, kissed our thumbs and brushed them together while our pinkies were still locked.

Kayla: come on inside. I want you to meet someone.

Me: ndiyathandaza ayo'ndoda. (I pray it's not a man)

Kayla: girl hush!

We ran up to her apartment. When I got there, I saw a man twice her age with a fat stomach but you could see he was filthy rich.

Kayla: bae this is my bestie. Lona, this is my baby Patrick.

I was stunned, I knew Kayla was wild just not this type of wild! I waved feeling uncomfortable.

Patrick: she's beautiful. She should join us sometime, I'd give up a million just to have a

meal in those luscious curves

I felt the need to cover up my body, I don't care even if it's childish. How could he see my body through my sweatshirt? I need to get out of here.

Kayla: she's not that kind of girl, baba. Look at the time, your wife must be pissed off. I don't want her calling me again.

Patrick: you handle looking pretty and I'll handle my wife. It was nice meeting you Lona . I hope to see you again.

I just nodded, this was so awkward. He was married! As soon as he left, I looked at my best friend.



Kayla: don't you dare judge me. The bills don't pay themselves.

Me: what about Viwe. You love that guy

Kayla: is he here now? No. He's far away in the farms, love can't pay the bills honey , sex does though.

She said that patting her vagina. I shook my head, I got a call from Cardo. I furrowed my brows. I decided to not answer I hate talking on the phone with people I don't feel comfortable with. He sent me a text.

Cardo : I'm at the library. Where are you? You won't be able to make it?

Me: sorry, I didn't know we had a session today. I'll be right there.

Cardo : why didn't you answer my call? Okay. I'll be waiting for you

I decided to ignore his question about the call. I looked at my clothes and I really didn't look presentable, and I really don't want anyone teasing me about how I look. I had enough of that in high-school . I'd have to start at home to change my clothes first then get a taxi to go to the library. I texted Cardo again

me: I'm not at home, I'll have to start there then I'll catch at taxi to town.

Cardo : just give me the address where you are and I'll get you there, take you home then go to the library with me

That sounds like a good idea but I'm still not comfortable with him to get in his car .

Me: Kayla. Cardo's suggesting that he could

take me home, then go to the library. Should I send him your address?

Kayla: yeah sure. \*smirks\*

Me: don't give me that smirk!

Kayla: just didn't think you, a girl with trust issues, would be quick to give him the friendship privileges.

Me: shut up.

Then I felt the need to tell Cardo to cancel because Kayla is a bitch right. I don't even know Cardo like that. I texted him I won't make it.

Me: can't make it. Not feeling good. Maybe next week?

Cardo : sure thing. What's wrong?

I decided not to respond to him. He's not my

friend. It doesn't involve him if I'm sick or not.

Me: I cancelled.

Kayla: what!? Lona you do realize this anxiety and depression of yours is making you look like a bad person-

Kayla kept quiet once she heard my phone ring. I looked at the caller ID, it was Cardo. I decided to ignore it, Kayla snatched my phone. Before I could stop her, she answered the call.

Kayla: hey Cardo... oh she's right here, perfectly fine... I also don't know why she would lie... maybe it's these anxiety attacks of hers that make her stupid... I'm not tryna belittle her situation it just annoys me sometimes. ... boy! \*laughs\*... look imma text you my address then we can spend time, she might open up to you...

cool.

I looked at Kayla in utter shock. I was also angry she aired out my business like it was nothing. She just said Cardo isn't my friend so why is she telling him about my business! I don't like that!

Kayla: look I'm going shower this sex smell off me, you make snacks for our guests.

Me: plural ?

Kayla: yeah. He's bringing his friend over.

I just nodded knowing that I won't be here. She went to the shower and I quickly got up, quietly went out the door and rushed out of the apartments. I jogged towards the gym, then I walked home. It wasn't really that long plus I need the exercise. I don't have money to waste

on taxi fares every time. Even though I know my brothers would give it to me in a heartbeat. I don't like asking people for things sometimes. I just want to do them on my own. Once I arrived in the house, I saw my brothers' crew. There was a lot of money on the table. I closed my mouth because there was a lot I wanted to say, just waved and went to my room.

King: I called you, what's wrong with your phone?

Me: you did? My phone is perfectly fine.

I searched for my phone, then I realized I left it at Kayla's apartment! I sighed knowing that I can't go back and take it.

Me: it's at Kayla's apartment! (sighs)

King: ifuna ntoni pha? (what's it doing there?)

\*confused\*

Me: left it by mistake when. .. anyway  
ubuzothini? (What were you going to say?)

King: bendizothi khabe usiya eMall. Si'busy  
apha endlini ( I was gonna say go to the mall in  
the meantime. We're busy here in the house)

Me: oh. Do I still have to go? \*confused\*

King: yeah. We also have some guests on the  
way.

Me: \*sighs\* okay. Let me just change.

Since I showered at the gym, and I thought  
about the time, I decided to just change my  
clothes. My brothers don't want to get me  
involved into their business, hence King told  
me to go to the mall. I changed into a white  
long sleeve baggy sweatshirt. I wore my black  
leggings and white sneakers. Then I took my  
black purse that had my shades and everything.  
I don't like wearing makeup so I didn't apply any.

King came back to my room and threw stacks of cash on my bed.

Me: and then? \*surprised\*

King: thatha noba yintoni na uyifunayo. (get whatever you want.)

Me: this is a lot of money, Yanga.

King: I know, it's just R5000 Look the guests are here already. Just leave without going through the living room okay?

Me: okay.

I took the money, put in my purse and walked out with King. But down the stairs someone with a deep voice I didn't recognize called him.

King: sure thing, boss.



Boss? And I thought they controlled themselves. I tried going out the kitchen looking at the living room, but I bumped into someone hard. I was walking fast so that made me fall on the kitchen counter corner it felt like the counter stabbed me hard, I screamed. I was on the verge of tears. I realised it was the party guy, Xavier if I'm not wrong. King and Muller quickly came to the kitchen, I was now crying. The Xavier guy tried getting me up but my back hurt so bad .

Muller: the fuck, Rellik bruh! ? \*angry\*

What's his name? Xavier or Rellik? Maybe his street name is Rellik?

King: Lona can you get up? We have to get you up.

Muller: yi'kaka le uyenzileyo kodwa. Mnqundu

wakho (what you did is shit, you ass)

Xavier: I didn't see her man. But cool it with the words. I don't want your little sister seeing me knock your ass out.

Muller: save your breath and let's go.

Trigger: the child.... \*annoyed\*

Trigger reminded them. Muller and King got me up, I limped towards the door. I have to get out of here, so many people I don't know. I'll just have to go to the mall or somewhere else

Muller: uyaphi? (where are you going?)

Me: mall? I'll be fine. You guys finish your business. I'm okay.

Muller: X, tell Ghost I'll be back. I'm taking you there.

Just then an older guy walked in the kitchen with... Scrappy? I should've just stayed at Kayla's apartment.

Ghost: you're going where?

Muller: taking my little sister to the mall, I'll be right back.

Ghost: I need you here now, to go through the plan with us. Rellik can take your sister to the mall. Hurry up boys, I don't have all day.

Ghost stared at me, I looked away because it was uncomfortable he was way older than me. Maybe he was my dad's age. My brothers didn't notice the stare or they just acted like they didn't? Or maybe I'm imagining things

Muller: make sure she's there safely. Lona will you be okay with him in the car?

Me: no.

Xavier: \*laughs\* what am I gonna do? Rape her?  
Come on, I have to hurry back.

I limped towards his car, which left me shocked. It was a Lamborghini, a black one. It was so beautiful... I froze and didn't even want to open the door, I just stood near the car, he got in and waited for me. I just stood there. He shook his head getting out and opened the door for me. I got in with tears in my eyes because my back hurt so bad, I had to get low to get in . Once he got in again, he saw I was crying.

Xavier: I'm not gonna do anything to you. Why are you crying now?

Me: my back hurts so bad. I don't want to go to the mall anymore. Please take me to Kayla's apartment.

Xavier: okay.

He drove out of the yard, I thought he was taking me to Kayla but he went to a different direction. I got a little scared, I started breathing heavy. Gosh, another panic attack. It got extra hard to breathe, tears were falling real hard but no sound was coming out. He looked at me, that's when he got real worried.

Xavier: what's wrong? Shit! Muller's gonna kill me. What should I do!?

I starting pointing at my chest, it was hard to breathe. He parked the car on the side of the road, got out and rushed to my side.

Xavier: hey. Look I'm sorry for your back. Stop crying. I'm just trying to take you to my doctor

for a checkup I promise I won't do anything to you. I can call your brothers right now to assure them. Please just stop crying. \*sighs\*

In few seconds, he called my brothers telling them I'm not breathing properly. He then gave the phone to me.

King: lil sis, listen to my voice. It's okay. Rellik is just taking you to his doctor. Or you could go to Kayla. He's trustworthy, I love you okay? Just breathe it's gonna be okay.

After a few minutes of King convincing me to breathe, I started breathing slowly. Xavier wiped my tears surprising me. He had a small smile

Me: I'm okay now. I'm gonna go to Kayla's apartment.

King: okay, I'll get you from there when I'm done.  
I love you.

Me: I love you too.

I gave Xavier his phone. He went back to his hard face. I sat properly as he closed the door, going to his side. I smiled a little thinking of how concerned he was, I didn't even think he was the begging type.

Xavier: how the fuck was I supposed to know she has anxiety problems? ... I was taking her Dr. Marburg... okay I hear you... sharp.

He got inside the car, I don't think he knows I heard him. I was so embarrassed, I couldn't even look his way. The car ride was silent, I didn't even know how to say thank you. Should I even say thank you? He's the one who gave me

back pain.

Xavier: I didn't know you had anxiety problems. You scared me there.

Me: sorry, thank you for helping me.

Xavier: sure. I'm just gonna take you to my doc then get you to Kayla's apartment okay?

I just nodded. I hope the doctor can give me something for this back pain. It's unbearable.

~~~~~

When we got to Kayla's apartment, she was there alone. Thank god! Xavier made sure I got in safely, and then he left.

Kayla: Zay huh? *frowns*

Me: not like that. He was at my brothers' house. They had business to discuss. I bumped into

him, hit the corner of the kitchen counter and here I am with my sore back.

Kayla: serves you right for running off like that. Poor Cardo thinks you hate him.

Me: what? I hope you told him I just don't like spending in time with people I don't know

I limped to her room. My back was a little better since, Xavier told the doctor to give me a massage and some pills then something to rub on my back. Now all I wanted to do was sleep. I got on Kayla's bed and tried to sleep my pain off

[02/17, 10:11] Wdz: ~I CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 3

.

.

.

.

--LONA'S POV--

.

.

I woke up to noises like men were talking, scratch that. They were shouting, I got up with the little pain I had. It was better but still, it was painful. I went to brush my teeth since I had a bad taste in my mouth. The room had a door that led to the bathroom. I looked for my phone around the room but I didn't find it. Gosh, I don't want to get out the room. There's probably a lot of people out there. After 15 minutes of thinking whether I should get out or not, I gained the courage and finally came out the room, as soon as I got out, I saw Xavier. I got stuck at the door, why does Kayla also have men around? This is so uncomfortable.

Xavier: hey. Why are you standing near the door?

I wanted to answer, but as usual. Words got stuck in my neck, not coming out my mouth. I looked around the house looking for Kayla. I know she didn't leave me in her apartment with a stranger!

Xavier: she went out with Scrappy. They went to get food. They just left now

I just nodded, as I was about to get back in the room, he cleared his throat. But I didn't even care, I just went in and looked at my pills. I decided to take them again, since the pain was coming back now, then I rubbed the cream on painful part. When I went to the kitchen. I couldn't see him at the living room/kitchen so I thought maybe he left. I took off my sweater

leaving my only in my tank top and sweatpants. I hate being in my tank top because it's way too tight for my liking. I drank the pills.

Xavier: are you always this paranoid?

Me: i-i'm not paranoid

Xavier: finally, she talks to me without tears in her eyes.

I wanted to say I wasn't crying at the party, but I didn't. I remembered I didn't talk to him at all, at the party. I was gonna remind him of the times I talked to him without crying, but I decided not to. I wore the sweatshirt again, even though I was feeling extra hot. I looked around for my cellphone. Xavier went back to playing the Xbox since when did Kayla have an Xbox? I'll take a wild guess and say it's theirs and maybe that's why I heard noises they were from

Scrappy and Xavier. Once I finally found my phone, I saw the 6 missed calls from my brothers each. In total I had 12 missed calls and 6 messages. Most of my texts were from Vodacom, but I opened the text from King first.

King : going to Pretoria for a week, if you're uncomfortable with being in the house alone. Stay with Kayla. Love you ♥

Me: okay, I'll just stay in the house alone. Just woke up, didn't see the text. Are you gone already?

My phone rang, it was Muller. They're probably together. I sat down on the other couch carefully. And far away from Xavier.

Me: big brother?

Muller: you're safe?

Me: yes. I'm with Kayla.

Muller: okay. I don't like you staying alone at the house. I'll get Bobby to stay on guard at the house.

Me: okay, be safe. I love you.

Muller: love you too lil sis.

I watched as Xavier played racing cars on the Xbox. It looked cool but I wouldn't tell him that. An idea came into mind that I should go home, and I'll probably meet Bobby there. I got up and went to the room to see if I left anything. When I saw it didn't, I took my bag and I thought I was gonna go without him talking to me, but he decided to talk! Why!?

Xavier: Where are you going?

Me: home.

Xavier: just sit down.

Me: I want to go home

Xavier: didn't I hear you? Sit down, Lelona. I'll take you home, when I'm done chilling with Scrappy.

I didn't want to argue so I took a seat, watching him play his game. I'm so scared to even make him angry because he always has an angry face. He could not stop playing it and I wanted to go. I needed to study, it was way past my studying time. The time now was 16:34. I got on WhatsApp asking Kayla where she was. I don't like that she left me with a stranger. She videocalled me.

Me: Kayla.

Kayla: chomie. We're on our way I'm sorry, we got held up.

Me: I know your type of "I got held up" .

Xavier chuckled because he knew I was right she was probably having sex with him while she left me in a house with a gangster! Who knows what he could've done to me. But nooo my best friend only cares about her quick nut, then my safety.

Kayla: we're at the parking lot now. Chill, I love you vha.

I dropped the call because I was angry. I know you'll say I'm overreacting but come on this is Cape Town where girls get stolen and they never come back. She decides to leave me with someone I don't trust! Xavier looked at me, I didn't even want to look his way. Luckily for me, Kayla came back in 10 minutes.

Kayla: last time I'm doing you dirty. I swear.

Me: okay.

Kayla: wanna help me dish up?

Me: I want to go home. That's what I want.

I mumbled getting up, thank god nobody heard me. I helped Kayla dish up, they bought chips with burgers and alcohol. I wasn't interested in anything. I checked her refrigerator and I saw and old apple. I shook my head throwing it in the bin.

Scrappy: isn't she hungry?

Kayla: nah. She's on a strict diet.

Scrappy: *laughs* why? She looks fine to me.

Kayla: don't know. She's too insecure I guess.

I heard them even though I made it seem like I didn't, I proceeded drinking water.

Xavier: if you knew she's on the diet, why didn't you get her something she might like?

Kayla: because I know how picky she is. I don't want to waste money.

Xavier: Lelona, let's go.

He got up, grabbed his car keys. He dapped Scrappy, then he woke his black outside, red inside bomber jacket. That went in with his white plain tee and one line knee ripped black jeans he topped it off with red and black sneakers.

Xavier: I'll be back, just going to get her

something to eat.

Scrappy: fede fede (sharp sharp). Nina? (a gun?)

Xavier: always. Let's go.

Me: I'm not hungry.

Xavier: I wasn't asking you.

I sighed following him out. I really don't like eating in front of people. I walked behind him slowly not to hurt my back. It was fine but I didn't want to trigger it so the pain could come back. He opened doors for me, which was a shock to me. Maybe he was just scared of my brothers; he didn't want to treat me badly because he thinks I might run to them with teary eyes; only if he knew I don't like people pitying me, even my brothers. We drove in silence, that's until he played his music through the aux cord. He started rapping along lowly, it was trap music, I don't know a lot of trap music.

Xavier: "got a family to feed, got a family to feed. they're depending on me, they're depending on me. If you don't believe in me. I'm like fuck ya, fuck ya! Thought you believed in me, I thought you had them racks but you got evicted!" . . .

He stopped once he realized he was getting too loud and I was staring at him. In my head I was thinking what would happen if there's at shootout here? At Checkers. Wherever there's a gangster there's trouble, and I'm in the car with one.

Xavier: you scared of me?

Once he realized I wasn't gonna answer that because it felt like a rhetorical question! Of course I'm scared of him. No doubt about that.

I'm also scared about what Muller will say when he finds out I'm in a car with a male. Muller's the overprotective one, and King is the sensitive one that I can talk to.

Xavier: *laughs* let's just go. So we can hurry back you back home, it's getting very dark.

Me: I can go in by myself. Just wait here.

Xavier: *angry* you're fucking crazy

Me: *shocked* uhm... I. ...

I decided to keep quiet. Why was he so angry at me wanting to go to Checkers alone? He got out and I followed. It was an okay weather, thank the heavens above! We went inside the shop.

Xavier: what do you want?

I went to the direction of the things I wanted, he held me back by my elbow. Then he held my hand as we walked through Checkers. I was so scared, what if my brothers have me followed and see this ? I quickly removed his hand. He glared at me, then he held my hand again. This time he tightened the grip so I could know not to remove it again. It hurt a bit, I winced. He didn't care though. After a while the grip loosened and I was okay.

??- Rellik.

We both turned around. I was amazed by the beauty of the girl I saw in front of me. Xavier wasn't though. He was straight annoyed.

Xavier: Nandi.

Nandi: who's this?

Xavier: I'll let you know when it concerns you.

Nandi: you left all of this for a pig? What a downgrade.

I didn't even respond because she was getting too loud for me. I just removed Xavier's hand and continued searching for what I wanted. I'm not into drama at all, the only drama I'm into is the one on TV.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

Me and Scrappy continued kissing as his hand travelled to my ass. I moaned, removing his hands. He doesn't have condoms and I don't have condoms so that means no sex.

Me: no.

Scrappy: I'll pull out just in time, Kay.

Me: no, thanks.

Scrappy: baby come on-

Me: where's your homeboy with my girl? They've been gone 30 minutes now. And Xavier is never this slow.

Scrappy: they'll be back. What's up with shawty anyway?

Me: she got bullied in high-school. She has trust issues, and insecurity problems.

Scrappy: that's it? You'd swear big shit popped off.

Me: right!? I think she's overreacting. Yeah we were wrong to bully her like that but it's all in the past. She needs to grow up. But I love her so I'll support her stupidity. What worries me is that

she's too naive

Scrappy: *laughs* you bullied her?

Me: yeah! She used to be so scared of us *laughs* that's what made us do it more, her fear was our motivation . I remember one time we paid our guy friends to mess with her, just a little. She came back crying the next day saying they tried to rape her. The principal suspended them, but they never came back to school and nobody knew where they were. Nobody still knows where they are.

Scrappy: mess with her how? *laughs*

Me: like touch her boobs and ass. take off her panties all that stuff, I heard she was naked in the boys toilet. They took off her uniform and the video was spread all around the school *laughs* then one time the girls tried to rape her, that's the best memory. I wish you were there to see her face *laughs* priceless, but the cleaner stopped them. Man she was a pussy back then!

But now I wouldn't let that shit happen to my girl.

Scrappy: damn. y'all were some bad ass kids
laughs.

Me: those were the days! *laughs*

I actually don't feel bad for what I did, without those high-school memories she won't grow tough. And she still hasn't. I'm praying for her to man up and take life by its horns and enjoy the ride. But I know she's fragile, that's why we bullied her in high-school because we can. The easy targets were always the best. I still love my best friend don't get me wrong, I just wish she was more tough.

-- LONA'S POV --

after he paid we left. I insisted I paid but he almost threw a fit at Checkers. I have noticed that he has anger issues. So I let him be. In the car he looked angry that I insisted that I paid. He should be happy I didn't want to spend his money, why was he angry?

Xavier: don't do that ever again! You made me look like I can't afford shit. I hate that.

I just nodded, I was very scared of this guy. I didn't want to say anything that might make him more angry. He drove and went to a gas station, to fill his car up. Once he got out, I took the money and put it on his bomber jacket that he took off. It was hung on the head of the seat he was sitting in. I don't like people buying me things especially males, they'll want something in return. Xavier came back and he drove back to Kayla's apartment. I just want to go home...

Xavier: since your brothers are going to Pretoria.
Who are you going to stay with?

Me: their friend.

Xavier: okay. Bobby right?

Me: yeah.

I looked outside the window, I really don't like him talking to me. It's uncomfortable, maybe because I'm scared of him, he's so violent for no reason. And I can't speak up because I'm scared. We arrived at the lot, he left his jacket in his car, and we walked in the apartment building. I saw Omar, a friend of Kayla but we never really talk. He stays on the apartment building. I used to have a crush on him

Omar: Lona *smiles*

Me: O *grins*

Omar: walk with me to the shops, please?

Xavier: she's busy.

Me: I'll walk with him.

I gave Xavier the bags, he pulled me roughly triggering my back pain.

Xavier: I said she's busy!

Omar: *confused* okay, talk to you later Lona.
I'll text you.

I just nodded with mini tears in my eyes, as soon as Omar walked away, I was now crying silently. I'm a crybaby I know. Xavier was pissed, I didn't care. I just wanted to sit down. I wiped my tears, he looked at my red eyes.

Xavier: such a crybaby. What's wrong now?

Me: maybe if you would stop manhandling me, I would stop crying!

I burst out, frustrated with him roughly touching me like I don't feel pain. He was surprised at my outburst. I was now embarrassed, so I walked to Kayla's apartment not wanting to look at him ever again. That was so embarrassing gosh

.

.

.

.

.

.

BOOKERS MEET LELONA

[02/17, 10:21] Wdz: ~I CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 4

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV--

.

.

As soon as we arrived I wanted to go home immediately. I texted Bobby to please come and get me at Kayla's apartment, Bobby is like a brother to me since, he has been friends with my bros for years. He replied with a simple okay. Kayla could clearly see my eyes were red, so now she was breathing fire.

Kayla: where the fuck is he!? I'm gonna cut off his dick.

Xavier: she's being a baby.

Kayla: okay so? Does that mean make her cry?
You know what? Get the fuck out of my
apartment.

Xavier: nah.

He sat down, Kayla glared at Scrappy to fix his
friend. Scrappy acted as if he didn't hear or see
anything. I now wanted to really leave because
this was awkward.

Kayla: both of y'all can get the fuck out. This is
my best friend, and y'all think it's okay making
her cry and shit-

Me: Kayla, it's okay.

Kayla was being weird and she was angry, I
know she cares just not this much. I wondered
if she was high or drunk. Now I really have to
leave before she starts turning on me. I know

how she gets with the mood swings. One minute she'll love you, the next she's shouting our ears off. She glared at me, pulling me to the other room.

Kayla: what did he do?

Me: he just manhandled me-

Kayla: manhandle you!? fuck no! Lemme call Muller real quick-

Me: no! Kayla calm down. It's okay. I promise.

Kayla: I never want you to think it's okay for guys to manhandle you, especially guys like Rellik. We left that weak personality in high school. Don't let them walk all over you

Me: I know. But can we at least let this slide. It's probably the last time I see him anyway. Please.

Kayla: okay, but I don't like this. Guys shouldn't think it's okay to handle us however they want,

whenever they want. It's not okay! We feel pain, and we have emotions too.

I just nodded, something must have happened for her to be this passionate about it but I didn't want to ask her now because it'll tear her spirit down for the rest of the night. We'll talk tomorrow when we're alone

Me: I'm going home with Bobby. I love you, be safe.

Kayla: Bobby, the hunk? Damn. *sneaky smile* you're so lucky and you don't even see shit.

Me: bye Kayla.

I chuckled leaving the room. I took my bag, also the Checkers bag, I made sure I didn't leave my phone as I headed for the door.

Xavier: I thought I told you, I'll be taking you home.

Kayla: well she's going home with Bobby now. So sit down, you've been lacking *grins*

Me: *chuckles* see you tomorrow for our brunch.

I walked out without saying goodbye to the guys. They didn't deserve it anyway. I waited for Bobby outside, he was always late. I saw Omar approaching me with his friends. My heart started beating a thousand beats. After they passed, Omar stayed behind standing next to me . gosh if Bobby sees this. I sighed

Omar: I see you're rolling with the big dogs now

Me: *confused* huh?

Omar: Rellik?

Me: oh... no oh no! He's just, he's Kayla's friend.

Omar: you don't have to deny it. Just be careful.

Me: no I'm not denying anything, he's just Kayla's friend. I'm serious

Omar: I'm just saying be careful. He's Rellik for a reason.

Me: what does that mean?

Omar: you're still behind?

Me: on what? What are you saying Omar?

Omar: Rellik spelled backwards is...?

?: Killer.

We both turned around, and Xavier stood behind us shocking me. I held my chest because I didn't expect him there, I would've felt someone watching me but my guts failed me this time.

Xavier: thanks for giving her an introduction on me. Been meaning to do it myself, just caught up counting stacks. *smirks*

So conceited. Omar shook his head, he gave me a hug and left. Where is Bobby!? I was about to text him when I saw his call pull up, thank God!

Xavier: I need to talk to you.

Me: I have to go.

Before I could go, he roughly pulled my arm, Bobby got out the car, I could clearly see he was strapped ;he had a gun; Not today, Father. I don't want to die today!

Xavier: I'm still talking, don't turn your back on

me while I'm talking.

Bobby: Lelona . In the car. *angry*

I nodded and hurried in the car, I was worried, that they'd fight, but they talked after a while I saw Bobby laughing, they dapped and Bobby returned to the car. Thank you, Lord. No blood was shed, today.

Bobby: and then? What's up with that?

Me: he wanted to apologise for my back. Where were you in the morning?

Bobby: girlfriend drama. Hence I didn't go to Pretoria. I wasn't in on the plan

I nodded, he continued telling me about the girlfriend drama he had while I was still worried about Kayla. She got so angry when she saw

my red eyes, that's unlike her. She'd usually tell me to stop being a crybaby. I'd have to Skype her tonight. We arrived at the house, I limped a bit to my room, I mixed up my food, and started eating. On the mist of watching a movie, my phone rang. It was an unknown number. I ignored it, but it wouldn't stop calling. I picked up my phone.

Me: hello?

?: Lelona

I looked at the phone shocked. I pray this is not who I think it is. I remained quiet, waiting for the caller to introduce himself.

?: it's Omar

Me: I know. How did you get my number?

Omar: Kayla texted it to me. Look tomorrow, can we meet up for a date?

Me: really? Yeah Omar, I'd, uhm, I'd like that. What time?

Omar: 6pm sharp. I'll pick you up. Wear something formal.

Me: okay, see you tomorrow.

Omar: cool.

He dropped the call. I smiled giggling for the first time this year, I was blushing. Omar was a hot guy that every girl wanted. He had a car, his own apartment, after 5 minutes of excitement. The questions started floating in my head; all those girls why would he want me? Is this a bet between his friends? Is he trying to prank? Does he just want to get between my legs? Will he stand me up tomorrow? What does he really want with me?... I texted Kayla how I felt. She'll

have an answer she's good with these guy things.

me: K. I have a problem, Omar asked me on a date. I don't know if it's genuine or not. What if he made a bet on me?

Kayla ♥ : wait what?! He asked you on a date, bitchhhh you're on fire

Me: you're not helping Kayla.

I waited for her to respond but she videocalled me. I responded quick, she removed Scrappy from her neck once she saw my face pop up on the screen.

Kayla: bitch I need all the details! I knew he was up to something when he wanted your number! That sneaky bastard! I'm glad he did it though, your eggs were about to die from the drought

they're in.

I heard Scrappy laugh, then I saw Kayla's glare, it must be targeted towards him. I shook my head embarrassed that she'd say that in front of him

Kayla: let me know if I'm fucking a sis'bhuti

Scrappy: fuck does that mean? *angry*

Kayla: your gay ass all up in women's business. Go smoke with Xavier and stop being in our shit. It's unattractive *laughs*

Scrappy: fuck you.

Kayla: right after you get condoms babe.

Me: Kayla!

Kayla: one would swear you never took life orientation as a subject. You even got a distinction there, yet your life is a spider's web.

Me: that's not why you called...

Kayla: tell me what happened. I'm all ears.

I started telling her everything. From the chat we had at the parking lot while I was waiting for Bobby to the phone call.

Kayla: I was wondering when he was gonna make a move. The game y'all were playing was tiring.

Me: huh?

Kayla: Lelona that guy has always had a crush on you! How am I friends with a blind person, dear lord!?

Me: he didn't show any signs though.

Kayla: oh, did you?

Me: that's different-

Kayla: actually the same. He wants you but he

doesn't know how to get you. You want him but you're scared of falling. We're all gonna fall sometime it's part of life, you fall you get up. Don't wait for someone to get you up. Get up yourself! Now stop pitying yourself and look through your wardrobe for a cute formal body hugging dress! You gotta break his neck tomorrow. *smirks*

-- RELLIK'S POV --

I smoked my weed while I passed it on to Scrappy. He has been my homeboy for years now. I trust him with some of my secrets. But some I just have to die with them.

.

Me: Omar? The nerd kid? *laughs*

Scrappy: *laughs* man, that girl is too fine for a

nigga like that.

I just stared at him not replying to him. He chuckled shaking his head. I looked at him. He's high already?

Scrappy: so jy wil gaan aan soos jy weet nie sy is al dat nie? (so you're gonna act like she's not all that?)

Me: ek het nie gesê sy was lelik (I didn't say she's ugly.)

Scrappy: dan? (then?)

Me: she's just not my type of pussy

Scrappy: since when did you get a type, my nigga?

Me: hoe jou bek! (shut up)

Scrappy: *laughs* I'm just wondering

Me: sy is 'n kind (she's a kid.) She's also Muller

and King's little sister. I don't even look at her like that.

Scrappy: you act like we're that old! She's 18 we're only 25. If you don't claim that, I'm hitting it.

Me: nobody's hitting anything. Have you forgotten your "chick" Kayla? Her best friend? You'd be the last nigga she'd smash.

Scrappy: Kayla's just a pussy. She knows that too. I know she'd hesitate since I'm fucking her friend. But don't underestimate my game.

smirks

Me: *laughs* underestimate your game? All your hoes are whack bruh.

Scrappy: look at you talking, thinking she'd fuck you. All the time she's next to you, she's crying *laughs* I doubt she even wants to see you again.

Me: die verskil is, ek wil nie om haar te fok nie.

Jy doen. (the difference is, I don't want to fuck her. You do)

Scrappy: the difference is, I don't lie about wanting to smash and go. Jy doen (You do)

Me: fuck off

Scrappy laughed at me as I continued smoking. Okay I'll admit. She's beautiful, and I don't see why she's so insecure. Then at the same time I can't ignore the fact that her brothers are like friends to me since we're in the same big gang just different blocks. I decided to go home since I knew I was third wheeling.

Kayla: where are you going?

Me: home.

Kayla: oh. I thought you guys were gonna stay for a bit.

Me: Scrappy is staying. I'm leaving.

Kayla: oh. Bye. *smiles*

I shook my head, Scrappy keeps telling me I'm crazy when I tell him this girl got a crush on me. I see right through her hoe shit though. I left, when I got in my car, I heard my phone ringing. I took it out my bomber jacket, when I took it out money fell out. I was confused because I never put money like that, it's always in my wallet. I answered the call without looking at the caller ID.

me: yeah?

ghost: waar is jy? (Where are you?)

me: out. What do you need?

Ghost: daar is 'n probleem. (There is a problem)
Fly Boyz money is R80 000 short. I need you to sort it out.

Me: fede fede (sharp sharp)

I hung up. Ghost is my uncle whom took me under his wing when both of my parents died in a car accident. My dad was a lawyer and my mom was a housewife. They died when they went out for dinner, cops say it was an accident but I say it was murder. It was covered up but I heard they were also shot. And I have to find out who killed them, and when I do. It won't be pretty. I looked at the money again, then she popped in my head.

Me: Lelona.

I smiled chuckling that she returned the money when I told her not to. Stubborn as hell. I went to visit the Fly Boyz by their trap house. I got in easily, these kids are always weak on security.

That's why their money is always short.

Me: where's Q?

They pointed to his room/ office. When I opened, a bitch was giving him a blow job. I chuckled shaking my head. The naked girl got up and hurried out the room.

Me: now I see why the money is always short-

Q: look Rellik-

Me: don't cut me off while I'm still talking.
(takes out a gun) now we gon do this the easy way or the hard way?

He sucked his teeth and went to his safe, he took out R60 000. I shook my head, then I went to take out his prized possessions in the safe

while aiming the gun at him. This will make R80 000 and more since he wanted to bitch about money. He tried to aim a gun at me.

Me: *chuckles* toets dit (try it). And see what will happen to your precious sister and daughters. And the secret son? Oh I can't begin to think what will happen to the sexy baby mamas. Make sure you kill me, because if you don't. I'll make sure you watch them die.

He aimed his gun down. See why I don't date? I only fuck bitches. Falling in love becomes your weakness. I don't want that bullshit happening to me, I'm on the verge of controlling the Americans gang. I know Ghost will hand over the ropes to me, I'm his right hand man. I'd rather fuck then date. I smirked taking the money and the possessions putting them in a sports bag.

Me: next time, don't cross Ghost. Or you'll be watching over your weaknesses from above

I walked out and still nothing happened to me. See? Weak security in this trap house.

-- LONA'S POV --

I was panicking because I didn't even have a formal dress! What type of girl am I? I let people walk all over me, I'm not that pretty, I'm fat and most of all I have no friends! My life is horrible. I sat down on the floor trying to calm myself down. The memories just came back, and tears started falling down. I don't want to wear

something hoeish because I'll get looks from people that think I'm disgusting. I thought about the time when a video of me naked went around the school and everyone thought I made it viral to become Kim Kardashian but I'm was being bullied. They tore my clothes off, they called me names, I was touched sexually by males and previously by females but not one. Not one single teacher came and asked me what was happening. They all just assumed I was a whore who got a short end of a stick. Nobody in that school ever asked me what was happening they all just distanced themselves from me. I started remembering being called fat, ugly, a nerd, a whore. I breathed heavily, like the walls were closing in on me. I just felt dizzy. The last thing I remember was seeing my light being blurry.

~~~

I groaned waking up, I saw Kayla next to me, Bobby was near the door. I looked around and unfortunately for me, I was at the hospital.

Kayla: hey.

I could see she had been crying, I just smiled weakly at her. I love that she cared.

Me: hey.

My voice was very raspy. She gave me water to drink, I had a massive headache. I hope none of them called my brothers.

Me: I hope you guys didn't call King & Muller.

Kayla: don't worry. I stopped Bobby before he could even do it. You scared us.

Me: it's an anxiety attack. It doesn't kill.

\*smiles\*

Kayla: don't say that. I already feel bad. I'm so sorry. You're my best friend I don't want to lose you.

Me: I don't want to lose you!

I smiled at Kayla, Bobby gave us some privacy.

Me: who found me?

Kayla: me, Bobby was sleeping \*rolls eyes\* I wanted to sleepover so I can help you with your date. And I just saw you laying there, I got very worried. But I remembered every step you said I should do if you get an extreme anxiety attack. I know you hate hospitals, but I had to call the paramedics.

Me: thank you. I wanted to talk to you about something.

Kayla: don't tell me you're cancelling the date!?

Me: no \*chuckles\* when you got angry at Xavier for manhandling me, what was that about?

Kayla: what do you mean? You're my best friend. I'm supposed to be there for you.

Me: I know, but it's deeper than that.

Kayla: \*sighs\* can I talk about it when I feel like I'm ready?

Me: I'm always here for you.

Kayla: thank you.

I smiled at her, she smiled back. We started talking again. But her phone rang. I wonder where my phone is. She decided to put it on loudspeaker.



Kayla: hello?

Scrappy: where are you? I'm at your place, and you're not here.

Kayla: I told you I was leaving to go to Lona  
\*rolls eyes\*

Scrappy: where are you? I need to give you this.

Kayla: \*grins\* we're at the hospital, baby.

Scrappy: hospital?

Kayla put it off loudspeaker and went out and I was now all alone in the room, I watched the TV but it was boring. A doctor came in. I didn't know this doctor. I'm used to my doctor. I was now feeling uncomfortable, I played with my fingers as I tried to calm myself down. I don't want a male doctor.

Doctor: hello. I'm Doctor Davidson. Doctor Vane

is currently on sick leave so she asked me to look over her patients. You are.... Lona Daniel?

I nodded. I was feeling so uncomfortable. I don't want this at all.

Doctor: and I see you have anxiety attacks. You have suffered from depression, you were suicidal in the past. Mhm have you ever seen a therapist?

I shook my head meaning no. I don't need a shrink. I'm not crazy

Doctor: I'll have to assign you to one.

Dr. Vane already tried getting me to go to a therapist but I don't want to. It's just another

person who'll say I'm a whore without knowing my story. I nodded to what the doctor was saying but I knew I'll never do that.

~~~

Luckily for me, I got discharged from the hospital that same day of the date. So I had to do shopping. I took the R5 000 King gave me and started browsing through the mall with Kayla. I got a text from Cardo.

Cardo : hey are you busy today? I need help studying.

Me: not really. I can help you. What time should I arrive?

Cardo : how about 14:30?

Me: okay, I'll be there.

Cardo: thanks

I looked at Kayla who was looking at something for me to wear. I just dragged her over to the plus-sized girls clothing.

Me: I'm fat remember?

Kayla: stop playing, you're thick. And you're losing a lot of weight.

I grinned. Someone was seeing my improvement. Thank you, Jesus! I looked at the time it was 14:15.

Me: can I trust you to look for an outfit for me? Cardo needs help studying.

Kayla: okay *chuckles*

Me: don't do that.

Kayla: just go! I'm gonna choose something that will make you look amazing!

Me: I'm trusting you Kayla.

Kayla: hamba! (Go!)

~~

I finally arrived at the library in 30 minutes so I was late I felt so bad. I saw Cardo there, trying to studying. I'm saying trying because he looked so frustrated with it.

Me: I'm so sorry I'm late. I was at the mall, it's quite a distance. And I don't have a car, I really am sorry. I don't know-

I cut myself off when I realised I was blabbing. He just looked at me and smiled. Now I was really embarrassed. So I sat down and kept quiet, he chuckled.

Cardo: first time hearing you talk that much.
Without mentioning books

Me: and please let's just forget it.

Cardo: okay *laughs*

I helped him study and I used my gang examples theory, still it worked. At 16:45 I decided we were finally done. I was thinking about the date. Cardo thanked me and offered me a ride home. I didn't want to but I thought about the time so I agreed.

Cardo: thank you again for helping me.

Me: okay, you're actually doing better. All you need to do is study at your house and you'll understand them better now.

Cardo: *smiles* thanks.

I nodded and got out of the car, when I finally arrived at the gate, he waved and drove off. I ran inside the house.

Me: Bobby!

Bobby: lounge.

Me: well I'm getting ready for my dinner with Kayla-

I was shocked to see Kayla in the lounge with Bobby. I wonder what they were doing. She looked at me and chuckled. I was not telling Bobby I'm going on a date. My brothers would come back home within an hour, very fast. I'm not even joking

Kayla: bestie date. Let's go get ready.

~~~~

I looked at Kayla upset. She wasted R1500 on these hoeish outfit. I'm not wearing it. I'm not!

Me: what the fuck Kayla!? He's gonna look at me like I'm a whore. \*frowns\*

Kayla did the breathing exercises with me, the anxiety died down.

Kayla: I'm gonna get Bobby to go to town with me. Omar will come get you. He knows your address. When you have left, I'll lie to Bobby and say you texted me and said we'll meet at the restaurant and you'll sleepover at my apartment. Then when the date is over, you'll come to my



apartment.

Me: okay. But Kayla I don't feel comfortable wearing this.

Kayla: you look beautiful. Stop worrying!

She ran downstairs. After a few minutes I heard the door close and then a car driving off. I took my anxiety pills since it was getting hard to control it. After it felt fine. I looked at my outfit again, I did not like it one bit. I hated the blonde wig more than the outfit. This is not me! I heard at car stop and after at while, I heard the bell indicating someone wanted to be let in the house. I rushed downstairs in these hard heels, I let the car in. I walked up and down as I'll rehearsed how I'm gonna greet him. I heard and knock on the door, and I was surprised by who it was.

Me: Xavier? \*confused\*

[02/17, 10:23] Wdz: ~I CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 5

.

.

.

.

--LONA'S POV--

.

.

I was really confused as to why he was here. I felt more uncomfortable when he looked at me outfit, it was a black crop top with a high waist black skirt. He kept looking at my breasts, when I covered them up in felt that one was a bit revealed underneath but not that much. The nipples were totally covered though.

Me: Xavier!

xavier: yeah?

Me: what are you doing here? I... I have a date in a few minutes.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* I know.

Me: you know? \*confused\*

Xavier: look I came here to give your money back.

Me: money?

Xavier: I found it in the bomber jacket. I don't need it and I told you, I don't like you making me look like I don't have money.

Me: and I don't like you buying me things I can buy for myself

Xavier: \*mumbles\* stubborn.

Me: what?

Xavier: just take the money.

Me: no.

I was feeling bold all of a sudden, Xavier's face changed I could see he was very frustrated and his anger was rising a bit. My phone rang, and I attended to it. It was Omar

Omar: hey, I'm sorry I'm a bit caught up. My car broke down, but I'm right around the corner. I'll be there in a few minutes.

Me: oh. Do you need help?

Omar: no no. I got it.

Me: I'll be there right now.

I grabbed the house keys, and looked at Xavier.

Me: I have to go.

Xavier: he's not picking you up? Here I was thinking he's a gentleman \*smirks\*

He took out the money and placed it on the table near the door next to the telephone. Then he walked out. I locked the house and walked to the corner. On the way, I saw Bobby's car, I quickly hid away from him. He was helping Omar with his car. Now I was stressed. I texted Kayla.

Me: what's going on? What happened to the car?

Kayla ♥ : wait you're here? Hide. It looks like something messed up in his car.

Me: what!?! Please don't tell me King and Muller know.

Kayla ♥ : don't worry, they don't. And they're almost done with the car anyone. It's a minor problem. Don't stress man. It's a

problem that occurs every day to anyone

I blueticked her. It's a minor problem but it happens the day of our date? After a while, the heels were killing me, Omar and Bobby were done with the car. Then Bobby drove off with Kayla without noticing me. I rushed to Omar, he was absolutely shocked when he saw me. Like no words shocked now I was embarrassed that I looked like a hoe.

Omar: you look... you look. .. wow

Me: \*smiles\* really?

Omar: yes. More than wow. No words can describe how amazing you look, you looked great before the makeover not that you looked ugly then I'm just saying you're... \*sighs\*

It got quiet until I cracked a small laugh. He

looked so cute when he was nervous. He smiled at me, and shook his head.

Omar: sorry I'm a bit nervous. Shall we go?

Me: yeah.

He opened the door for me, I got in the car. Once he got in too, he played music through the aux cord. The car boomed with Drake's music, until we arrived at the place. I was shocked to see it was the Aubergine Restaurant. I heard everything was fancy here. I hope the date goes well, gosh what if I have a panic attack? I took the pills at home but I'm still nervous about what people will say about this outfit. He opened the door for me and we walked in. It was empty and decorated with beautiful lights and roses.

Omar: Kayla told me about your panic attacks so I didn't want you to get uncomfortable.

Me: you rented the whole place just for me?  
\*shocked\*

Omar: you're special to me.

He smiled his million dollar smile. I didn't even know how to reply to that flirty line. Should I let it pass or just say thank you? Geez I'm a lame.

Me: thank you? \*smiles confusingly\*

He laughed at my facial expression now I was way more embarrassed. He kissed my hand when he saw I was not at ease with him laughing at me.

Omar: sorry, you should have seen how



adorable you looked.

I blushed and chuckled. We sat down, and starting getting to know each other before eating.

---

--MULLER'S POV--

.  
.

I parked inside the yard and King followed after me. We went inside our hotel room going over the plan again because I can't afford any mistakes. This is how we provide for our family, we tried the right path and they just have us peanuts so we went on the road everyone took... being in the game has its pros and cons.

Putting my sister's life is one of the cons, the quick money and respect is one of the pros that I love so much.

Me: kunga bhatyazwa ngomso majita. (No mistakes tomorrow gents)

X: fede fede (sharp sharp)

~~

The plan worked accordingly but Trigger almost got us busted. X handled it quickly though before anything could blow up. The money was stacked in the back of our cars. We waited for the other niggas Ghost sent to take the money. We were in an isolated place no one ever goes to and luckily we lost the police far away. We saw cars approaching, quickly we took out the bags and placed them in the same place on the ground. I was a bit shocked to see Ghost himself here.

Ghost: well done boys.

King: didn't think you'd be here.

Ghost: had to see for myself how smooth things will go

Gunz: we have about 3 hours before the Internet knows about the heist

Ghost: no identities right?

We all looked at Trigger, he was the one who took off his mask before we were out the scene. He'd be a lucky nigga if it isn't caught on camera.

Me: no identities

I never rat one of my niggas out. Even if Trigger is caught I'll still stand by him. I'll never turn my

back on my gents.

---

--LONA'S POV--

.

.

I got up and did my morning routine, Kayla was still asleep. I wore my sweats Kayla came with from home, then I went to the gym and after 3 hours I went back to Kayla's apartment.

Kayla: I was wondering where you went.

Me: the gym

Kayla: I have guests coming over in about 15 minutes.

Me: and that's my que to go. Ciao

Kayla: \*laughs\* they're girls

Me: I don't like any of your friends

Kayla: you're acting like they like you. \*laughs\*

Me: mxm \*rolls eyes\*

Just on time the girls entered the room. It was Zikhona and Khanyi, they are the biggest hoes I know. And they always influence Kayla to do wrong things, it frustrates the hell out of me.

Khanyi: I was wondering why Kayla's fridge always looked empty.

Zikhona: kucweli'hagu kaloku apha \*laughs\*  
(there's a lot of pigs here)

They all laughed, I know it was a joke but I was offended a lot. I don't even eat when I'm here.

Kayla: khaniyeke uLelona. (Leave Lelona alone)

Zikhona: it's just a joke girl! Damn, she's so

sensitive. \*laughs\*

Khanyi: anyway enough about her. Chomie siyabangena eRands today right? (Friend, we're going to Rands today right?)

Kayla: sipha! (We're there!) Lona you should come with us.

Me: no thank you, I have to study today.

Kayla: uyabhala ngomso? (Are you writing tomorrow?)

Me: no. I don't need a test to study.

Zikhona: thixo lomntana akana mpilo (Lord, this child doesn't have a life)

They all chuckled. I decided not to respond to that remark, I know it'll end up with my feelings hurt in the end and I don't want to cry in front of them it'll be the joke of the whole year.

Me: bye guys.

They all said bye and I walked out, I would've appreciated if Kayla had my back when her friends were being bitches. I walked home and Bobby was still there. He was watching TV and texting at the same time.

Bobby: you're back.

Me: yeah.

Bobby: how was the date?

Me: huh? \*shocked\*

Bobby: \*chuckles\* I wasn't born yesterday. Omar is a good boy though. He's good for you.

Me: you saw me. \*sighs\*

Bobby: you think? \*sarcastic\* I didn't want to ruin your night though I didn't like your outfit one bit. Why did you change the hair?

Me: it was a wig. Kayla chose the outfit

Bobby: is she pressuring you into this? Because if she is in swear I'll -

Me: no! I wanted to go. I sorta had a crush on him. Please don't tell Muller and King. I'll be in a lot of trouble.

Bobby: \*chuckles\* okay. Now tell your big bro how the date went.

I told him everything, how me and Omar connected and he was a gentleman all night. Who would rent the whole restaurant for one girl? He is really rich! To me it was easier to talk to Bobby then it is to talk to my brothers because they'll act all crazy whereas Bobby is very calm.

Bobby: I'm glad it went okay. Just don't rush into-



Me: that's the last thing on my mind.

Bobby: anything. Wait a few months before kissing him

Me: \*laughs\* so you'd wait months before kissing a girl.

Bobby: I am me, he shouldn't be me.

Me: I'll let him know \*laughs\*

I went up the stairs and studied since it's been while since I did that. After 2 hours I was hungry as hell, I went downstairs and made food for myself. As I was eating, my phone rang, I looked at it and it was Omar. I breathed then answered it when though I hate talking on a phone call. I prefer texts.

Omar: hello beautiful.

Me: hey \*smiles\*

Omar: is it too soon to say I miss you?

Me: yes especially when you dropped me off at Kayla's apartment at 1am

Omar: I didn't want the date to end

Me: me too. I had fun

Omar: me too, can I call you?

Me: \*confused\* what are we doing right now?

Omar: \*laughs\* no man, I mean video-call you. Your smile is too precious and I would like to start off my day wonderfully.

Me: so my smile will make you day wonderful?

Omar: yes.

Me: \*laughs\* you're very good at words. You're making me blush

Omar: it's my job to make you blush

me: you make it seem like you're forced to do it.

He dropped the call and I was hurt a bit. Then a few seconds later, a video-call request appeared on my screen. I giggled and answered. His face appeared and he was shirtless. Wow.

Omar: I love doing it. The best job in the world. And nothing beats the payment I get.

Me: and what is that?

Omar: spending time with you

Me: is this your way of asking me out for second date?

Omar: yes.

Me: I'm always free.

Omar: tomorrow let's go to the Waterworld or the Playland

Me: you want me to sleep in the hospital?

Omar: pardon?

Me: panic attacks.

Omar: you won't. I'll be there. I got you

Me: \*smiles\* okay. I would love a second date.

Omar: there's that smile, I have been waiting for.

Me: \*blushes\* stop!

Omar: I can't help it. It's amazing.

Me: bye Omar.

Omar: but we're still talking \*pouts\*

Me: wait I have to take a screenshot of this.

Omar: smile first.

I smiled and took a screenshot of him pouting,  
he took a screenshot of me smiling.

Me: I'm going back to studying.

Omar: okay. See you soon.

Me: bye.

We both hung up and I'm smiled looking at my phone. I feel so free around Omar he brings an excitement feeling in my stomach. Butterflies can't even describe the feeling. I went back to studying and just like always I studied for 2 hours. After the studying session I browsed through my Instagram with the house WiFi. I posted the screenshot I took of me and Omar's video-call and posted it on my Instagram story. Then I remembered King and Muller will see it so it quickly deleted it to and just smiled at it.

Bobby: Lona?

Me: yes?

Bobby: later on we're leaving.

Me: we?

Bobby: can't leave you alone in the house.

Me: siyaphi? (Where are we going?)

Bobby: race show.

Me: but those are illegal if we're caught there we'll -

Bobby: chill you wouldn't even spend an hour in jail \*chuckles\*

Me: I'm staying behind. Thanks though.

Bobby: I wasn't asking you.

Me: eshee \*chuckles\*

Bobby: I'm serious.

Me: Muller will go crazy if he hears this.

Bobby: Muller will go crazy about your date too.  
\*smirks\*

Me: unfair.

Bobby: really unfair. I need some fun while babysitting you. I have been stuck here since forever.

I really have been a bit unfair so I'll go but I'll nag him your take me back home in an hour.

Me: what did people wear at races.

Bobby: just wear something casual. Not sweats though, you'll feel every hot.

I nodded and he left. I looked through my wardrobe. I wore a light blue jeans with a tank top and a buttoned up cardigan. I tied my hair into a tight up bun and wore my white sneakers. I threw my phone, lip gloss, my pills, wet wipes, and tissues in my small black bag then I went to the lounge. Bobby was still not ready so I had to wait for him. I drank my pills. My phone vibrated in my bag, I answered without looking at the caller ID.

Me: hello?

?: finally she answers my calls.

I looked at my phone to see who this is, it was Cardo. I wanted to hang up so bad, why is he calling me?

Me: hey.

Cardo: you're free today?

Me: uhhh-

Bobby: okay let's go.

Cardo: oh you're busy?

Bobby: who's that?

Me: not really. I'm going to a race. Bobby is dragging me there.

Cardo: funny thing is I was actually going to invite you there. See you there.



Before I could even respond he hung up. I don't know if Cardo wants me or he just wants my brains or he's just being nice and he feels pity for me. I hate that.

Me: Cardo. He says he'll meet me at the race. Is he always this persistent on hanging out?

Bobby: Cardo as in Cash?

Me: yes.

Bobby: \*chuckles\* one crazy motherfucker. He's an extrovert. He doesn't like it when people are too much in their shell. Maybe he's trying to break you out of your shell.

Me: but I love my shell.

We got in his car and he started driving off, the radio was off it was just us talking in the car.

Bobby: I know

Me: he doesn't seem like a gangster though.

Bobby: oh really? What are gangsters like?

\*laughs\*

Me: tough and rude.

Bobby: am I rude?

Me: no. But that's because you're my brother's best friend, you have to be nice to me.

Bobby: Cash is still young. And he hasn't done hardcore stuff yet, he's still in the 'studying, selling weed plus being a lapdog' phase.

Me: then there'll be the killing phase, and-

Bobby: let's not talk about gangster shit. How's varsity? I haven't asked you this in a long time.

Me: it's cool.

Bobby: no one is messing with you?

Me: nope. All is well.

Bobby: and we're here.

There was a big gate that looked shady, the place looked abandoned. Guards were standing there and as soon as they saw Bobby, they opened the gates then he drove it. Then we drove further information saw a lot of cars.

Me: in the middle of the road. A site full of nothing.

Bobby: Ghost bought it. We use it for races.

Me: There are quite a lot of people.

Bobby: and we're not going to get a panic attack.

I chuckled as I drank my pills again, thank god I bought them and water. He parked the car and we walked out of it. I browsed through the crowd and right there I knew I was gonna be

stuck to Bobby's side because I'm very scared of these people.

Bobby: Lona, let's go over there.

Me: why do I smell weed?

Bobby: try to act like you're used to this?  
\*chuckles\* and not a word of this to Muller.

Me: \*laughs\* don't worry I can keep a secret.

We walked over to his friends. They all greeted and I just waved. They continued talking. My phone vibrated just then, I looked at my phone. It was Kayla. I moved a bit away from them to answer the call

Me: skeem.

Kayla: uphi? (Where are you?)

Me: out with Bobby.

Kayla: oh. I was just checking up on you.

Me: really? \*laughs\*

Kayla: yes. Now bye.

She hang up. I was confused but I decided not to dwell on that. From afar I spotted Scrappy with another girl. My eyes popped out. Bobby came and stood next to me

Bobby: what?

Me: Scrappy is with another girl.

Bobby: so? How do you know these people?  
Well what did i expect you were talking to Rellik

Me: mxm. He is dating Kayla.

Bobby: Rellik?

Me: no. \*rolls eyes\* Scrappy.

Bobby: \*laughs\* yeah right.

Me: I'm serious they're always together and Rellik is always third wheeling.

Bobby: they're just fucking.

Me: maybe that's why she called me she wanted to tell me about how hurt she is he came here with her.

Bobby: or she's angry she's not invited because this is more like a limited area. We don't want no outsiders amarhadi abamba njalo. (that's how the police catch on.)

Me: so she can't come alone.

Bobby: yeah \*laughs\*

Me: and if I was alone-

Bobby: you'd probably be killed because all these people will think you're an undercover officer.

Me: what if the police works with a gangster? Then what.

Bobby: then we're all going to jail \*shrugs\*

Me: \*laughs\* uyadika (you're irritating)

My phone vibrated and it was Omar, he was video-calling. the music now was playing extra loud and it was Madness ft. Tipcee.

Me: hey there.

Omar: someone decided to have fun without me.

Me: sorry, Bobby forced me out the house.

Omar: where are you guys?

I can't tell him it's a race, but I doubt he'd snitch but I can't take chances.

Me: at a party of some sort. Where are you? I'm hearing music.

Omar: dinner with my dad.

Me: and you're calling me!? Oh god.

Omar: chill \*laughs\* he went to network with his business associates.

Me: I was about to hang up.

Omar: \*laughs\* you love hurting my feelings.

Me: I don't do it all the time \*laughs\*

Omar: first you left me for books now because you're scared of my father \*smirks\*

Me: well the books part-

Omar: I totally understand. I love a career driven woman.

Me: \*blushes\* and you're doing it again.

Omar: \*smiles\* I told you. It's my job, if I don't make you laugh, smile, and blush someone else will take my place.

Me: your place?



Omar: you'll understand later on. \*smiles\*

I shook my head smiling, I understood clearly.

## BOOKERS MEET OMAR

[02/17, 10:27] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 6

.

.

.

--LONA'S POV--

.

.

I made sure to always stand close to Bobby, and thankfully he wasn't annoyed he understood. A girl tried to offer me alcohol,

Bobby glared at her and she left instantly.

Bobby: will you be fine on your own? I'm going to race.

Me: you're going to do what!? What if you die?

Bobby: \*chuckles\* I've been doing this for a long time. Phola. (Chill)

Me: ndizohlala nabani? (Who am I going to sit with?)

Bobby: nobody will try anything. \*laughs\*

Me: ha'a suhamba. (No. Don't leave)

Bobby: uligwala wena. (You're a coward.)  
\*laughs\* I'll call Scrappy

Me: no!

Bobby: axe, ring'u Scrappy. (Yo! Call Scrappy)

He orderes a guy, the guy whom I didn't know

called Scrappy and right on time Cardo came to us. Well he's better than Scrappy. I'm scared of Scrappy and Rellik

Me: I'll sit with Cardo then.

Bobby: we're racing against each other  
\*chuckles\* lomntana ugwaja uScrappy \*laughs\*  
(this child is scared of Scrappy)

Cardo: uzoba'sterr (she'll be strong) \*laughs\*

Scrappy came and they had this handshake together then he did it with Cardo.

Scrappy: smoko? (What's wrong?)

I was utterly shocked he spoke the language and not afrikaans! I always thought he was a dark colored guy.

Bobby: jonga man, khaw'beke lomntana.  
Ndiyo'race'a (look man, guard this child, I'm going to race.)

Scrappy: fede fede (sharp sharp)

They left, and I was scared to even speak to Scrappy. He texted something on his phone then sat on the camp chair Bobby sat.

Scrappy: thirsty?

Me: I'm not allowed to drink alcohol.

Scrappy: It's just an energy drink \*chuckles\*

Me: oh then that's OK.

He gave me a monster can that was sealed. Once I took my first sip, I heard cars making noises, then in a few seconds they raced past.

Everyone was all hyped, I was fascinated a lot by the racing cars I won't lie.

Scrappy: nja ye'game. (King of the game)

I looked at who he was talking to and it was Xavier. Why is he following me everywhere I go? They did this handshake that was the same as Cardo's and Bobby's. I figured maybe it's a gang thing

Xavier: sharp?

Me: yes. You?

Xavier: sharp. Who's racing now?

Scrappy: Bobby and Cardo.

Xavier: Cardo won.

They both laughed, I'm guessing Cardo is good or Bobby sucks.

Scrappy: kyk die kind vir my, Nella wag vir my.  
(Watch the kid for me, Nella is waiting for me)

Xavier: fede fede (sharp sharp)

Scrappy left and I was a bit scared to even be left with Xavier. I'm still scared of him.

Xavier: this fear of yours. What are you going to do when nobody's there for you?

I just shrugged at that question because I didn't know how to answer it. I understand I need to be tough and handle my own situations but I didn't ask for the hardships I had in my life that made me the way that I am.

Xavier: you need to -

?: Rellik! You're up for 5K?

Xavier: azitshe (let's go)

He is not about to leave me in a place like this alone! Bobby said they should watch over me! Gosh why did I even agree to be here?

Xavier: let's go.

Me: I'm not racing.

Xavier: and I'm not leaving you here alone.

Me: what if we get a car accident?

Xavier: you worry too much. Let me, the driver, worry about that. Now let's go.

Me: I still have my whole life ahead-

Xavier: I could just drag you in the car and

everyone will be looking at us, or you could just come with me to the car

Me: seems like I don't have a choice.

He chuckled then we walked over to his car. He opened the door for me, then rushed to his side and got in. As he started his car, I saw Cardo's car pass us. He won the race, then he started spinning his car. I smiled, it looked so dangerous yet so cool. Everyone was hyping him up. Then Bobby's car followed and I chuckled at the fact that he lost. Xavier slowly drove to the starting line. I wore my seat belt and tried to put on Xavier's seat belts.

Xavier: what are you doing?

Me: safety precautions.

He smiled at me when I finished buckling him



up. It was a genuine smile, it gave me a chance to admire his looks. Although he had a big head. He was cute in a hood gangster way. He screams 'dangerous' as soon as you look at him but, it's quite cute that his eyebrows almost connected and he always has this angry look on his face that could scare anyone off. But despite all that, he was cute.

Xavier: like what you see?

Me: focus on the road.

He laughed and then the other dude's car pulled up in the starting line. A gorgeous girl stood in the middle of the cars with an American flag printed bandana in her hand. She lifted her hands up and in a few seconds she dropped them and Xavier drove off fast as hell I squealed. I was scared for my dear life. He looked at me and laughed, this was not funny to

me. He took off his seat belt with one hand, the car curved a bit.

Me: what are you doing?! No!

Xavier: I'm used to driving without it. Chill.

I tried relaxing but damn it was hard. The constant turns and speeds. How large is this site? After a long time we finally arrived and Xavier won. I couldn't wait to get out. He stopped me when I was about to open the room. He got out and opened it for me.

Me: thank you. Didn't think you were a gentleman.

Xavier: I'm not. I'm just trying to get in your pants.

My jaw dropped. He laughed and hugged me.

Xavier: I'm just playing with you.

?: I see you had motivation.

He down at me and licked his lips. I looked away trying to hide my smile.

Xavier: something like that.

?: 5K.

I watched as he gave Xavier R5000. No wonder this stuff is illegal not only is it dangerous but they're paying off with dirty money.

Bobby: Lelona!

Me: I told him I shouldn't get in the car.

Bobby: let's just go home before Muller finds out and kills me.

Xavier: what were you thinking bringing his sister to the race? \*laughs\* King would understand. Just not Muller

Bobby: we know.

~~~

--KAYLA'S POV--

.

.

I took another shot with Zikhona and Khanyi. We were in Rands and it was lit.

Khanyi: K, even now you can't get Rellik?

Me: friend. He must be gay! I give him all the signs. What's there not to see!?

Khanyi: maybe just because you're having sex with Scrappy

Me: just to get closer to him!

Zikhona: have you tried the hoe trick?

Me: bewitch him!?

Khanyi: unxilile *laughs* (you're drunk) that's the last option. Now the hoe trick is easy. Invite him over, wear nothing and reveal what goods he's missing out on. And he'll be in your bed in no time!

Me: what if he reacts angrily?

Zikhona: okay, drug him with pills that will get his soldier up, that way he won't be able to resist you.

Me: this is why you guys are my bitches!

Khanyi: Lona probably would've said "leave him, you'll find someone better"

We all laughed at her imitating Lona, it was really hilarious.

Me: heeh! Ndinixelele bane'spark bona boy2. Phof sizophela kwezimini. *flips hair* (let me tell you guys, they have this spark together. Well it's gonna end in these days)

Zikhona: pussy power mntase!

Khanyi: in full force! *laughs*

Me: I donated Omar her number because he likes her and she likes him. That way she'll date Omar and play far away from Rellik.

Zikhona: she's too boring for Rellik anyway. Uzolala ngexesha lokutya! (He'll sleep instead of having sex) *laughs*

This is why I love hanging out with Khanyi and Zikhona we're always laughing and we have great discussions about sex, men, booze, and

money.

~~~

--LONA'S POV--

.  
. .  
.

It was the next day, and Cardo had texted me after class to help him with the topic we did earlier in class today. So we went to the library. I explained it to him slowly, and he understood it without me using gang examples so I guess that was progress?

Cardo: thanks again for doing this.

Me: no problem and I know you're going to ace tomorrow's test.

Cardo: yeah right. \*sarcastic\*

Me: I'm serious.

He just nodded and we finished studying then he offered me a ride home. I was anxious but I took it anyway. We arrived at my home, and I saw King and Muller's cars, and other cars

Cardo: they're back.

Me: thank god.

He chuckled and got out of the car with me. I didn't want him to go inside the house with me but I guess it was okay because my brothers would've thought another guy dropped me off. I heard noises soon as we walked in. I'm guessing the heist went well and they're celebrating.



Cardo: bought her home safely.

King: beniphi? (Where were you?)

Cardo: library.

Muller: izithi kanti uyazidalela kumntana wasekhaya ndizokubetha unye. (if I find out you're having sex with my sister I'll beat the shit out of you.)

Me: Khazimla!

Cardo: no, bruh.

Me: I'm so sorry. I-

Cardo: it's cool. I'll see you later.

I just nodded and he left, the guys just laughed at me because I was so embarrassed.

Muller: I was just pulling his leg.

Me: not funny. \*annoyed\*

He tried to hug me laughing, I pushed him away and went to my room. This is why I would never talk to my brothers about Omar, they would never understand. I figured Bobby went home since I didn't see him downstairs with Trigger, Gunz, X, and my brothers. Since I had nothing to do, I decided to study again. 2 hours passed and I was very tired. I think I'm very ready for the test I will write tomorrow.

Muller: still studying?

I jumped shocked, we both chuckled at my reaction.

Muller: look harde (sorry) about earlier on.

Me: what you did was very embarrassing and awkward.

Muller: I know, it was just a joke. You think I'd be laughing with him if I thought he was having sex with you?

Me: like beating him up would be better.

Muller: it would. Boys should be the last thing on your mind right now. Focus on your studies.

Me: so if you found out I was dating-

Muller: I'd beat the fuck out of that guy for trying to play my sister.

Me: what if they are really genuine?

Muller: I don't give a fuck. How do you know they're genuine? Do you read minds?

Me: let's just stop talking about this.

Muller: the problem is you're too naive-

Me: Khazimla please, just drop it.

My phone vibrated indicating I have a text. It was Omar.

O : we're still on for Waterworld?

Me: sure. I'll be in Kayla's apartment in 30 minutes.

O : cool. Can't wait to see you.

I smiled at my phone. Muller cleared his throat. I looked up at him and he had this look on his face that scared me a bit.

Muller: who was that?

Me: Kayla. We had this little fight but now she wants me to sleepover at her apartment.

My heart started beating fast. I hope he didn't realise I was lying. I texted Kayla to be my alibi.

Me: I'm going on a date with Omar, if my brothers ask I'm with you.

I looked at Muller again, he looked like he didn't buy my story one bit.

Muller: but you were at her house the day before yesterday.

Me: yeah, uh... we had a fight then.

Muller: okay. Guess I'll see you tomorrow.

Me: you will? I mean yeah you will. \*chuckles nervously\*

For the first time ever Muller believed my lie. This is a shocker to me. He's usually on top of things and always knows when I'm lying.

~~

I knocked on Kayla's apartment and she opened

after a long time.

Kayla: hey.

She looked like shit. Her hair was messed up and her makeup was still on but it was also messed up. She was wearing a short red sparkling dress. I'm guessing she went out last time and hangover is killing her.

Me: I'm going on a date in about 10 minutes and I need you to cover for me when my brothers ask where I am.

Kayla: Omar is that good?

Me: he rented the whole restaurant for me

Kayla: what!

I never told Kayla the full details of the date

because I came back to her apartment at 1am

Me: I know right?

Kayla: if I knew he was THAT rich I would've taken him for myself. But I'm pretty occupied.

Me: with?

Kayla: can't tell you until he's mine.

I felt bad because I saw Scrappy with another girl last night.

Me: I saw Scrappy with another girl last night.

Kayla: I know. That's his girlfriend. Poor girl can't even satisfy her man that much that he comes crawling to me every night \*laughs\*

Me: but that makes you a hoe and dirty.

Kayla: whatever I'm not even worried about him or anyone's opinion on what we have.

Me: okay.

I was wearing a black dress that was just above my knees with my white sandals. Underneath I had one piece swimsuit that wasn't too fancy just a black, all covered, swimsuit with an open back. My braids were in a bun. There was a knock on the door.

Me: that's him. Bye.

Kayla: have fun, kiddo.

I waved goodbye and opened the door for Omar, he looked amazing. He was wearing black ripped jeans with brown shoes and a white shirt that was only buttoned on his stomach and below so his chest was revealed.



Omar: you get more beautiful every day.

\*smiles\*

Me: thank you. You look amazing too. \*smiles\*

Omar: shall we?

Kayla: yeah, leave. Please.

Omar: hangover?

Kayla just nodded and he laughed. We left her there annoyed and he drove us to Waterworld. It was packed and I was a bit nervous, I took my pills in the morning before my classes but I knew I should've bought them with me for assurance.

Omar: trust me. You'll be okay.

I just smiled and we both got out. He held my hand and smiled at me, then we walked to the

place.

~~

I was having a lot of fun, and I was very happy he even took me to a place like this. It's my first time, in a long time, having fun in a place full of people I don't know. I really am at peace when I'm with Omar. He's a nice guy, he's good looking and he does even look like danger.

Omar: I have to thank Kayla

Me: for?

Omar: pressuring me to talk to you otherwise I would have never had the courage to.

Me: pressuring you?

Omar: not that she forced me. It's just that I was scared. I know crazy right?

Me: yeah a guy like you, scared to talk to me. Really crazy.

Omar: you're just so beautiful and I thought I was way out of your league.

Me: funny thing is, Kayla said you wanted my number from her.

Omar: nah, she gave it to me and said your life needed excitement.

Me: wow.

Omar: I never understood why you hang out with her.

Me: she the only friend I have. She knows me, having a new friend would mean-

Omar: starting all over again.

Me: yes! And I just don't have the energy for that.

Omar: you started over with me.

Me: that's different.

Omar: how? I know your situation and I didn't judge you. I accepted you for you. Kayla just rubs me off in a wrong way, and you not seeing

her for who she really is worries me.

Me: okay enough about Kay-

Omar: don't protect her because she wouldn't protect you.

Me: she would! And I would really love it if you would stop talking about my best friend!

He raised his hands up in surrender. He sighed.

Me: I'm sorry, it's just that-

Omar: no I totally understand. My future wife is very protective of the people she loves, I have chosen well. Our 5 children are lucky

Me: 5!? That's too much \*laughs\*

Omar: minimum 5 maximum 7 \*laughs\*

Me: no way! I am not pushing out 7 babies.

Omar: so you admit you'll be my future wife.

\*smiles\*

Me: Omar-

Omar: I know. You want this to go slow because you're scared of getting hurt. I understand, but at least give me the permission to call you my girlfriend.

I blushed and nodded. He smiled more like a goofy grin, he baby kissed me. I froze. Like literally froze. I didn't know what to do, should I kiss him back? I don't want to move too fast, Bobby said I should wait and not rush things.

Omar: I'm sorry, if you're not comfortable with kissing, it's okay. I can wait for as long as you're ready-

I shut him up with a french kiss. It wasn't all bad, I was enjoying it. We both broke it off and

smiled at each other, he gave me little pecks on my lips and cheeks that made me giggle.

?: Lelona.

I jumped when I heard Muller's voice. I was stuck, my mouth got dry in seconds. How am I going to explain this? In a matter of seconds. Muller was beating up Omar, I screamed trying to break it off. Some people were taking videos and others were breaking the fight off. Omar was bloody as hell and I felt bad. I was crying so hard, this is why I don't want my brothers knowing I'm dating. They're way too crazy.

Muller: azitshe wena (let's go)

me: no!

Muller: what?

Me: I have to go with him to make sure he doesn't press any charges against you. What are you even doing here!?

Muller: that doesn't matter! Why the fuck are you going around kissing boys and going on dates!?

Me: i-i...

Muller: you want him to try and rape you so you can come crying to us again? You think we enjoy seeing our little sister hurt!?

Me: n-no. (sniffs)

the paramedics came running in, as soon as Omar was in the ambulance I got in too. Muller did not even say a word. I knew he was every disappointed in me. I felt bad because it looked like I chose Omar over my brother and that would never happen I love my brothers to death. But i needed to make sure Omar was okay, and

he doesn't press charges against Muller whom I'm still confused how he found me. Did he have me followed? We arrived at the hospital, since he wasn't that injured he needed a few bandages but the doctor said he'll keep him over for the night, just to regulate everything. I was now in his room, ashamed to even look at him.

Me: I'm sorry.

Omar: it's not your fault your brother is overprotective. I might just call him Floyd.

Me: \*laughs\* please don't joke about this. It's serious. I really feel bad.

Omar: you don't have to, I understand. I mean if my little sister went through so much in high school and she starts dating I'd go crazy too.

Me: please don't press charges.

Omar: you owe me a date again \*smiles\*



Me: I'm your girlfriend. I have to go on dates with you, it's my job. \*smirks\*

Omar: you make it seem like you're forced to do it. \*smiles\*

He copied what I said to him after our first date. I chuckled.

Omar: give me a kiss and make everything go away.

I smiled and pecked his lips. He pouted, I laughed and kissed him again. After the kiss he smiled at me. Now I have to worry about the lecture Muller and King will give me when I get home

BOOKERS MEET XAVIER

[02/17, 11:26] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 7

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

me: what's gonna happen with your car?

Omar: damn. I forgot about that. You can drive right?

Me: yeah I just don't have a license nor a learners.

Omar: at least you can. When the doctor comes I'll ask for my keys that were in my shorts, you'll do to the administration department I'm sure they can help you.

Me: okay, I'll park in at the apartment building parking

Omar: how are you going to go home?

Me: walk.

Omar: it's getting late. Why don't you take the car to your house?

Me: King and Muller will probably burn it after they have damaged it.

Omar: \*chuckles\* well that's extreme.

Me: I know. \*sighs\*

Omar: but I still don't like you walking at this time. We're in Cape Town remember? \*laughs\* ouch.

I felt bad because he couldn't even laugh without feeling pains.

Omar: at least call one of them to come get you

from the apartment.

Me: they'll give me a long ass lecture.

Omar: it's better than walking. Safety first. And you can take my shorts so you don't get stares when you leave this place \*smiles\*

That's when I realised I was in my swimsuit and I had a towel wrapped around my legs. The doctor walked in and after checking him out he assured him he'll go home tomorrow and Omar asked for the car keys. And the doctor said I should follow him.

Me: okay, well let me go.

Omar: bye, text me when you get home.

I nodded and kissed him goodbye then followed the doctor. Finally I had the keys and wore the

shorts, then I remembered I left my purse at Waterworld. How was I gonna go there? I walked even though it was a long walk that I hated so much because it gave me time to think about what happened. I am the reason my brother hurt Omar. The poor kid was showing me good things and treating me good but my brother just doesn't want to admit I am growing up and I'm not a little girl anymore. Finally I arrived at Waterworld and my feet and legs hurt like hell because I was walking so fast. I went in panic mode when I didn't see his car and the place was closed. It was also getting very dark. I don't even have my cellphone with me. My emotions got the best of me and I was crying struggling to breathe. I sat down, I didn't even know how I was going to go home. I was already receiving stares from people when I walked here. The breathing got bad and I saw a two guys approaching me, they looked young.

?: hey are you okay?

I didn't answer I just cried. He tried to hug me and I screamed backing away.

!: I'm sorry. Look we're not trying to hurt you. We're just taking a walk.

My breathing got stable knowing I'm not getting raped today.

?: utheni lomntana? (What's wrong with this girl?)

!: I think she's crazy.

?: masambe sumshiye. Akayonxaki yethu (let's leave her. She's not our problem.

!: hey, I'm Zuko and this is Liya. Is there someone we can call to come and fetch you?

I nodded repeatedly like and crazy person. Zuko took out his phone and punched something on it, and slowly gave it to me trying not to scare me. I instantly dialed King's number. And luckily for me, he answered quickly.

King: speak.

Me: Yanga, I'm at Waterworld. I don't know how I'm gonna go home it's too dark to walk I'm scared.

King: we'll be right there. Who's with you?  
\*worried\*

Me: 2 guys I don't know.

King: 2 guys you don't know!?! Give them the phone! \*yelling\*

I sniffed and gave Zuko his phone. They were

talking on the phone and I could hear King shouting.

Zukho: no-no sir. We weren't trying anything. We saw her in the pavement crying and struggling to breathe so we helped her... stay with her?... okay.

I could see he had fear, my brothers had that affect on people. Both a disadvantage and an advantage. It didn't even take more than 30 minutes and they arrived. I ran to them, well King, because I was scared Muller was still angry at what happened earlier on. Muller went to those guys, he talked with them and then dapped them. I was still crying in King's arms. I know how dramatic I am, it's just that I was scared something would happen to me. Cape Town is a dangerous place.



King: let's get you home.

I nodded and he got me in his car, and he drove off, Muller followed. In the car, I kept sniffing. Maybe this would mean my getaway from the lecture? Finally we arrived at home and I was shocked to find other cars, and Omar's car still in one piece.

Me: that's Omar's car.

King: Muller bought it home with your stuff.

Me: I thought they were stolen. Thank god. Is he mad at me?

King: uyavutha ngumsindo. (He's burning with anger)

Me: why can't he see I'm growing up?

King: why can't you wait until varsity ends before dating? Why did you lie about your

whereabouts?

Me: if you guys knew Omar you would approve of him.

King: let's just go inside.

I nodded we went inside. Muller was still in his car, I felt bad because I'm the reason his mood changed all day. I felt like what I did was selfish, my brothers at least deserve the truth when I'm starting to date because they were the ones who had my back through whatever I went through. They felt my pain, and they were there to pick up the pieces that were broken and for that I'll forever love them. Their friends were in the house too. I was embarrassed I had on a swimsuit and boy shorts on. I just waved and went to my room, I showered, did my routine then wore sweats. When I walked in my room from the bathroom. I jumped at Muller laying on my bed and looking at the night stars graffiti on

the ceiling. I wanted it in my room because it was beautiful so my brothers made it happen for me they hired someone to do it. I joined him by laying on the bed and looking at the ceiling.

Me: I'm sorry.

Muller: sorry you lied? Or sorry you got caught?

Me: Khazimla I'm going to start dating, sooner or later you know that, and it just happened sooner-

Muller: I don't have a problem with you dating-

Me: you don't? \*shocked\*

Muller: I don't have a problem with you dating Omar, he's a good kid, and now he knows that if he messes up I won't hesitate to pop a cap up his-

Me: okay!

Muller: I respect that he took a beating for you

and he didn't fight back. He has good academic scores-

Me: you researched about him?

Muller: I hired Kurt for a reason.

Kurt is the private investigator they always use to find out things.

Me: is that how you found out where I was?

Muller: nah.

Me: well how did you know?

By now we were not laying down but just sitting on the bed.

Muller: Kayla. \*shrugs\*

Me: you're lying.

Muller: a few hundreds and threatening words were enough to have her talking.

Me: you threatened my friend for information and you bribed her.

Muller: she's not a real friend if she doesn't cover for you.

Me: mxm. \*rolls eyes\*

Muller: look I can't choose friends for you, but that girl will lead you in the wrong path if you keep defending her while she doesn't give 2 shits about you.

I need to talk to Kayla tomorrow. I may be naive but I don't like how people always say she's bad for me. I need to talk to know what's really going on.

Muller: next time don't lie about your whereabouts. It makes us worry more.

He said getting up, he collected my laptop, took the extension for the TV, took my cellphone and all my other gadgets.

Me: how am I supposed to contact you guys.

Muller: You're only receiving it when you're out of the yard, and if I find out you're back on social media. It's gonna be a bigger problem than this one. And I'll track all your calls

Me: for how long?

Muller: i think a week will do. And no Kayla visits

Me: it's better than being beat up.

Muller: you know I'd never do that to you.

I smiled, and he kissed my forehead and left. I was left in my boredom so I decided to sleep.

~~

The following day after class I went to the hospital with a taxi. I got there just in time before they released Omar, he smiled once he saw me. I got him his clothes from his apartment after I told the landlord the story, well not the whole story, and Gunz was going to bring the car since Muller nor King wanted to and I couldn't drive the car to school because I was scared I was gonna wreck it.

Omar: the Queen of my heart.

Me: hey.

Omar: what's wrong?

Me: let's just say I'm not liking the punishment one bit.

Omar: no gadgets?

Me: for a week.

Omar: how am I will going to contact you.

Me: I don't know. But I think I'll have to cool it off because I don't want more trouble.

Omar: I understand even though a week without you will be hell.

Me: you survived 21 years without me \*laughs\*

Omar: but that was before I met you.

\*chuckles\* now I'm addicted to you \*sings\*

Me: never do that again! \*laughs\*

I couldn't stop laughing he looked so cute but he couldn't sing at all! He laughed also and then he went to change, and luckily Gunz came and gave us the keys. I thanked him and he nodded, he stared at Omar.

Gunz: ithambile ilightie yakho. Uyayithemba?  
(Your boyfriend is weak. Do you trust him? )



Me: yes. And thank you. Bye.

Gunz: \*laughs\* eziTrustfund babies zenu.  
(These trust fund kids you girls choose)

Me: thank you! \*laughs\*

He hugged me and left. I could see Omar was a bit offended that Gunz thought he couldn't protect me.

Me: you're okay?

Omar: yeah...

Me: he's always like that, joking around. Don't take it into the heart.

Omar: it's really fine. I guess being raised by white people does have a disadvantage after all.

I faked a smile because I didn't know how to respond to that. Gunz was just joking, well I

think he was, should I have defended Omar? It wasn't anything serious, Omar is sensitive what I've come to realise. We're like almost the same, and if I was in his shoes I'd want him to defend me, I guess I have to talk to Gunz about the joke.

Me: I'm really sorry.

Omar: hey, I told you. It's okay. \*smiles weakly\*

He drove me home, and once I was inside the yard, he drove off home. Luckily for me. My brothers weren't home. I placed my phone in Muller's bed. And walked out. The test today was actually easier than I thought. Maybe because I studied a lot? And those things I studied were there. I looked over at the topic the lecturer wanted us to look over, I ended up reading it and understanding it. After a while, I was hungry. I checked the fridge and it was empty like really empty and I was dying in

hunger. I took my phone from Muller's room and walked to Pick 'n Pay. It wasn't that much of a distance it was a 30 minute walk. I bought my food, at the store I saw Xavier with another girl, I quickly hid myself in the toys section. I hope he doesn't see me. Why in the hell is Cape Town so small? Everywhere I turn he's there!

?: toys section?

I turned around and he was looking at me with his sexy look, and it was so mesmerising. He licked his lips. I was in utter shock at how hot he looked. What is up with him today? He was wearing grey jeans with a white t-shirt that was written "LOVE THE HUSTLE" and these fly sneakers. His tattoos were in display. I saw that he had a new haircut and his waves were on point. He smiled at me, and that's when it came down on me that I was staring too hard. Worse I

have a boyfriend now, I can't just stare at other men. Especially taken men, I'm assuming the girl is his girlfriend.

Me: yeah. I just love the toys.

That was so awkward. My response is so lame. I silently sighed at my awkwardness. He chuckled, then his girlfriend came to us. She tried to touch his hand, he folded his hands. Maybe trouble in paradise?

?: hey I'm Dineo

Me: Lelona.

Dineo: Lelona? Mhm. . Doesn't ring a bell, he never told me about you.

Me: see you around, Xavier.

Xavier: sharp.

I was about to leave, then he hugged me. She looked at me shocked. Now I felt bad that I disrespected the poor girl like that. I quickly went to go pay for my things before my brothers arrive at home. After I just was done, I walked home. On the way, I heard a car beep. I looked at the road, and there was Xavier in his black Range Rover.

Xavier: need a ride?

Me: no. Home is just around the corner.

His girlfriend in the opposite seat was angry as hell. I didn't want to upset her even more.

Xavier: get in the car Lelona.

His voice boomed with so much firmness and strength. I got in the car, at the back though. I know he has anger issues so I did not want to upset him more. He glared at his girlfriend. She folded her arms, and look out the window.

Xavier: Dineo.

Dineo: what?

Me: I can walk guys, it's really not a problem-

Xavier: no! Don't fuck with me Dineo ...

I was scared for her, and I didn't even know what they were arguing about.

Dineo: want this seat Lelona?

Me: no I'm fine, thank you.

Dineo: please. I... I insist.

She looked at Xavier with the saddest eyes ever, I just wanted to hug her, him though. .. He did not care one bit. To please the poor girl, I switched seats with her, she bumped me purposely along the way. I flinched at her rudeness. I got in the car, then he started driving. He parked right in front of the gate. When I was about to open the door, he got out.

Xavier: don't.

I couldn't help but smile as he opened the door for me.

Xavier: what? \*chuckles\*

Me: still getting used to you being a gentleman.

Xavier: don't push it.

I laughed, then I said goodbye. I waved at his girlfriend who looked more pissed. Yeah, her boyfriend was disrespectful but she let it slide. Why stay when someone's disrespectful towards you like that? He made sure I was inside the house and then he left.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I smiled just thinking about her, she's so peaceful and not into the bullshit these Cape Town hoes have.

Dineo: you let her call you by your name...

Me: not now.



Dineo: you never let anyone call you by your name besides Rellik, she calls you by your name. You open doors for her, she touches you but you're not having sex with her. Who is she to you?

Me: I said not now! I'm gonna drop you off at your home.

Dineo: we all have rules to follow, what's special about her? \*crying\* all the past girls have been the same, you're different with her.

Me: that's because she's not a hoe like the rest of you. Now get out of my car.

She sniffed and got out, she looked at me hoping I said would feel bad and say she shouldn't leave but I was annoyed by her presence at the moment. I went to my uncle Ghost's house. His wife opened the door when my car parked inside the large yard. They had guards everywhere and I never understood why.

He is one of the most powerful gangsters in Cape Town, I doubt they'd try anything on his territory.

Fifi: I'm so happy you came to visit \*smiles\*

Fifi is always happy no matter what happens she remains with a smile on her face, that's why I respect her a lot, she doesn't let situations tear her down.

Me: I missed the best Tannie (Aunt) in the world.

I kissed her cheek and hugged her. She led me inside the house, I haven't been in about 2 weeks. I never visit a lot these days because I've been busy.

Me: the old man is around?

Fifi: you know he's always in his man cave  
\*rolls eyes\*

Me: \*laughs\* it's where his peace is at.

She laughed and said "mxm" I went to his man cave. He was watching old boxing fights and drinking some beer. I sat down, and looked at the fight.

Ghost: everything okay?

Me: yes.

Ghost: then smoko? (What's wrong?)

Me: I'm just visiting.

Ghost: \*laughs\* zimedi? (girls?)

Me: \*laughs\* you could say that.

Ghost: \*laughs\* wie is die spesiale meisie?

(who is the special girl?) You never ask me for relationship advice.

Me: I'm not asking for advice. My gekom hier is te besoek (I came to visit) and you asked me who the special girl is.

Ghost: wie is die spesiale meisie? (who is the special girl?) \*smirks\*

Me: sy is nie my meisie nog (she is not my girl yet)

Ghost: Fifi will be happy. She was getting worried you weren't going to give her grandchildren.

Me: sy is te vorentoe (she is too forward)  
\*laughs\* I think she has a little boyfriend though.

Ghost: eliminate the problem simple as that.

Then the boxing fight got heated, and he started getting hyped.

Ghost: you're about to run the West Kaap  
[western cape] with the big dogs. Don't have  
little problems like this in your personal life that  
you can't fix. I taught you how to deal with a  
problem. Kry jou meisie (get your girl)

Me: I'm on it.

Ghost: that's the Rellik I know. \*laughs\*

## BOOKERS MEET MULLER & KING

[02/17, 11:46] Wdz: ~I CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 8

.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

I know you're probably thinking why did I rat Lelona out... well I was not going to get killed by Muller for Lelona, who might not even date Omar. She'll friend zone him, if my predictions are right. I'll have to bring back her depression because there's no way in hell I'll let her take Rellik from me. Even if it's the last thing I do, I will have Rellik. Lelona is too weak for Rellik, she'll probably cry if he does something bad to her unintentionally. He'll need a real woman to understand that men make mistakes and I can forgive him when he buys my forgiveness with expensive gifts. I can already imagine being respected by these bitches in Cape Town because they'll know I'm the main. I can finally improve my family's life and stop hoeing around for money. I'll just be a hoe for one man. I texted Rellik to come to my apartment.

Me: hey. Can you please drop by? I need to talk to you.

Rellik : what is it that we need to talk about?

Me: I can't say it over the phone.

Rellik : we have nothing to talk about.

Me: please it's important. I wouldn't have texted if it wasn't.

Rellik : I'll be there in an hour.

~~

I paced up and down the apartment. Knowing Rellik I know he'll be rude to me, so I decided to rush to get the penis enlargement pills so he won't resist me. Once I drugged his drink I heard a door knock right away. I jumped and almost spilled the drink, that's how nervous I was. I quickly wiped the little drink mess I made. If Rellik found out about this he would be very angry to a point where he kills me. So I have to

make sure, that I don't make it obvious I drugged him. That's why I didn't add too much of the pill, he should just think it's his hormones and after I fuck him he won't resist me and it that doesn't work. Lona won't ever want to fuck my seconds. I rushed to the door, I was naked underneath the gown.

Rellik: what do you want?

Me: please sit down. Do you want something to drink

Rellik: I'm not here for your bullshit, Kayla-

His words got short once he saw I was naked. I smirked. He chuckled and shook his head. I smiled because I got him where I want him.

Rellik: you'd think I'm dumb enough to fuck with you?



Me: I... but-

Rellik: who sent you?

Me: what? No one, I'm not a traitor.

In a matter of seconds he was strangling me. I was really struggling to breathe and he did not even care that I was about to die. There was a knock on the door, but that didn't stop him

Lona: Kayla? Are you there?

Right now I was in tears, he let go of my neck. I breathed very loudly, and I was still crying.

Lona: Kayla are you okay? What's going on?

Rellik: doen iets snaaks en ek sal jou doodmaak  
(do something funny, and I'll kill you)

He rushed to my room, while Lona banged on the door. I ran to her, she looked worried once she saw that I was crying.

Me: I'm not really good company right now.

Lona: are you okay?

Me: yes. Lona please just go!

Lona: okay. We need to talk later on though.

Me: yes. Now go! \*shouting\*

She shook her head lightly and left. I didn't even feel bad for one bit. It's not my fault she's gullible. Her family should've taught her at a young age to stand up for herself. I tried making her tough, now I'm like fuck it!

Rellik: what the fuck were you doing?

Me: telling her to go.

Rellik: don't you ever speak to her like that again!  
If I ever hear about you damaging her even more, I won't hesitate killing you next time.

He held my face roughly, I whimpered in pain.  
He pushed me away with so much force that I fell on the floor.

Me: you think she'd go for a guy like you!?  
You're crazy! You're too much for her. She wants the simple guys, the sweet ones. Not gangsters who go around beating up women, who are involved in human trafficking and drug dealing. You're an even bigger fool if you think Muller and King will let you date her. She'll never go against her brothers. She wants guys just like Omar-

Before I could finish talking, he knocked me out with a huge punch in the face and everything went black.

-- LONA'S POV --

I rushed to the house before my brothers could be back home. And luckily they weren't back. Where could they be? I watched TV , because I haven't done that in a long time. At 21:00 my brothers arrived. At least they were safe!

Me: a quick text would've been nice.

Muller: I said no TV.

Me: I was worried about you guys.

King: \*laughs\* really?

Me: yes! I needed a distraction.

King: okay, we're back now.

Me: where were you guys?

Muller: room.

Me: you were in your room?

Muller: \*chuckles sarcastically\* uyahlekisa yazi  
(you're real funny) go to your room.

I chuckled and strolled to my room. I didn't want to be there anymore. It felt like prison, and I knew I would be too bored. I wanted to study but I didn't feel like studying. I forced myself to study, and eventually the information started getting in. After an hour, I was tired and I went to sleep.

~~

The following morning after I went to the gym, I went to school. There I didn't see Kayla so I

had no friends. It was so awkward sitting alone, then I was surprised by Cardo and his friends coming to sit next to me, I closed my eyes, and breathed slowly to prevent a panic attack from these people I barely even know surrounding me.

Cardo: why don't you guys go, ndizonibamba eroundin (I'll see you later)

?: fede fede (sharp sharp)

They left, and I tried handling my breathing, which didn't work so I had to take my pills again. I took them this morning but I guess it wasn't working. I need a stronger dosage.

Cardo: have you tried speaking to a therapist about your panic attacks?

Me: I'm not crazy.

Cardo: I didn't say you were, but drinking pills so many times will make you addicted and crazy.

Me: Cardo...

Cardo: that's not why I'm here though.

I looked at him to proceed talking. He put his hands in his hoodie and chuckled shaking his head like a person who doesn't believe what he's about to tell me. That made me more curious to know what was going on.

Cardo: Mr Maybank thinks I cheated on the test.

Me: \*chuckles\* told you you'd pass

Cardo: he wants me to rewrite the test just for his assurance

Me: is he allowed to do that?

Cardo: I don't know and I don't care. If it'll just get him off my back.

Me: we can go over the stuff again.

Cardo: no. It's your lunch, you should take a break.

Me: dude, I really don't mind. Come on.

I took out my books, and he did the same. I noticed he looked around a lot I guess he was embarrassed to be studying at his lunchtime?

Me: you know they won't give you marks nor assure your degree.

Cardo: what?

Me: you don't want to appear as a nerd. But the people you don't want talking about you won't give you a degree, they'll just talk. They won't do anything besides talk.

Cardo: okay, let's do this.

~~



After I helped him, he felt like he was ready for the test, and I agreed with him. Although there were stares, he didn't pay any mind to them. He thanked me and then he left, I went to my next class. After the class I wanted to call Omar so bad because I was having this bad feeling, and I hate to admit it. I was missing him. I bumped into someone, I quickly apologized picking up my textbook. I heard feminine giggles, looking up I saw who it was. Khanyi, Zikhona and Kayla were looking at me like I was something disgusting. I was shocked by Kayla's huge black eye.

Me: Kayla! Are you okay?

Kayla: oh please. Don't act like you care, this is your fault.

Me: what? My fault? Did Muller do this? I'm so sorry. I didn't know he'd beat you-

Kayla: just shut up! And get the fuck away from

me. Ugh I never wanted to be friends with you, I just felt sympathy for you. You decided to take it into something more. Get the fuck away from me. I'm tired of seeing your fat face.

Me: Kayla...

Kayla: gosh here she goes. She's about to beg me to be her friend.

Me: I. .. you know what? Fuck you.

I walked away, they all laughed at my anger. I should've listen to everyone but then again, I decided to be fucking naive and listen to that hoe! I was so pissed off, I felt a panic attack resurfacing so I took pills again. Maybe I do need to talk to someone before I get addicted I don't want my life to be ruined because of pills that, I think, are helping me. I wanted to call Omar, but I knew Muller would track my calls. So I went to town when I found a public phone I tried calling him but it rang straight to voice-

mail. I sighed then tried again, but no luck again. Trying my last time was a bit hard because I was scared he wouldn't pick up and I needed to talk to him. I missed him. Luckily he picked up.

Omar: hello?

Me: Omar!

Omar: Lona?

Me: hey, I thought you weren't never gonna pick up.

Omar: I don't usually answer unknown calls. Are you okay? Did something happen?

Me: no I just missed you.

Omar: damn, that's the first usually I'm the one missing you and you would be playing hard to get.

Me: \*chuckles\* just because I don't tell you I miss you doesn't mean I don't miss you.

Omar: \*laughs\* you know I was listening to my favourite song before you called-

Me: oh, I'm sorry!

Omar: you didn't let me finish.

Me: sorry, go on. \*laughs\*

Omar: \*laughs\* the song is my favourite because it reminds me of you.

Me: \*blushes\* what's the name of the song?

Omar: Ed Sheeran Perfect.

Me: but we weren't young when we fell in love.

Omar: so we are in love.

Me: you're way too forward. \*chuckles\*

Omar: and you love me for it

Me: I didn't even say I love you, fool.

Omar: "but we weren't young when we fell in love"

He copied my voice. I laughed out loud people starting looking at me.

Me: one. I do not talk like that. Two. I'm in front of people stop. \*giggles\*

Omar: let them see you glow. I should make you a t-shirt that says "Omar's girl" just so they can stay away.

Me: \*laughs\* I'd like that t-shirt very much.

He started speaking to someone in the background, so I knew he was busy.

Me: I'll try and call you tomorrow.

Omar: okay, bye baby.

Me: bye.

Omar: bye who? \*chuckles\*

me: your friends are waiting for you. \*laughs\*

Omar: and I'm not leaving until you say baby.

Me: I'll just hang up.

Omar: so rude to your beloved boyfriend.

Me: bye baby.

Omar: that's all I wanted to hear.

He made kissing sounds and then we both hung up. Then I went to the hospital I usually go to. There I asked to speak to Doctor Vane, I was very happy she wasn't busy.

Doctor Vane: Leona!

Me: Lelona

Doctor Vane: sorry \*laughs\*

Me: how about you just call me Lona from now on? \*laughs\*

Doctor Vane: yes. We have an appointment?

Me: no. But I would like the numbers for the therapist you recommended so I can contact her.

She looked very happy that I was actually giving the therapist option a chance.

Doctor Vane: I'll email them to you. Do not worry. I'm happy you have decided to take a chance with her, I promise you you won't regret it.

I just smiled at her, I hope this works because I need to stop being dependant on my pills

~~

-- RELLIK'S POV --

I walked out of Dineo out of my house after we fucked for like 5 hours. I have several hoes in my life. And plenty of women jump at the opportunity to be my bitch. I don't want a relationship because it's a weakness, that's why I just have hoes. They like the money I give to them, and I like the sex they give to me. But I hate it when it gets messy and the girls start developing feelings. That's when I cut them off, and I'm planning on cutting Dineo off, she's becoming too clingy for my liking. On the other hand. I was still pissed off Kayla would try to have sex with me, that dirty bitch has been fucked by everyone. I was feeling a little hungry so I ordered some pizza, while debating with myself how I'm going to kill Omar.

Me: suicide?



Nah. That'd be too obvious it's planned because that kid the perfect life. He was adopted by white parents at a young, he went to the most expensive private schools. All his life he has had his 2 white friends and his 3 new black varsity friends. I even know his schedule. So I should make it a car accident? It's more believable, and if I bribe a few cops. The case could be thrown away. I don't even think I'll be a suspect to the case. I called Scrappy.

Scrappy: praat. (Talk)

Me: I need someone dead. Car accident, I want a clean job.

I told Scrappy the rest of the details regarding what time he'll be on the street, how the car accident should be planned and what should

the cause be.

~~

I checked out my 2 clubs and business was going well as usual. The restaurant I own was also doing great so I could clean the money in these businesses. The businesses are just a front so the police doesn't catch on to me. My phone vibrated it was a text from Scrappy.

SCRAPPY: all done.

I smiled then placed my phone back to my pocket, and proceed looking at the restaurant's finance books.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.  
.br/>.

I finally arrived at home, Muller wasn't in the house. King was in the house, he was playing with his Playstation 4 and drinking a dumpie of Black Label.

Me: brother.

King: no.

Me: what did I do?

King: you want your phone and I said no.

Me: just for a few minutes. Muller won't know  
\*sighs\*

King: no. You could spend all this time you're wasting on talking, watching me play PS4 on TV, while you can.

Me: but you're playing soccer.

King: \*laughs\* since when did you start hating soccer?

Me: since my favorite team became a team of losers.

King: I forgot you're a Pirates fan \*chuckles\*

Me: was. Past tense

He ignored me and got hyped when he scored a goal.

Me: let's play Grand Theft Auto 5 instead.

King: no, I'm busy. Phola (chill)

I rolled my eyes, I watched him play his game and after a while he got annoyed by me sighing a lot and placed GTA 5 in the PS4. I smiled and we played the game.

~~

At night Muller came back I ran upstairs to make it seem like I was in my room, I almost fell and King kept laughing at me. But my toe hurt so bad it was hard for me to laugh. I limped downstairs, King and Muller laughed at me, they even laughed harder when I was crying. Then they saw it was serious then they attended to my toe.

Muller: ubutyhu nani? (What were you doing?)

Me: running.

Muller: if you would've followed your rules then this wouldn't have happened.

Me: can't the punishment stop? I learned my lesson, I'll never lie about my whereabouts. And I'm sure you guys will be happy to know Kayla isn't my friend anymore.

They both got hyped. I just looked at them

being insensitive about the issue. I just lost my only friend and they're happy about it.

Muller: for that smart decision. I'm taking off your punishment.

Me: really?

Muller: yeah. Your phone is on my the left side bed drawer. The other things you'll get them tomorrow.

I ran to his room, and took my phone. First thing I did was text Omar.

O : got my phone back

He didn't reply, maybe he's with his friends. I shouldn't call it'll be too much. I was on WhatsApp now, and I saw Kayla posted plenty

of statuses. One even said "there's a Kelly Khumalo in Cape Town † ♀ " I decided to ignore her petty drama. That's until I saw her post a picture of Omar with the caption. "R.I.P Omar, only the good die young. I'll miss you babe " I don't know what pissed me off more her playing with death like that or her calling Omar babe like he cares about her. But what she posted really bothered me I went to his Facebook account, on his timeline there were people writing R.I.P posts. My hands started shaking, this cannot be true. I talked to Omar earlier on, he was perfectly fine. This cannot be true. I saw another girl called Skylar wrote on his timeline "how I wish I didn't invite you over for the party . Then the accident wouldn't have happened . I'm sorry Omar, farewell dear friend ". Right then I screamed as loud cries instantly left my mouth without my control. My brothers were in my room so fast, I balled myself up and cried. Omar must be fine, I

just talked to him earlier!

## BOOKERS MEET CARDO

[02/17, 11:49] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 9

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I couldn't sleep the whole night, my brothers tried comforting me and it didn't help at all. My heart was broken into a million pieces. Omar was the only guy I saw a future with, he loved me and I couldn't even say 'I love you' to him. I didn't even say a proper goodbye to him. We



just started dating! He understood me, he never judged me and he was always so sweet to me. How did the accident even happen?

Muller: I know this is painful, but I promise you. Izodlula (it'll pass)

I don't know why, but that made me even more angry. How could he speak about Omar's death like it wasn't something serious! It was to me, then it all clicked!

Me: you!... you did this! you didn't want us to date! You pretended to be okay with it so you could kill him! \*crying\*

Muller: that's bullshit. And I'm not going to listen to it.

He walked out, and I followed him in anger with tears falling down my eyes. King just looked at us, not even saying a word

Me: he was the only guy that liked me for me! He never asked for something in return. He was sweet, loving, funny and everything I ever wanted. And you had to ruin that for me! You're oppressing me because you want me to be a child, I'm 18!

Muller: hey! andiy'bodisanga lebharu yakho. (I didn't kill your fool) why would I lie about something so stupid?

Me: so stupid!? Wow, how fucking insensitive can you be!

I started beating him up, he seemed unfazed by it though, King came in between us, and just held my arms.

Muller: listen to me! I would never do that to you.  
I didn't kill him.

He looked sincere. Now I felt bad for even  
accusing him. But I still think he did it.

Me: sorry.

Muller: I understand. How about you go sleep  
for a while? maybe you'll wake up okay.

I nodded and went to my room. I couldn't sleep  
though, I checked my phone and Facebook  
became the first app I visited. Omar's wall was  
filled with more R.I.P posts. I didn't want to post  
because I didn't want to do too much, and have  
people questioning me what we were, it'll just  
break my heart more. In our time together we  
never really took pictures. I feel like people will

think I was lying and I'm doing it for attention.  
So I just stalked his wall and didn't comment on anything. I received a call from a number I didn't know.

?: hey.

Me: who is this?

?: no need to be hostile \*chuckles\*

Me: Xavier?

Xavier: yes?

Me: why are you calling me?

Xavier: I heard, about what happened and I just wanted to check if you were okay.

Me: that's nice of you.

Xavier: yeah, I know losing someone you like is tough. And in that moment you just need a distraction to take you away from that pain.

Me: yeah. I guess so.

Xavier: this is probably the first time you're talking to me and you're not scared.

Me: \*chuckles\* yes

Xavier: that's good. I don't want you to be scared of me. I'm human just like you.

Me: well stop being scary then.

Xavier: how? \*chuckles\*

Me: try smiling next time. Or be nicer.

Xavier: smiling and being nice? Nah that's not me

Me: I know, that's why I'm scared of you. You've got this scary look.

Xavier: people will walk all over me if I'm smiling all the time, and I'm being nice to everyone. When people fear you, they respect you.

Me: I didn't say smile to everyone just a few people.

Xavier: I do smile.

Me: like 2 times a day. \*laughs\*

Xavier: I'm not a children's show where I have to be happy all the time. \*chuckles\*

Me: and you still want me not to be afraid of you. I wonder what it was like growing up with you \*laughs\*

Xavier: yeah I was a bad kid \*laughs\* Juvi was like my second home.

Me: what? \*laughs\* the stress you must've bought to your parents!

Xavier: they died before I was corrupt...

Me: oh.. I'm so sorry

Xavier: no it's fine. I got over it.

Me: yeah let's not talk about depressing things.

I wiped a tear as I thought about Omar, I miss him so much. He would be calling me right now and probably sing Perfect for me since he said

it was his favourite song.

Xavier: I'm sure your childhood was clean.

Me: uh... I wouldn't say that \*laughs\*

Xavier: why not?

Me: just a complicated family and verbal abuse from them then high-school bullying. Just a lot of stuff.

Xavier: yet you still look ncaa (nice) and smile through all the fucked up bullshit you went through.

Me: qing qing qing. His colored side comes out.

Xavier: just by saying "ncaa"? \*laughs\*

Me: ja my broer (yes my brother) \*laughs\*

He laughed at genuine long laugh, usually he'd chuckle or just laugh like a little laugh. But now he was laughing like really laughing. I laughed

because his laugh was so contagious and weird if that's understandable. We continued talking and talking. I found out more about him and he kept asking about me. I was sleepy but the conversation was nice, or "ncaa" as he would say. I actually felt like I could talk to him and he wouldn't judge me because he always has his own dark secrets. He didn't tell me his job exactly even though I know he's a gangster. He didn't want to tell me what he really does, so I assumed he only sells drugs.

~~

The next morning I woke up, and I was surprised that he still hasn't hung up! I felt bad because I must've fell asleep when he was talking.

me: Xavier?



He didn't reply.

Me: Xavier!

I heard him chuckle. I rolled my eyes. Of course he was not asleep he just wanted to hear me shout.

Xavier: I'm up, Lona.

Me: your airtime must be low.

Xavier: trust me, it's the last thing I worry about.

Me: well I have to go to the gym. Bye.

Xavier: sharp.

Me: that is not a proper goodbye. \*laughs\*

Xavier: it's how I say it.

Me: well I might just call you Rellik then-

Xavier: Lelona.

He doesn't want me calling him Rellik I still don't know why. He said it last night in the mist of me asking him how he got the name Rellik. He didn't want to tell me, and he doesn't want me to call him Rellik. He wants me to call him Zay but I'm not doing that so I'll call him Xavier.

Me: say goodbye properly \*laughs\*

Xavier: so you're going to force me to say goodbye?

Me: yes!

Xavier: well you are the one that is going to be late for the gym and classes. Not me

me: ugh \*rolls eyes\*

Xavier: \*laughs\* bye.

Me: finally! \*chuckles\* bye.

I hung up the phone. I rushed my morning routine and headed to the gym. I kept thinking about Omar, how sudden his death is. Just when I was receiving pure happiness. It gets taken away from me. I am grateful for Xavier though, he really was a great distraction for me. Otherwise I wouldn't have slept and I would have been depressed the whole night, even though I only slept at 3am talking to Xavier.

~~

After the gym, I walked back home. On the way I thought about Kayla. She called me Kelly Khumalo on her status. I will never understand how a person can turn their back on you after you have given them your all. I really don't. Taking someone for advantage because they care for you is really spiteful. And I hope karma gets her bad. For all the times she has verbally abused me and blamed it on the alcohol, and for all the times she belittled my anxiety attacks.

King: how are you feeling?

Me: I'm going to be late for class.

King: sit down.

I sighed and sat down. He looked at me, and I didn't really want to have this talk.

King: I heard you laughing at midnight.

Me: I was on the phone.

King: you're cool with Kayla again?

Me: no, uh. .. it was Cardo.

It was the quickest name that came in mind because no way in hell am I going to tell them their "gang" boss, well almost boss was helping me deal with Omar's death. I know about Xavier

being second-in-command through Cardo.

King: Cardo?

Me: yes. He was being a great friend and was trying to console me last night.

King: you're friends with Cardo?

Me: well since Kayla ditched me, he's been having my back.

King: what happened?

Me: no! Nothing happened... it's just that, I was alone during a break before my class and it just so happened he had a break too so we ate lunch together while it helped him with the one module he is struggling with.

King: okay.

Me: I have to go.

King: I'm going to drop you off. We won't be here when you return.

Me: why?

King: dad has fallen sick so we're going to see what's wrong.

Me: I want to go!

King: no. You're still in school. We'll give you more details when we return.

Me: so unfair. \*crying\* Why do people I care about keep-

King: hey! Stop that.

He hugged me as I cried hard. Maybe Kayla is right . I am Kelly Khumalo. Everyone I am close to I bring bad luck.

~~

-- KAYLA'S POV --

I didn't feel like attending classes today, so I didn't. I stayed in my apartment, right when

Patrick left I made myself food and ate. I guess I'll watch movies all day, my phone beeped so I checked the message. It was Khanyi.

Khanyi : humpty dumpty just arrived in the campus with her hot brother

Me: I don't give a fuck about that bitch.

Khanyi : you should since she's gonna be your ticket to getting Rellik.

Me: he doesn't even want me in his bed. Remember?

Khanyi : that's what muthi is for, idiot!

Me: what no! I'm scared of those things and I don't believe in them. I have to find another way. There's a party at his club tonight. I'll pay someone to put something in his drink then, when he'll be drowsy. I'll take him to my apartment. Then we could do it all night.

Khanyi : I have a better idea.

Me: that is?

Khanyi : I'll let you know when we meet for lunch. And you're going to love it.

I just laughed, Khanyi always has the craziest ideas. I can't wait for lunch to hear this plan she has for me.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

Cardo: so you're home alone?

Me: yes. \*sighs\*

Cardo: how about we go to the club?

Me: no!

We were in my home, my brothers were already gone. And I'm guessing Bobby is busy because



he isn't here.

Cardo: come on. If you're here alone you'll get depressed thinking about your dead guy.

Me: as soon 12am hits, I'm going home.

Cardo: that's when the fun begins! \*laughs\*

Me: I don't care. \*laughs\*

Cardo: okay. I'll come by to get you at 8pm.

Me: cool with me. I just have to find an outfit.

Cardo: no sweats.

He shook his head in a dramatic way. I laughed, he loves dissing my clothes. Yet he's wearing American flags like that's normal.

Me: don't talk to me about clothes when you're still wearing flags.

Cardo: ohhhh! \*laughs\*

~~

I wore my long sleeve turtleneck dark peach dress that wasn't too short nor too long. It showed off my ass though. I don't even know why I bought it, it looked cute in the store but I didn't know it was a bit tight. I wore my black heels, since earlier on I took out my braids, and washed my hair. I tied my hair in a tight ballerina bun. I didn't want to apply makeup because I'm not used to makeup. I heard the house phone ring. I rushed downstairs and let Cardo in. I don't think I'll need a purse because I don't want to attract thieves. It's bad enough I'm already going to the club with a gangster. I opened the door, and Cardo was still in his car. He whistled when I got in the car.

Me: don't start.

Cardo: how don't you see how hot you are!?

Damn.

Me: \*rolls eyes\* don't start please.

Cardo: I'm just playing. \*laughs\* but you do look beautiful.

Me: thank you.

He cleared his throat, I know he wanted me to compliment him back. I laughed at his craziness.

Me: you look okay.

Cardo: I'm going to have the ladies crying tonight! \*smirks\*

me: I'm just happy you're not wearing flags.

Cardo: I know all colors suit me.

Me: keep telling yourself that. It might come true. \*shrugs\*

~~

At first I was nervous, but Cardo bought me a glass of cocktail. He said they'll calm me down. I only drank a bit because I didn't want to get drunk. It tasted good though.

Cardo: let's go.

Me: where? \*confused\*

Cardo: VIP \*laughs\* stop acting weird I'm not trying to fuck you.

I was shocked at how blunt (honest) he is. He laughed at my facial expression then we walked to the VIP section. He dapped everyone and I was shocked to see Xavier here. He was wearing a black t-shirt, and black pants and black sneakers. Then his black cap was backwards.

Cardo: Lona, meet the gents.

I just waved, Xavier's stare was scaring me so I looked away. I drank my cocktail, I could see that it was finishing up. I need another one. I slightly pulled Cardo to the side.

Me: I want to go home now.

Cardo: we just got here.

Me: and I feel uncomfortable.

Cardo: okay, I'll take you home-

Xavier: sy sal bly. (she will stay.)

Cardo looked at me, I looked down. This club environment was uncomfortable for me. Cardo nodded at Xavier and he left me there. After Cardo was a bit far, Xavier smiled.

Xavier: am I still scary?

Me: not if you're smiling. \*chuckles\*

Xavier: why do you want to go?

Me: I don't know anyone here and it's awkward.

Xavier: you know me, the owner of the club, so you will have fun.

Me: owner, huh? \*smiles\*

Xavier: yeah. Nothing major.

I laughed at him being cocky, he took my hand and walked with me to his friends. There wasn't a space for me to sit, it got more awkward for me and I looked around. Xavier pulled me to his lap. I was shocked, my breathing got short. But no one could see I was struggling to breathe.

Xavier: relax. I'm not going to try anything.

He whispered in my ear. When he did that, I felt something weird inside of me. Am I just like Kayla? Why am I in another man's lap when my boyfriend died last night? Guilt was eating me alive. Xavier looked at me and winked. I gave him a weak smile. He grinned and I ended up chuckling.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

I was very angry at that bitch! What a hoe she is! It hasn't even been a week Omar died and she's already in Rellik's lap.

Khanyi: how are you going to do that plan with her here? He's caught up with her.

Me: I'll find a way. She's too easy to manipulate. I'll just make her cry, and run away to her home. I know he hates weak people so he won't run

after her. He'll get frustrated soon. Trust me. I know him

Khanyi's plan was very good. She said I could make sure he cums then take his cum to this other fertile clinic, she knows people there. Then they'll get me pregnant with his child. That way, we'll always be stuck together. And I won't tell about the pregnancy until after 5 months when he can't force me to abort. Like I said, there's no way in hell I'm letting that fat bitch take Rellik away from me.

Khanyi: she's going to the toilet! Let's go.

Me: chommie you have to talk. She'll recognise my voice.

Khanyi: what's the problem with that?

Me: incase this doesn't work. And I'll have to go ask for "forgiveness" this won't be added to the



list.

Khanyi: why would you ask for forgiveness?

We walked to the toilets, on the women side. There weren't a lot of people there, probably like 3 then 4 then Lelona.

Me: to get Rellik through her.

Khanyi: smart move.

I faked a smile. I couldn't tell Khanyi that Rellik said he'll kill me if she cries again because of me. Khanyi would've backed out of the plan. We walked inside.

Khanyi: I always known she was a hoe. It hasn't even been a week yet and she's already on another guy's lap. A disgrace shame!

I just laughed silently. The other girls in the bathroom laughed out loud. But they didn't even know who we were talking about, Khanyi's dramatic actions made them laugh. I went to one of the bathroom stalls so that when she comes out she doesn't see me. But to Khanyi I made it seem as if I wanted to pee.

Khanyi: I wouldn't be surprised if she has already slept with him. Rhaa lamantombazana (eww these girls) poor Omar, he was a good guy. He didn't deserve the embarrassment from that fat hoe. Wakhe wambona umntu abeyi'hagu kodwa uhamba azonaya kwezibhedl zabantu. Thixo elovumba \*laughs\* (Have you ever seen a person who's a pig but goes around sleeping in other people's beds. Jesus that smell) I think the pig is here.

They all laughed. I heard another bathroom stall open, it got quiet then they all laughed again. I kept my laughs in.

Khanyi: iyabaleka le'bitch. Izoyeka uthanda amadoda wabantu (this bitch is running away. She'll stop loving other people's men)

I laughed and walked out. I gave Khanyi a high-five.

Me: chommie!

We walked out smiling. I checked the VIP section, she wasn't there. Maybe Rellik went to check club management because he also wasn't there. Aw my future bae is so business orientated.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

Lona was crying walking out of the club, and I chased after her. I tried holding her hand but she pulled it away roughly.

Lona: leave me alone!

Me: tell me what happened? What's going on?

Lona: just leave me alone! Delete my number! I never want to see you or talk to you again.

Now I was very angry. What the fuck did I do? I swear if Kayla has something to do with this. I'm killing her without a second thought.

Lona: me being called a hoe just because I sat on your lap is not the attention I want from

people. Please just stay away from me.

She got inside a car, I didn't even know was parked for her I think it was an Uber car. I let her go so she can recollect herself. I'll call her later to check on her. Right now I gotta deal with who the fuck disrespected me by making my baby cry.

## BOOKERS MEET KAYLA

[02/17, 11:51] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 10

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

I stormed towards the VIP section. I told one of my gents I'll be back. Quickly I went to the girls side of the toilets and there's wasn't anyone in sight. Frustrated, I slapped the wall hard. Checking the club I didn't see Kayla at all. So that led me to believe it wasn't her because I didn't see her at the club today. I'm more pissed at myself that we don't have cameras in the toilets. I need to talk to security to organise that quickly.

Cardo: waar is sy? (Where is she?)

Me: sy het huis toe gegaan. (she went home)

Cardo: she came here with me.

Me: Uber.

He nodded and didn't ask anymore questions because he could already see I was annoyed and angry at the same time.

Cardo: I'll call her to check-

Me: no. I'll call her, and I swear I'll find out who did this.

Cardo: what happened?

Me: someone must've said something to her, she left here crying. And when I find out who they are. They'll regret ever messing with me.

Cardo nodded and left me alone. I went back home. To calm myself down, I smoked weed. After it kicked in, I called Lona. She didn't answer the first time. I called her again, she didn't answer. I got up and took my keys. If she won't answer then I'll go to her house to talk to her. I tried her one last time. She answered the phone sniffing.

Lona: what?

Me: what happened?

Lona: Rellik-

Me: don't. \*angry\*

Lona: please Xavier, I don't want to talk about it. I'm just upset and I'm going to sleep.

Me: so you're going to sleep upset? You think I'm going to let you sleep upset? Jy is maal. (You are crazy). Now tell me what happened before I arrive and force you to tell me.

Lona: \* sighs\* Khanyi happened.

Me: who's that?

Lona: Kayla's friend.

Me: I knew Kayla has something to do with this!

Lona: she wasn't there. I didn't see her. I only saw Kayla and some other girls I didn't know. Khanyi always hated me I just didn't know that much to embarrass me in public.

Me: I'll handle it.



Lona: don't. Please, I just want it to me over and done with. And I don't want people calling me a hoe again when you fight my battles for me.

Me: you're not a hoe. It's okay to let loose sometimes. Life isn't about being perfect all the time. Your imperfections are perfect.

Lona: thank you.

Me: it's cool.

Lona: no I'm serious. After Omar's death you called me and really cheered me up. You're not so bad as I thought you were.

~~

After hours of us speaking on the phone, she fell asleep again. I loved hearing her sleep. And I'm glad I could make her happy when she's really down. This girl is really something special. From the moment I saw her in her home's kitchen. She had the peaceful yet broken spirit,

it just attracted me. Everyone looked at her weirdly for wearing sweats to a party but it showed me how beautiful a girl can be even in her natural form. I still don't understand why she feels insecure when she's the most beautiful human being I have ever laid eyes on. I'm not the emotional nor romantic type but this girl I want in my life. And I'm going to get her because I am Rellik, Killer some may call me and I always get what I want, with no hesitations. This time I decided to hang up in the call because I wanted to call Kurt to get me info on this Khanyi.

Kurt: Rellik

Me: get me information on Khanyi. She's friends with Kayla.

Kurt: the hoe Kayla? She's fucking with Scrappy?

Me: bingo. I want Khanyi's details by tomorrow morning

Kurt: that's a short notice it's still 2am.

Me: I wasn't asking you Kurt. Tomorrow morning, don't make me hunt for these details.

Kurt: yes, boss.

Me: good man.

~~

--LONA'S POV --

I woke up and rushed my morning routine. Yesterday I slept at about 2am talking to Xavier. He's really a good listener. I like that in him. He's a great friend. Especially since I need friends in my life now. Going to the gym I received a text from my brother, Muller

Muller : dad's okay. We'll be back in 3 days. Bobby went out of town, so you're on your

own for a few days. Will you be okay with that?

Me: yes. I need the time alone anyway.

Muller : don't do anything crazy.

Me: I won't. I promise

Muller : okay. I'll send you some money.

Love you.

Me: thanks. Love you too

I walked to the gym and after the 3 hours. I walked back home. I had no classes today since it was Saturday. So I just studied for an while then watched some TV. TV also got boring and I played GTA 5 on the PS4.

~~

After 2 hours. I couldn't even concentrate at all, all I kept thinking about was Omar. And Khanyi

calling me a hoe. I don't even deserve the stuff happening to me. I couldn't enjoy my high-school life now I can't enjoy my varsity life? Maybe I shouldn't enjoy life at all. Maybe if I talked to Omar more a lot that day, we would've hung out and maybe he wouldn't have died that day. Gosh how I miss his sweet words. He always knew how to make me happy. I can't bear the pain of knowing that I'm never going to see him again. I searched around the house for blades. I couldn't find any and that pissed me off. I checked for knives there wasn't any, even in the cabinets. I was upset my brothers removed everything that would be harmful to my life. I checked the garage for a rope and it wasn't there! I screamed angry that they would decided to hide all harmful things. I should be grateful but right now I was angry, hurt and annoyed with my life. So I just cried and cried until there weren't tears anymore. Omar really meant that much to me. I checked my emails to

pass by time before I have the need to kill myself again. I saw Dr Vane's email. She had given me the contacts of the therapist so I will contact her now. I set up an appointment with her, and she said she could see me today at 4pm. It was now 3pm so I prepared my outfit, it was military blue, black and white printed pants and jacket with a white tank top underneath it. I wore white sneakers and let my hair loose. Then I went out, I arranged an Uber since it was far.

~~

I was 20 minutes early and she was still busy with another client so I wasted my time on WhatsApp. Looking at statues, I saw Kayla was on the beach with another man I didn't know. She looked beautiful though. Her body was amazing, she is lucky. I'm even surprised she didn't block me from seeing her statues. In the mist of checking statues I saw Xavier's picture it was a picture of him shirtless in his car. His

bottom lip was in his mouth and I won't lie he looked good. So I commented on the post as a friend.

Me: † ♀ awusabaseleki (you're being cocky)

Xavier : by taking a picture shirtless?

Me: yes! try taking a picture with a funny face, and wear a t-shirt. Nobody wants to see your tattoos † ♀

Xavier : for you to comment it meant you liked what you saw.

Me: whatever. I have to go. Bye

Xavier : you can't even deny it lol.

I blueticked him and he texted me again. Before I could turn off my phone I made a decision to reply to his WhatsApp text.

Xavier : where are you going?

Me: therapy session with my new therapist Dr Zwide. I'll be out in about an hour.

Xavier:

Me: I believe we talked about this goodbye thingy

Xavier : lol bye

I didn't reply I just smiled at it. Then switched my phone off.

Dr Zwide: Miss Daniel I'm ready for you.

Me: hello.

We walked to her office, it had a home Interior decor. It was really cute, Dr Zwide had that motherly love hug. I felt it when she hugged me, it made me feel safe.



Dr Zwide: good afternoon. I'm sorry if you feel uncomfortable with the hug. I give them out to all my children so they know they're not alone.

Me: children?

Dr Zwide: I don't call them clients. It makes it as if I don't care about them.

Me: oh.

Dr Zwide: so let's start from the beginning. Let me know about yourself and how you ended up here.

Me: well, uh. .. I am Lelona Daniel, and I am 18. I have anxiety attacks due to being bullied at school and by my own family. And I am here now.

Dr Zwide: mind defining the bullying to me?

Me: no... uhm, well my family would call me fat, ugly, and a freak because I had no friends and I was always studying because I wanted better

results. At some point I tried to kill myself. But at school it was worse. I was almost raped twice. First by girls then by guys. A video of me naked surfaced around the school. I was stripped and humiliated like having no friends is a crime and being an introvert is something bad.

~~

After the session which was an hour with Dr Zwide I was feeling very down. Reliving all those memories was just too much for me. My eyes were red from all the crying I was doing there. She gave me a diary to write how my days go and my feelings. She was very kind and patient, she gave me her personal number to call her anytime I want to when I feel suicidal or my feelings get the best of me. I switched on my phone to organise an Uber but I had a text from Xavier.

Xavier : I'll be waiting outside for you.

I was confused which outside he meant. Maybe at my house? Or somewhere else. Maybe it's a wrong text. My guts told me to check outside before organising an Uber. I saw a black Range Rover, he was inside it typing on his phone. I went to him and knocked on his window. He lowered it down with a touch of a button

Me: really?

Xavier: I knew you'll need a ride.

Me: I'll call an Uber.

He got out of the car, I thought he was going to roughly pull me inside the car but he didn't. He just opened the the other side of the door. He was opening the door me. Heeee this guy! He's acting like I didn't say I'll call an Uber.

Me: Xavier, I just said-

Xavier: get in the car, Lelona.

Me: you're doing it again. You said wouldn't scare me \*smiles\*

Xavier: you're not listening to me so I have to scare you in order for you to listen to me.

I sighed and got in the car.

Xavier: now was that so hard? \*smiles\*

Me: mxm \*chuckles rolling eyes\*

He closed the door then went to his side. He reversed the car then got out of the parking and drove off.

Xavier: how was it?

Me: okay I guess

Xavier: you guess?

Me: it wasn't as good as I wanted it to be.

Xavier: it's still your first time. You'll get the hang of it

Me: yeah, I hope so.

From all that crying in the therapy session, I was feeling tired. I pushed the chair back and rested.

Xavier: someone's feeling comfortable.

Me: I'm tired.

He drove me to my home. Along the way, we talked about a lot of random things and at home still my brothers weren't around I guess Muller was serious. They won't be back until

they are sure dad is okay.

Me: thanks for the ride.

Xavier: you're alone?

Me: \*confused\* yeah.

Xavier: where is Bobby?

Me: he's busy. He has a life, you know.

\*chuckles\*

Xavier: i didn't say he didn't. \*smiles\* I'm just not too happy about you being in a house alone.

Me: I've stayed alone a lot of times. I'll be okay.

Xavier: I'll send someone to watch over the yard.

me: Xavier... \*sighs\*

Xavier: I'll call you later to check up on you.

Me: you don't listen to me.

Xavier: when it comes to your safety. I never will.

\*smiles\*

Me: goodbye.

Xavier: bye.

I smiled that he said bye without me forcing him to say it properly. I walked inside the yard then walked inside the house. I heard his car speed off once I walked inside the house. The time was now 5:45 pm. I made myself something to eat. After I ate I studied a bit more and after 2 hours I was tired as hell. The house phone rang, I rushed to answer it. I checked through the camera it was a buff dark guy. I was scared as fuck but then I remembered Xavier said he'll organise someone to watch over the yard for me. Xavier is such a good friend.

Me: hello?

?: it's JR. Rellik sent me.

Me: okay, thank you.

I opened the gate and he walked in the yard. I called Rellik to thank him. He answered the call after 3 rings.

Me: JR just arrived. Thank you.

Xavier: he just arrived? He was supposed to be there 2 hours ago.

Me: yeah. But it's okay. I was studying anyway.

Xavier: I'll talk to him about being late.

Me: no don't. I'm really okay with him being late. It's not a big deal.

Xavier: I'll still have a talk with him.

Me: why am I even trying? You won't listen to me \*chuckles\*

Xavier: \*chuckles\* I'm glad you know it.

~~



after an hour talking with Xavier he had to hang up so I was back to my boredom. And Xavier said I shouldn't talk to JR because he's specifically there for a job. But I'm sure the guy is hungry. I made him a burger with baked chips. I poured him some of Muller's coke. Then I placed it on a tray and took it to him. Once he saw me, he was a bit surprised I made him food.

Me: I'm sure you are hungry.

He didn't talk to me, I then realised Xavier must have told him not to speak to me.

Me: I'm sure Xavier told you not to talk to me, don't mind him. He can be a bit extreme. I can't let you starve to death.

JR: ndiyabonga, boss lady. (Thank you)

Me: please don't call that. I'm Lelona but

everyone calls me Lona.

He looked like he was at the age of 29 or 30. I can't have him calling me boss lady. It's too much.

JR: thank you, Lona.

Me: my pleasure, JR. \*smiles\* have a good night.

JR: you too.

I walked inside the house, and walked to my room. I was tired so I slept early.

~~

-- RELLIK'S POV --

I walked in the warehouse where they kept her.

It was me and Scrappy and 2 other members of gang. They removed the bag that covered her face. Her mouth was covered so we couldn't hear what she wanted to say except her mumbled cries and screams. I'm happy we couldn't hear her cries. Just by looking at this bitch I'm annoyed.

Me: Khanyi right?

She cried even more and I just chuckled. I don't give a fuck about her cries.

Me: now you'll learn not to mess with Lona. Kayla should've warned you I do not play when it comes down to her. And you decided to play, now you have to pay.

I aimed my gun at her head, she shook her head

crying. I clearly could see she was badly beaten up.

Scrappy: you sure you want her dead?

Me: she'll talk about this.

Khanyi shook her head quickly crying.

Me: I still think she needs to learn a lesson.

So she won't ever forget. I took a knife from one of the guys. I drew a L on her cheek so she knows to never disrespect Lelona or me ever again. She screamed crying from the pain she felt as the blood went down to her neck.

Scrappy: \*laughs\* you're one crazy motherfucker.

Me: I think this is a small pain to what Lelona felt. Don't you think?

Scrappy: she needs something more extreme.

Me: me too.

I chuckled, she looked at me in fear.

Me: if this goes to the police, you'll be in body bag. Does this bitch even have a policy? I might want her dead next week.

The guys laughed, I took the kniknife and placed it on her eye.

Me: just to make sure you don't go around snitching.

She shook her head crying, I just laughed. She didn't feel any sympathy when she was making Lona cry, why should I feel any sympathy for her?

Scrappy: I'm tired of this bitch crying so much!

He punched her, and the gents just laughed. She had even more tears. Her left eye was becoming swollen. I bent down to the level of the chair she was sitting on, well she was tied to.

Me: Khanyi, 20 years old. You live with your grandmother after your mom moved to the look for work and never came back. I'd hate for your grandmother to have a bad accident in her house

Scrappy: fall and bust her head \*smirks\*

Me: it really would be a bad thing. She's too old

to be making mistakes. That all will happen if I spend even a minute in jail because of you. Because I would never spend a day edanyane (in jail). Trust me \*chuckles\*

Now I was annoyed by this whole thing so I did something that would make sure next time she speaks to Lelona she'll have respect. I placed the knife under her eye. She screamed but we couldn't hear her properly because her mouth was covered. With no sympathy I took her right eye out.

## BOOKERS MEET SCRAPPY

[02/17, 16:42] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER  
~

INSERT 11

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

She screamed her lungs out. I just laughed, the pain written on her face was my pleasure.

Me: you'll have to change to another varsity. Wait this year out and get into another one next year. I don't want to scare my wife, with you looking like that.

I punched her, then knocked her out.

Me: untie her and put her in the boot.



I ordered the boys. They listened to me, I checked my phone and no new message from Lona so she really must be asleep. I called JR to talk about him being late.

JR: Rellik.

Me: wat gaan aan? (What's going on?)

JR: andiva? (Pardon? )

Me: my wife was unprotected for 2 hours, JR.

JR: harde, mjita. (Sorry, man) bekukho inxaki endlini (there were problems at home)

Me: I don't give a fuck. We'll discuss this tomorrow.

JR: yeah-

I cut him off by hanging up. Scrappy looked at me with a smirk. I know where this was going....

Scrappy: vrou, huh? (wife, huh?) \*laughs\*

Me: (hou jou bek) shut up.

Scrappy: a few days ago you saw her as a kid.

Me: we'll talk about this later on. Now we're going to deal with the Khanyi situation.

Then I walked out of the warehouse. Scrappy followed me when I drove off with Khanyi in my boot. Fuck, my car will have blood stains. I'll have to properly clean it off. Once I saw we were in the middle of nowhere. I stopped the car. Scrappy also stopped his and parked next to mine. He got out of his car. I got out too.

Scrappy: probleem? (Problem ?)

Me: yeah.

I went to my boot and opened it. I roughly shook her to wake her up. She whimpered in pain but I didn't care, she just sounded like a dog standing in the rain. I pulled her out and she fell on the tar.

Me: she's going to run home, you know you way home right?

She shook her head no. Her hands were still tied together behind her back and her mouth was covered. Her legs were not tied though.

Me: run before I change my mind and kill you.

She hesitated looking at me in fear. I took out my gun from my behind and fixed it to shot. She quickly stood up and ran. I waited for her to run a little bit faster so she can taste freedom. I

aimed and shot her. She fell on the ground hard. I went to her body, and just like always. I aimed correctly, the bullet went right through her head. This created a blood pool on the tar. I pulled her head up with her hair and dragged her towards the car.

Me: call the gents to clean up. Tell them I need this body to get removed from here in 30 minutes, fast!

Scrappy: thought you weren't going to kill her.

Me: changed my mind. My guts told me she'll start ratting about this to everyone. It needed to be done.

He just nodded, and he went to his car. Put on some music and bought the weed. We smoked we waited for the boys to clean this place and get this body out of here.

~~

× 1 WEEK LATER ×

--LONA'S POV--

Omar's funeral went by fast, his family decided to burn his body and have his ashes, they said his body was too ruined to even recognise him from the car fire in the accident. But they knew their son, and they were sure it was their son . So they only did a memorial service for him where they talked about him a lot. I didn't go to introduce myself there. But I was shocked to know that he told Skylar about me. Skylar was his girl best friend. She invited him to the party and that's when the accident happened. She still blames herself for it but I felt bad that she felt that way because Omar wouldn't want her to feel like that. The exams were here and the Easter holiday was approaching. I didn't want it

to come because I'll have to go back to those demons I call family. I don't want that. I received a call from Xavier, he has really been a great friend these days. I might even call him my new best friend. Him and crazy Cardo. They always cheered up my mood.

Me: hey?

Xavier: ja.

I could hear he just woke up. His voice was raspy and so sexy. I can't even deny that he's good looking and sexy. His voice is already amazing when he's full awake but when he wakes up. It's incredible.

Me: aww you just woke up? You can go back to sleep.

Xavier: nah. I just saw your text. Talk to me.

Me: woah, are you always this grumpy when you wake up?

Xavier: talk, Lelona.

Me: I told you don't go to the party now the hangover is too much. \*laughs\*

Xavier: Lelona \*groans\*

Me: sorry. I need a favour.

Xavier: anything.

Me: there is a sale at Sportscene and there's these sneakers that I'm dying for. I'll send you the pictures. I just want you to stand there quickly before someone takes them first.

Xavier: I'll send someone over there. Why can't you go?

Me: I have to start at the campus first. Mr Maybank wants to talk to me.

Xavier: you have classes today?

Me: no. And send a picture of the guy you're

going to send over there so I know who I am going to. I just want to get in the shop and pay. I would've asked Muller and King but they're -

Xavier: Lona, I really don't mind.

Me: I don't want you to think I'm taking advantage of your kindness. I really appreciate everything you have done for me.

Xavier: everyday you say thank you to me, and I still don't know why. \*chuckles\*

Me: I'm being grateful.

Xavier: let's put an end to it now. I know you're grateful, no need to say it everyday.

me: okay. Well I have to go.

Xavier: cool. Talk to you later

Me: bye

Xavier: bye.

I smiled hanging up, then I sent him pictures of



the sneakers I wanted. This week has been good, no Kayla drama, no Khanyi drama, my dad is healthy. And most of all my brothers are still okay and safe. The Omar case was still being investigated, I think. Because the last time I heard it was thrown out and ruled it as an accident. Who would want to kill Omar? He was always so nice and sweet whoever did it. I will never forgive them, ever! His parents hired a Lawyer to bring evidence his car was made that way that day but there wasn't any. The judge dismissed the case after they just brought the case up on assumption. I know a lot can happened in one week. Dr Zwide's sessions help me a lot. I see her 2 times a week, the journal is also a good thing for me because no one knows about it but me and Dr Zwide. It's like I'm talking to someone who won't judge me. I can say whatever I want and not be scared of being judged because of the opinions I have. I rushed downstairs because I needed to rush to

the campus. Muller was there, King was not though. He was with X. I just waved at them and rushed out. I walked to the campus and went on Mr Maybank's office.

Me: sir, you emailed me wanting to see me.

Was it even allowed for Lecturers to email students? I didn't want him to notice I was uncomfortable with this so I forced a smile while my heart started beating fast.

Mr Maybank: yes, how are the sessions with Ricardo Damon?

Me: pardon?

Mr Maybank: he told me how he achieved such a high mark in my exam. You were tutoring him.

Me: yes, on certain days, sir.

Mr Maybank: how much do you charge him?

Me: he's kind of my friend so I don't charge him sir.

Mr Maybank: I want you to tutor 3 of my struggling students. They're willing pay R50 an hour .

Me: really! ? Yes I'll do it sir.

~~

I walked from UCT campus to Sportscene and it was a bit long and I was tired as hell. And the sun wasn't helping either. After a while of walking, Xavier called me.

Me: I'm arriving in the store now.

Xavier: already bought them. Come to Spur .

Me: what!?

Xavier: I already bought them for you.

Me: you can't do that. I don't want you spending

money on me.

I know guys, especially guys like Xavier. One minute they're buying you expensive gifts, the next minute they think they own you because of the expensive gifts.

Xavier: already did.

Me: mxm.

I dropped the call, he doesn't listen to me and I hate that. When I say no I wish people would listen to me. I'm not comfortable with guys buying me expensive gifts and he did it, but I told him no already. He called again, and I just turned off my phone. The sun was burning me and it was way far to get home. I switched on my phone, called up an Uber. Then switched it off ignoring Xavier's texts and missed calls.

Once the Uber arrived I went home, I was tired and heating up. I'll need a cold shower. Once the Uber parked next to my house, I saw Xavier black Lamborghini. I was shocked he was here already. But why am I surprised this guy's is a speed racer he does this more often.

Xavier: Lelona

Me: I don't think we have anything to talk about until you start listening to me.

Xavier: I'm all ears.

Me: I do not need your money. I can buy my own stuff and I like buying my own stuff. It's a part of who I am. I understand your girlfriend or girlfriends love you spoiling them but I'm not them. I like spending my own money and not depending on anyone else besides myself and my brothers. Please understand what I'm saying and take it seriously.

Xavier: I do. And I promise this is the last time I do it.

Me: thank you. Now I have to go all the way to the bank to withdraw your R1 100 but I just would've swiped at the store.

Xavier: I'm not going to take the money.

Me: why do I even bother with you? Anyway thank you.

He nodded, I hugged him goodbye. He kissed my forehead then I went inside the yard. Once I was in the house that's when he drove off. The house was empty, I guess my brothers were out. I studied for the exam I was going to write tomorrow.

~~

I checked the time it was 6:00pm I guess I studied till late. I took a picture of my books and posted it on my WhatsApp status with the

caption "it's dedication not luck " then I checked other people's statuses and I saw Kayla was partying but she's in the module with me. We're both writing the test tomorrow. I saw her status that was posted just now. It was written "bitches have no life whatsoever " something in me told me it was about me because why would she post that after I posted a picture of my books? She really loves breaking me down and I don't understand why. She has it all, I should be the one jealous of her yet she's jealous of me. She's got the perfect body, she has a lot of guys that like her, and she has a lot of friends. I'm fat and all the friends I have are like 2 excluding her. Well she's not even my friend anymore. She's too caught up with Khanyi and Zikhona to even see that's she's losing the person that cared about her the most, and that's me. I didn't even reply to her petty drama. If I have no life why is she wasting hers stalking me? I'll never understand Kayla

yaz, she bullied me in high-school and she's trying to do it again in varsity, and I can't believe myself! I'm letting her bully me. I'm letting her petty drama affect me. I should just have positive vibes and let karma deal with her. Because clearly she's not on my level. I'll pray for her to get better from all the bitterness and jealousy because those two things are what can kill a person or make them go on the wrong track of life then they'll regret it after it is too late to fix anything. I hope she doesn't experience that. Although she hates me I don't hate her, I feel sorry for her. She needs love in order to give love and even though she wishes me bad things. I sorta don't want her to experience bad things. I went downstairs to eat, I saw my brothers. They were eating pizza. I just rolled my eyes, they eat so much yet they always stay fit!

Muller: you drank my coke?



I froze and cleared my throat.

Me: yeah. Just one glass.

How was I going to Muller tha Xavier organised someone to guard over the yard? because he didn't feel like it's safe for me to be here alone. I'd rather not because they both have huge egos so it'll only cause too many fights. He won't understand that Xavier is only my friend and nothing more and nothing less.

Muller: I thought you were off acid.

Me: I am, just craved it for yesterday only.

Muller: you're lying.

Me: uh? What? I. I am not.

Muller: Lelona; I know you like the back of my

hand. Who was here?

Me: no one-

Muller: Lelona!!! \*shouting\*

I was scared for my life. When Muller is too angry, he can not control his anger. Last time he beat up Omar. I'm scared he'll beat me up. Even though he promised he would never do that.

Me: it was just Cardo. We were studying here in the house.

I replied with glossy eyes. I hate being shouted. And he knows how vulnerable I am. He sighed once he saw I wanted to cry.

King: someone would swear you too are twins. You both can't control your emotions. You really

act the same \*shakes his head chuckling\*

Me: mxm. He knows I hate being shouted.

King: wena uxokela ntoni? (Why did you lie? )

Me: I thought you guys were going to be angry about Cardo being here.

Muller: I talked to him a long time ago. He's harmless.

Me: talked to him? That's why he ditched his friends and came to study with me. Not because he cared about the test, you guys really told him to look out for me and I was alone that day.

Muller: I told you I would do it. We said it at the party.

Me: i didn't think you were that extreme to force a varsity guy to not enjoy his varsity life because of me.

Muller: not to say he shouldn't enjoy it. Just watch over and hang with you so you don't feel

lonely.

Me: so you're paying someone to be my friend?  
Wow my life is lame. I really have no life \*sighs\*

King: don't say that.

Me: it's true. My brothers have to pay someone to hang out with me. I feel like I am a failure.

Muller: by not having any friends? That's an fucked up failure then.

Me: you're not helping.

Muller: look, your goals should be about getting an education not friends. Why do you even need friends when you have us? Friends come and go but-

Me: family stays forever. \*sighs\* I want girl friends and friends that won't go around fighting everyone when I tell them how my day went. Nor fight my boyfriend in Waterworld.

Muller: I get your point.

Me: and please stop paying Cardo to hang out with me. I want a genuine friendship.

I texted Cardo. I am so disappointed in him.

Me: your payments are over. You didn't have to fake being my friend for money.

Cardo : sorry, Lona. I needed the cash but right now I enjoy your company kid. You not that bad.

Me: mxm.

Cardo: I'll make it up to you.

Me: Let's go to that vegan restaurant. You owe me.

Cardo: I'm not about to pay R100 to eat leaves. Let's go to this spot I know, they sell the best braai.

Me: I can't eat braai meat.

Cardo: come on. It's just for one day. Let loose.  
I'll pick you up in 30 minutes.

I looked at my brothers who were busy being idiots and throwing popcorn in the air and trying to land them in their mouth and laughing at each other when the other misses.

Me: I'm going to Debonairs with Cardo.

Muller: Debonairs? \*confused\*

Me: yeah, he's trying to apologize. Can I go?

King: as long as you get back before midnight.

Me: okay, thanks.

I rushed upstairs to wear something casual. I wore my light blue jeans with a light blue Jean jacket then a white poloneck underneath. I left my phone so I don't attract thieves I wore my

white sneakers again. And right after I was done, Cardo was in the kitchen. It hasn't even been a minute and he's eating in the house. He loves food. I know many of you are thinking Cardo and me have feelings for each other. It's a no, because I would never date a gangster and Cardo sees me as his little sister just because he's a year older than me. I see him as my brother. Nothing more!

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

I took out all my frustrations in fucking the hell out of Nandi. She texted me earlier and I couldn't resist. I'm still single even though I want Lelona, and I want her so bad.

Nandi: yes! Yes! Ah ha! Rellikkkkk \*moans\*

I was slamming my dick in her doggy style. She came and I followed right after her. I pulled out and went to flush the condom down the toilet. I heard my phone ring in the room while I was peeing in there. Nandi bought it to me, she was still naked. I bit my lip and slapped her ass. She smiled and winked.

Nandi: hurry and come back to bed.

I answered the call, it was Cardo.

Cardo: we're going to the Mzoli's Place. Where the gang usually hangs.

Me: why the fuck would you take her to a place



full of gangsters!?

Cardo: they don't even know her. They just think she's a friend of mine.

me: Cardo get her the fuck out of there before there is a shootout.

I heard air noises, then I heard my baby talking.

Lona: let me talk to him. He is too much...

Xavier I came here for a good time. I'm letting loose. You said it yourself.

Me: okay.

Lona: okay? Thank God you decided not to be stubborn today.

Me: \*chuckles\* I'll be there in 15 minutes.

Lona: what? Why? \*laughs\* we'll be fine.

Me: you know I'm not going to listen to you. And I never will when it comes to your safety

Why the fuck would Cardo take Lelona to the Mzoli's Place in Gugulethu!? Sometimes I wonder how that kid got in my gang. I quickly dressed up.

Nandi: where are you going? Rellik.

She tried to touch me so I quickly pushed her back and she fell on the bed roughly.

Me: get dressed and get the fuck out of my house. You're done with what you were here for. I'll deposit money for those shoes you wanted.

She nodded wiping her tears and getting dressed. I took my black Range Rover. Then I dropped Nandi off and drove off to the Mzoli's

Place.

LONA

[02/17, 16:42] Wdz: ~I CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 12

.

.

-- LONA'S POV--

.

.

.

We went inside the place and placed an order for the meat, then went to the place where they braai for us the consumers. It was packed, there were a lot of people. People I was even scared of. Some stared at us, I blame Cardo. He was wearing these American flags clothes and drawing attention to us. I breathed slowly to

contain my panic attack. There were a lot of people! I closed my eyes and counted to 10 then I was okay. I smiled at Cardo, but he was looking at me confused.

Me: I was trying to contain my panic attack.

Cardo: I thought you were about to have a seizure or something.

We laughed together and I playfully punched him. While we waited for the meat, we talked. The meat finally arrived. He told me about his baby mama drama. I was shocked that he had a child. He loves his baby mother so much, even though he lies about it I see the smile he had on his face when he talks about her. We were eating and talking.

Me: why don't you just send items then?

Cardo: I want to take care of her too, because she might find another lightie (guy) to take care of her.

Me: and you don't want that.

Cardo: \*annoyed\* if I wanted that then I wouldn't care.

Me: don't get grumpy with me. \*chuckles\* just tell her you're low on cash and I'm sure she'll support you.

Cardo: \*chuckles\* you watch way too many TV shows. This is the real world where when you can't take care your girl, someone else will do it for you

Me: you'll never know unless you try.

Cardo: Lelona-

Me: t.r.y

Cardo: has anyone ever told you how annoying you are?

?: how can a beautiful face like this be annoying?

I looked back, and I didn't know this guy at all. He looked scary to me. He wasn't cute nor ugly just average. He had tattoos all over, even on his neck just like Xavier. He looked older and bigger than Cardo

Cardo: Kenny...

Kenny: hou jou bek, Ricardo! Ek praat met die mooi meisie. (Shut up, Ricardo! I'm talking with the beautiful girl )

He lifted up his vest and I could see a gun. My heart started beating up in 1000 beats. I was afraid Cardo would be stubborn and get us killed by not shutting up. And he did, Cardo got up, and displayed his gun.

Cardo: ek wil nie met jou hierdie te doen nie.  
Maar jy is uit van die lyn. (I don't want to do this with you but you're out of line)

Kenny: hoekom huil jy? Is sy jou meisie!? Sy is my meisie nou! \*roughly pulls Lona's arm\* (why are you crying? Is she your girlfriend? She's my girlfriend now!)

People were minding their own business, they couldn't even see what was happening. And it was too loud, there was no point for me to scream. As I tried to scream it's like no screams were coming out. He had a tight grip on my arm, now we were both standing up and I could feel his dick on my ass. He was too close to me, and it made me very uncomfortable. I literally just froze there scared of what might happen next. I can't die today, and I can't get raped today! Not ever! I know I don't appreciate life a

lot but I just can't die! Not in a gangster spot where my murder case would lead no where because no one will snitch.

Cardo: sy is Rellik se meisie. Moenie speel met haar nie. (She is Relklik's girlfriend. Don't play with her)

Kenny: baby girl, tell me your name.

Me: uh, uhm i-

Kenny: Ricardo, haar naam? (Her name?)

Xavier: it's none of your business.

We both turned looked behind us, and boy was I lucky to see him!

Xavier: Lelona, come here.



I was scared to even walk over to him because the facial expression he had was very threatening and very serious. If looks could kill Kenny would be 6 feet under right now. Kenny had a tight grip on my arm. I tried to go to him but Kenny pulled me back.

Xavier: Kenny, you don't want to mess with me. May this be my final warning. I'm not a talker, so if I say something once. I want it to happen quickly. When I tell Lelona she should come to me, she'll walk to me safely without me seeing any type of bruises on her. Or, Mzoli's will be a crime scene very soon.

He let go of my arm and I walked over to Xavier. I was scared to even hug him, when he's angry it's like he's angry at everyone. So I was scared to even touch him. To my surprise he was the one who hugged me.

Xavier: you're okay?

I nodded, I couldn't even say a word out.

Xavier: you're hurt?

I shook my head no. I'm just still scared, my arm just hurts but I couldn't tell him that. I don't want this place being all messed up because of me.

Xavier: how's your arm?

I shrugged a bit. His jaw clenched I could see it through his hard cheeks. He was really mad.

Me: can you please just take me home?

Xavier: Cardo will take you home. I'll follow right after you guys.

Me: I want you to take me home.

I looked him into his eyes. His right hand ran through his face. He was trying to calm himself down.

Xavier: I'll follow right after you guys. I'll call you later on.

Me: Xavier-

Xavier: please listen to me for once and I promise you I'll call you later.

I looked down defeated because what if Xavier gets shot today and I will be the reason for that. I know he's a grown man and he's a gangster but I can't help but worry because he lets his

anger get the best of him sometimes and that will lead him in darker paths.

Xavier: come on, don't do that. I'll be okay.

I nodded and he kissed my forehead. He motioned for Cardo to come with us, Xavier held my hand. We walked out the place. I didn't like the stares we received from people there. I think they knew Xavier. He made sure I got near the car, safely. He stood with us near Cardo's car. I saw his Range Rover from a far. Why is he driving a Range Rover to a shisa nyama.  
Heeeeh lomfana (this guy)

Xavier: drive her home, no quick stops. Call Scrappy to call OG and JR they should come here nou nou (now now)

I cried silent tears to get him worried and not go in back there.

Xavier: don't do that. \*wipes her tears\* I promised you I'll call you. You love worrying yourself.

Me: I don't want you to go back in here. You're gonna get hurt.

Xavier is the only best friend I don't have in the moment. He always calls at night and I don't sleep with a bad mood. And I don't to lose him too just like I lost Kayla.

Xavier: I need to teach him a lesson. He's disrespectful and I don't like him disrespecting me and the people I care about. He shouldn't even have talked to Cardo like that nor grab you like that but he did it because he likes seeing a

reaction out of me well he's gonna see one tonight.

Him talking so angrily was worrying me because from where I look at it. People may die from that, gosh why did I even come to this place when I have a test tomorrow. More cars pulled up. I saw JR, Scrappy and some other guy that had a huge scar on his face.

Xavier: okay, now I have to go. No quick stops, Cardo.

I was about to cry and he looked at me in a firm, stern and serious way to stop what I was trying to do. I folded my arms and looked the way. Cardo was holding in a laugh. Death and beating people up is not a joke. Xavier kissed my forehead then he opened the door for me, I

got in the car.

Me: don't forget to call me when you're at your house.

Xavier: and get some rest. You're writing exams. Don't stress about me, jy hoor my? (you hear me?)

Me: yeah.

He closed the door, then Cardo drove off. Speeding off to be quite correct. I glared at him. This is not at racing show, it's real life.

Me: why are you speeding?

Cardo: just want to go home quickly. Uligwala kanene (you're coward) \*laughs\*

Me: we left the meat there! A total waste of money.

Cardo: \*laughs\* I didn't even realise that we left it there. I'll text Mzoli to keep it safe for me, I'll take it tomorrow .

Me: you know the owner of the place!?

Cardo: yeah. We all do, even your brothers.

Me: is he also apart of the big gang. ..?

Cardo: you could say that. \*laughs\* he uses the shisa nyama to wash his cash

Me: wash his cash like make it seen like the drug dirty money is made in the shisa nyama.

Cardo: yeah. We're going to stop at the garage I need a quick refill.

Me: Xavier said no quick stops.

Cardo: if we don't stop there. Izofadala ipetrol.  
(The petrol will end)

Me: okay, just a very quick stop.

We stopped at the garage close by to where we



were. I waited in the car, while Cardo talked to the men outside. I could clearly hear their conversation about the petrol and then they went on to make small talk with each other about the rising price of petrol. After that Cardo drove off.

Cardo: told you nothing will happen.

Me: yeah yeah \*chuckles rolling eyes\*

I heard a car sound behind us so I looked back, Cardo sped up but the car also sped up.

Me: I think we're being followed.

Cardo: shit.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.  
. .

I angrily looked at Kenny. I called Scrappy, JR and OG because I knew Kenny's crew was around here somewhere.

Kenny: finally, Rellik has a weakness \*laughs\*

Me: if you ever touch-

Kenny: you're not going to do anything.

Me: you bullying Cardo because you know he's alone in here and all your boys are here is really a weak move I didn't expect from you.

I aimed my gun at him, that's when eyes landed on us. Some people ran out crazily but I knew all those who were gangsters stayed behind.

Kenny: kill me. Kill me en skep 'n oorlog (and create a war) you will ever win!

Me: I'll figure something out.

Quickly Mzoli rushed in between us. I couldn't shoot Kenny because I respected Mzoli a lot. And if I shoot Mzoli, I will be in deep shit.

Mzoli: Kenny, uit! (Out)

Kenny: see you around, Rellik. I hope I get to see her too. \*smirks\*

I wanted to beat him up so bad, but Mzoli held me back.

Mzoli: hey! Why is my business a fighting area for you?

Me: you know how Kenny gets under my skin.

Eendag ek sal dat seun doodmaak. (One day I will kill that boy)

Mzoli: not in my shisa nyama. I am losing business because of this.

Me: askies. (Sorry)

Mzoli: you're lucky I'm very close with your uncle and you \*chuckles\*

Me: thanks Mzo man!

Mzoli: and don't go hunting for Kenny. It's been an while since there has been a war, don't go around looking for it.

Me: I hear you.

My guys and I left. I told them what happened and they said they'll think of ways of getting back around at Kenny without killing him and creating a war. Kenny's father runs the streets in Eastern Cape, but Kenny came here just to live and enjoy life before he goes back to

Eastern Cape to take over. He knows I can't kill him because it'll only create war that would never end. Ghost, who is my uncle, always warns me not to kill Kenny but his life is like a ticking bomb and it's soon about to explode because I won't take shit from him. I sped off home, and I didn't see any funny things along the road so I guess Cardo and Lona arrived home safely. I called Lona to make sure. Her phone rang till it was unanswered. For her sake I hope she's not ignoring my calls because I'll go to her home looking for her. I called again and still it rang unanswered. Before my anger could rise up I called Cardo. It rang and it was answered after a long time.

Me: did you drop her off safely?

Cardo: uh...

I could hear that he was still on the road

speeding. In my head I thought maybe he's racing today.

Me: what the fuck do you mean by "uh" Cardo?

Lona: we're being followed.

I was fucking so fucking angry she was in the car when I specifically told Cardo no quick stops.

Me: what!? Where are you!?

Lona: I don't know.

Me: Cardo!?

Cardo: uh, we're uhm...

Me: you better fucking know where you are, I swear I'll-

Lona: Xavier! He's driving and I don't want him

stressed while he's driving. This is my life here.  
He's not alone in the car

Cardo told me where they were and I was more  
angry that they didn't listen to me when I said  
no quick stops. I quickly got in my car.

Me: circle around the same 2 streets. They're  
following you for information. They want  
Lona's address.

Lona: my address? Why?

Me: Kenny's orders. I'll be there quickly keep  
circling the 2 streets. Do not take her home  
Cardo!

Cardo: yes, boss

Me: don't hang up either. I need to make sure  
Lona is safe.

~~

I parked next to her home. I took care of the guy following them. in Lona's mind she thinks Cardo ditched him but me and Cardo know I killed him, so he can drive Lona home, but I took her from a bit far, she didn't see the other guy's car or dead body. I told Cardo to go to the car and wait until OG comes and cleans the bloody mess.

Lona: thanks.

Me: no problem. Next time don't go to Mzoli's, or any shisa nyama. If you want braai meat, I'll braai meat for you.

Lona: that's a bit extreme don't you think?

Me: no. It's the most perfect idea I have heard the whole day

Lona: mxm. If you want me to listen to you and do what you want you also have to listen to me.

Me: Lona-



Lona: no. When i say let's leave. Please let's just leave and leave the fights behind.

Me: I can't just leave. People will look at me like I'm a bitch

Lona: why do you care about what people say? You could've been killed there today.

Me: but I'm still alive.

Lona: you're not listening to me-

Me: and I never will when it comes to your safety. How much do I have to say that for you to understand?

Lona: mxm

She opened the door angrily. And I just chuckled, my wife can be dramatic sometimes. I got out the car and ran to her. I pulled her quickly before she could touch the gate.

Me: come on, don't be like that. \*laughs\*

Lona: bye Rellik

Me: hay hay hay uyazibona ke. (No no no, do you see yourself)

Lona: \*laughs\* don't try Xhosa again.

Me: it's worth seeing you smile.

Lona: bye.

Me: bye.

I hugged her and kissed her forehead. I watched her get in the yard and then in the house. That's when I went in my car, and drove off. I called Cardo to ask if the body was taken care of.

Cardo: Rellik

Me: is it taken care of?

Cardo: we're doing it right now.

Me: I'll be there to check everything out.

Cardo: cool.

I hung up the call. Then went to the road where I killed the guy that was following Lona and Cardo.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I woke up the next morning and did my morning routine. Then I went to the gym. After the gym I came back home and washed again, then wore my white short poloneck dress with a crop Jean jacket and white sandals. I tied my hair in a tight

ponytail and made baby hair with some gel. Then I walked downstairs to the kitchen to eat some cereal. Then after I was done I walked to the campus. I was early so I revised the studying I did last night before the crazy incident at Mzoli's Place. Eventually time was approaching so I went to class. There I sat in the front. I saw Kayla getting in the class, she looked like hell. It looked like she was hungover. She was wearing shades and her weave was messed up. She was wearing jean shorts with a pink crop top and pink, white, and black colored sneakers. I looked away from her, she just went all the way to the back.

~~

the exam was easier than I thought it would be. I smiled because I knew I definitely passed it. I was walking with my earphones on and

listening to Beyoncé the album, I was waiting for Muller to come get back he said he's taking me shopping. He came to fetch me at the campus and he drove off, on the ride he made small casual talk by asking how the exam was.

Me: it was great. I even see a 80% pass. Kayla on the other hand came in the class looking like a girl who didn't take a bath after a party.

Muller: \*laughs\* I never knew why you liked that girl.

Me: I'm starting to question my mentality too. I am happy she is out of my life.

Muller: are you really?

Me: what does that even mean?

Muller: you talk about her all the time. She's out of your life now, she shouldn't be something you're obsessed with.

Me: let me delete her number and block her

from my WhatsApp. You're right. That Kayla chapter is over.

XAVIER

.

.

.

.

.

please let us take time to appreciate Xavier being angry and sexy at the same time

[02/17, 16:42] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 13

.

.

.

× 2 WEEKS LATER ×

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I pouted in the airport. I was going home. The exams were done and now I had go back home for Easter's. My brothers couldn't come because they're planning a heist for another bank. I didn't even want the full details. I was just upset that I was going home alone. I had a video call from Xavier and I just smiled on my own.

Xavier: I thought you landed already.

Me: flight got delayed. They said it should be ready in 30 minutes.

Xavier: you really have to go?

Me: yes otherwise if I had a choice I wouldn't go.

Xavier: look, let me know if you need anything.  
You know I'll always be there for you.

Me: it's just 2 weeks I'll survive.

Xavier: I know you can survive it. I just want you  
to call me if anything you don't like happens.

Me: and you'll be in Eastern Cape within a few  
hours.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* yes.

Me: you need to stop doing that.

Xavier: call me when you arrive so I know you  
have arrived safely.

Me: I will. Bye!

Xavier: bye.

I made a kissing face and hung up. No me and  
Xavier are not dating. The guy is too extreme if  
you ask me, and he's my friend. Imagine if we



dated? I wouldn't be allowed to hang in certain places, he'll always ask where I am. He might even put tracking devices on me. I don't want that. I like my privacy, and he looks like the kind of guy to flash his money on his girlfriend a lot. I don't want that, I like spending my own money. That's why I'm just keeping Xavier as a friend because I won't lie, he really has been there for me through whatever obstacle I had in my life these weeks, he fixed it for me and made sure I remained with a smile on my face. But I can't overlook the fact that he's older than me, way older. And Muller and King would go crazy if they learned I am dating a gangster. I don't want that "gangster wife" lifestyle it is too much for me to handle. It's been 2 weeks without panic attacks and I would like to keep it that way. My destination was called, so I stood up, did the process and went on the plane.

~~

I walked out with my bags and called my dad.

Me: tata uphi? (Dad where are you?)

Tata: ndiyeza! (I'm coming!)

Me: okay.

I hung up. My father is very strict towards me. Maybe it's because I am the only daughter he has and he wants everything of mine to go perfectly. But sometimes I would just like it if he would just say "i'm proud of you." So I can know if I have done a good job or not. He arrived after an hour of me waiting. He came with my aunt, his sister, and my mom. I know I am going to hate this ride from East London to King Williams Town. I loaded my bags in the boot. Then I got in the car.

Me: molweni. (Greetings)

Mama: baphi abantwana bam? (Where are my

children? )

Me: Khazimla noYanga bashiyekile, ma.  
(Khazimla and Yanga stayed behind, ma)

Mama: ngobakutheni? (Why?)

Me: andazi, ma. (I don't know, ma)

My mom is the only family member who doesn't know what her beloved "children" are doing. The reason she's so cold towards is because after she had me she was diagnosed with Postdrum Depression and she felt no connection at all with me. So everything started believing I was a bewitched child and my mom was also bewitched because she was a perfect mom to Muller and King then after me it was like she was losing her mind. So my mom started thinking I was bewitched too and wanted nothing to do with me, in her eyes. I ruined her life and now she refers to King and Muller as her "favorite" children. I have learned to get

over it and accept that she will never come around and I won't receive a mother's love. My whole family started hating me because my mom's depression would sometimes be extreme and she'd just shut the whole world out. She would not eat, not talk to anyone the whole day. Luckily King and Muller do not blame me for mom's depression. These things happen to most mothers but in my family "sithakathiwe" (we're bewitched)

The car was filled with them talking about things i really didn't care about. I was sleepy so I slept through the the car ride from EL to King Williams Town. It wasn't long though so my nap was disturbed when the car stopped. I woke up and saw we were already in town. We stopped at the robots. Then the car drove off home in West Bank. Dad parked the car inside the yard, I got out and took my 2 luggage bags out. I went inside the house through the door that connects

the garage to the house.

Mom: ukhawleze ke ntombi, singalambi ukhona.  
(Hurry up girl, we shouldn't starve with you here)

Me: ewe ma. (Yes, ma)

These people I call my family are very old fashioned. They think a woman is supposed to do everything in the household while a man just provides for his family. I would never marry just to be a housewife. Never! I placed my bags in my room then went to start dinner for them. I wasn't going to eat dinner because I'm on a diet meaning if I eat meat it has to be in cheat days only. And I cheat by just one peice. I finished cooking and dished for them. I took mom & dad's food to them in their room. They thanked me and I walked out again. My aunt and her husband have a flat outside. I took the food to them in a tray. After all of that, I washed the

dishes and cleaned the kitchen counters. Then I went to rest in my room. It was still 7pm and I'm already tired so hard. I received a call from King.

Me: please come back.

King: what's going on?

Me: they're slaving me around. Dad doesn't even stop them anymore. He's becoming more and more cold towards me.

King: lil sis, remember dad was sick. Him not involving himself if a good idea. We do not want him to stress too much. We'll be there to sort everything out.

Me: fine, when?

King: not sure yet, maybe next week.

Me: ugh, forget I ever said anything.

King: I'll call you later. And don't worry we'll be there sooner than you think. Love you.

Me: love you too.

We both hung up and threw myself on the bed. Some would say I'm dramatic at least I have a roof under my head and I'm not physically abused. But I would love some little love. I would really love it if my mom or dad would just rock up in my room and ask me how are my exams going or just tell me they're proud of me for always keeping my academics before anything. But I guess some families are not the same and my family may not be too much involved on emotions and I'm being dramatic. I played music through my phone I made it changed to different songs without my having to press a button every time. After LaSauce featuring Amanda Black "I Do" ended another song played. My heart sank down to my stomach when I heard it was "Perfect" by Ed Sheeran. Tears feel down my eye, I miss Omar even though a month has passed since he has

passed away. I'll never forget the pain I felt when I heard the news. I miss him everyday, I called his number just to hear his voice mail. I know this will never make me let go and I need to because Omar wouldn't want me to be depressed and calling his number just to listen to his voice mail. I played the song again and cried and cried until I felt like the hurt was off a bit. I was sniffing and thinking about our memories. My phone rang and I looked at it. It was Xavier. I let it ring unanswered because I really didn't want to talk to anymore right. I just want to talk to Omar. And he's dead, so right now I don't want to talk to anyone. But Xavier didn't stop he kept calling and calling. I ended up being upset that he wouldn't just leave me alone! I really appreciate his support I really do but I just need a little break!

Me: Rellik what!?



Xavier: moenie fok met my nie. (Don't fuck with me)

Me: I need to be alone right now.

Xavier: I don't care. Tell me what's wrong or I'll be in there by tomorrow.

Me: \*sighs\* nothing. I am here safe. I'm just going through my emotions.

Xavier: you're just crying for nothing.

Me: yeah.

Xavier: you're a crybaby.

Me: I know and you need to let me cry when I want to. At Mzoli's you looked at me, well glared at me when I wanted to cry.

Xavier: because I know you weren't really crying you just didn't want me in that environment.

Me: one day my tears will work on you.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* I'm not the easily influenced type.

Me: what? You almost went home, don't act tough because we both you're too sweet.

Xavier: I am not sweet. Stop lying

Me: yes you are. \*laughs\* why are you denying it? I think it's nothing to be ashamed of.

Xavier: Lelona, I am not sweet. Weak people are sweet, I am not. Being sweet is a weakness that can get you killed hier. (here)

Me: speaking of getting killed. Who was following me and Cardo? We could've died because of him

Xavier: I took care of it.

Me: that's not what I'm asking.

Xavier: \*laughs\* why do you need to know because he'll never bother you again?

Me: please don't tell me you killed him....

The line went silent for a while, my heart

started beating fast I was scared that I may be the reason behind someone else's death.

Xavier: no. Just roughened him up.

Me: you scared me there! I thought you did.

Xavier: if I did-

Me: I would have dropped my phone and never talk to you ever again. I would never have forgiven you because I'd have the conscience of a man is dead because of me

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

this is why I would never tell Lona what I do for her. She has a fragile heart and my baby can't take everything in. She cries a lot and always sees the good in someone and that's what I like

and don't like about her. I dislike it because people will take that into their advantage because she's so sweet and sees the goodness in people they will use her and hurt her in the end. I like it because even though I kill people and do all types of wrong things she still sees the good in me and just smiles at me makes my dark life have brightness with just her smile. That's why I don't want her to know the number of people I killed for her. We have known each other for like a month and I have already killed 3 people because of her. Because of what I feel for her. And because she's fragile, it's also a disadvantage I can't just ask her to be mine because she's still caught up with feelings for that weak boy Omar. She may not see it now, but she finds comfort in me. Her feelings will start to develop and I'll be all she wants. Then that's when I make my move, because I make my move now while she's still "in love" with Omar, she'll never fully commit to me. She will

always feel guilty like she has moved on too fast. And she'll start comparing me to Omar, and that will piss me the fuck off. So I will rather wait then to lose her forever.

~~

I walked inside my uncle's house and I heard voices talking. I followed the voices and it was my uncle and aunt. They were all lovey dovey watching TV, I came in while they were kissing.

Me: okay, I think I have seen enough.

Ghost: dis my tuis. (This is my home)

Fifi: your uncle tells me there's a special lady in your life.

Me: \*chuckles\* yes. And i need to speak to Ghost about something urgent.

Fifi: it's always business with you boys. I'll be in my room.

She kissed Ghost, and when she got up he grabbed her ass. I chuckled.

Fifi: stop. \*blushes\*

She kissed my cheek and walked upstairs once I heard her door close, that's when I started talking.

Me: I want Kenny dead.

Ghost: woah. Not going to happen.

Me: since when have you ever been scared of war?

Ghost: you know I'm not scared at all. I'm thinking about the outcomes of the war. Plenty of people will get hurt and die because of a stupid gang war. No!

Me: I don't give a fuck. He has been disrespecting the fuck out of me and I want him dealt with.

Ghost: Xavier, you're not going to kill Kenneth. Think of all the family members that will die. The innocent people. And that special girl in your life

Me: I can protect Lelona. \*angry\*

Ghost: she will get hurt no matter what you try. Her family will get pulled into this what if you have business to take care of and she gets hurt when you're on business trips?

Me: I'll take her with me.

Ghost: I said no! \*yells\* and we're not talking about this again.

Then my aunt Fifi walked in again, that's when I knew she heard everything.

Fifi: You're about to run the gang. You have to learn that sometimes not doing anything is doing a lot. Murder does always solve every problem.

Me: so I should let him disrespect me? People will think I'm a pussy. I need to sort him out.

Fifi: there is no war that is going to happen! We had truce with them years ago and we're not breaking it!

Me: we? Since when were you a part of the gang?

Ghost: hey! Ek sal jou bene breek! (I'll break your legs)

Fifi: no I'm not in the gang but all the bullshit you do costs us, the wives. We get kidnapped, we get attacked, all types of dangers happen to us just because we fell in love with "gangsters" the minute we fall in love with gangsters. We are in the gang because we get hurt too so you guys can feel the emotional pain from our



physical pain. Don't start something your special girl, Lelona will play for. Be smart about your moves now Rellik. Think as a boss, not as a second in command where you want to kill everyone.

Me: isn't that why I'm Rellik? I am a Killer. It's who I am and I won't change myself because I'm about to be a boss.

Fifi: well you need to. No war, that's the final say. Right baby?

Ghost: yes.

They pecked each others lips. I was annoyed by their love so much I stood up and went for a smoke to calm my nerves down. While smoking I thought about how Kenny could find Lona since she's in Eastern Cape now and I can't protect her like I want to. I called Kurt to check where Kenny's whereabouts were if he was in Eastern Cape then I'll send JR to watch my wife

like a hawk to ensure she's all safe and nothing happens to her while she's there.

Kurt: Rellik.

Me: find out if Kenny is still in town, I need an answer in less than a day.

Kurt: okay.

I hung up and went back to the house and Fifi was preparing lunch.

Fifi: sit down, I'll make you something too. I want you to tell me all about this girl that has you going crazy.

I just chuckled and sat down as she proceeded finishing the meal on the kitchen counter. Then I started telling her about Lelona

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

I woke up the following day feeling really sleepy. I didn't enjoy my sleep at all. And on top of that I have to wake up early to do my chores. This is why I hate returning home. They are training me to be the "perfect wife" and I just want to sit down and text on my phone all day.

Mama: ukhawleze ke ntombi, funeka siye kwaShoprite pha eMall. (Hurry up girl, we have to go to Shoprite at the mall)

Me: it's Checkers .

Mama: heh? (What?)

Me: nguCheckers mama lowo.

Mama: bayafana wethu. (they're alike)

I wanted to disagree but I knew it would be a never ending lecture about how I think I'm better because it know more so I just chuckled and smiled.

Mama: ukhe unxibe ilokwe Lelona, kushushu.  
(wear dresses Lelona, it's hot)

Me: ewe mama. (Yes mom)

Mama: ikhona enye bendikuthengele yona uzoyithanda (there's one that I bought for you you'll love it)

~~

I was strolling through Checkers looking for the perfect sauces for my mother who is very picky! I was wearing the dress she bought it was a bit cream and yellow. It was not tight nor was it too baggy. It was short though. I let my hair loose. Finally after I found the the Spur sauce she wanted I ran to the tills and she was still in line.

We paid then went to the car. After I loaded everything in the car we drove off.

Mama: ukhe ufike uclean'e eza'curtains kudala zimdaka kodwa ngoku! (When we arrive clean the curtains. They have been dirty for a long time)

I mumbled under my breath frustrated that I am a slave apha.

Me: hay nindicapukela kakubi apha ( you hate me badly here)

Mama: andiva? (Pardon?)

Me: andithethi, ma. (I'm not saying anything, ma)

Mama: Lelona sikufundisile, ezipahla uzinxibayo kungexayetu, utya ukutya kwendlu yam, zange walamba ebomini bakho bonke. Zange walala

ugodola ngexayetu uphinde uthi siyakucapukela ngoba sikuthuma! ? Hay ukhe undibide. Ngoba sifuna nje ibreak ekusebenzeni uthi siyakucapukela? Sasi nganikwa neBreak'i ke thina mna ndiyakuyeka ukhe uphole ulala emini kodwa uyandixelela ba ndiyakucapukela. Inoba awulazi neligama capukela limele ntoni njeba ulisebenzisa nje. (Lelona we gave you an education, those clothes you wear because of us, you eat the food in my house, you have never starved your entire life. You never felt cold because of us and you say we hate you because we order you around!? No, you confuse me sometimes. Because we only want a break from the work, and you say we hate you. We were never given breaks, and I let you sleep in midday but you tell me I hate you. Maybe you don't even know what the word hate means you're just using it.)

I regretted even saying that because I knew an

lecture was on the way. I will never hear the end of this.

.

.

.

.

.

Please tag people to read the story, share it, like it, invite people. Do anything you can, I would really appreciate it

[02/17, 16:43] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 14

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

it was already 3pm and the load of the new girls was escorted out of the big truck and into the big ship. They were being shipped to Asia. I am involved in human trafficking dealings because it brings in a lot of money as well especially when you convert it. The girls were all chained and crying. Tears don't work on me at all.

Me: that's all of them?

OG: yeah.

Me: they are 50 girls, meaning 2 are missing

OG: Rellik-

Me: find them quickly or you'll lose your hands since you can't use them properly.

OG: they escaped and-



Me: don't we put trackers on all girls?

OG: we do but-

Me: don't fuck with my money, OG. Call Kurt to track them. Those girls are worth a lot of money.

OG: yes, boss.

He hurried to make a phone call. I don't like it when people play with money. I am a rich man because I learned not to play with money. If I lose R150 000 because of OG. I'll kill him.

~~

Finally the girls were found and bought back to the ship. They were screaming, shouting and kicking but OG knocked them out and they were put in the ship.

Me: the ship needs to hurry up, we're already late in the deadline and the police could come

in any minute.

Just 30 minutes after, the ship was gone. I drove back home. The time was now 5:04pm so I ate some food and watched some soccer. After the match, I texted Lona. I was missing her a bit.

Me: how are things in the EC?

wifey: great, just great.

Me: want to talk about it?

wifey: well my mom heard me say they hate me and she's been shouting in her room ever since.

Me: what happened?

wifey: they're slaving me around and I just said they hate me, she was offended and starting giving me a lecture all angry. Now she locked herself in her room, and she has been shouting.

Me: now I see why you're so fragile.

wifey: yes, because she's always shouting and ordering me around like I'm forced to do everything here. It's like she's not my mom, we are nothing alike. She's too bossy and judgemental. Way too different from me.

Me: but she still loves you. It's tough love

wifey: she has a funny way of showing it. She hates me. You wouldn't understand.

Me: yeah, I wouldn't.

She blueticked me. I hate it when she does that. I wanted to call her but Kurt sent a message.

Kurt: he's still in here, but my source says he's leaving town tomorrow.

Me: where is he going?

Kurt: the source didn't mention it. I think to his

home.

Fuck! Now I need to go send one of my guys there to keep Lona safe. and make sure Kenny doesn't even get close to her. I'll send about 5 guys with JR incase Kenny and his gang want to start something then I'll really show him what I'm made of. He clearly underestimates me, just because of a fucking truce. I smoked weed to calm myself down after 3 joints that's when I knew I was high. I missed my wife's face and voice so I video called her. She didn't answer at all. I tried her 5 times and she didn't answer at all. I called JR.

JR: bozza (boss)

Me: round the boys up, we're going to the Eastern Cape.

JR: fede fede, boss. (Sharp sharp, boss)

I dropped the phone call and went to the my room to pack. I only took needed clothes so the packing only took me 1 hour. After packing I tried video calling Lona again. She picked up and I was angry that she didn't the first time.

Me: why the fuck didn't you answer the phone, Lelona!?

Lona: \*sniffs\* Xavier I'm really not in the mood to get shouted because I have just been shouted right now.

Me: I am coming to that town.

Lona: what!? No!

Me: why not?

Lona: why are you coming over here?

Me: because you have been crying for 2 days straight. And it seems like Muller and King

aren't going to be back soon.

Lona: but don't you have stuff to do? \*sniffs\*

I chuckled she says she doesn't want me there, but her pouting and crying tells me she wants me there.

Me: are you crying because you want me there, or are you crying because you got shouted?

Lona: don't flatter yourself. \*smiles\*

Me: finally a smile.

Lona: I'm serious though, do not come here. I'm fine.

Me: you say you're fine, but you crying is not saying you're fine.

Lona: you know I'm a crybaby. I'm just going through my emotions.

Me: \*chuckles\* you are one of the strangest

females I know. Crying just for crying?

Lona: mxm, I have to go. I have to start finish cooking. I'll call you later.

Me: sharp

Lona: and don't come here.

Me: not promising

Lona: Xavier-

Me: bye Lona.

Lona: mxm, bye.

I chuckled then we both hung up. I'm still going to Eastern Cape because I need to make sure Kenny doesn't try anything to her. Because he also lives in King Williams Town

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

- .
- .
- .

I smiled after the video call because no matter how much he says tears don't affect him, as soon I cry he's willingly to fly and come see what's bothering me. He cares for me just as much as I care for him. I went to the kitchen and finished cooking the mincemeat. The rice and veggies were already done, now all I had to do was dish up for everyone and wash the dishes. I did just that, then after the dishes. I went to my room, tomorrow I have to get myself some vegan food to eat because I might die in hunger here. I couldn't stand my hunger so I made myself some boiled eggs and took some bread.

Mama: wenza ntoni? (What are you doing?)



Me: ndenza amaqanda a'boil'iweyo mama. (I'm making boiled eggs mama)

Mama: ukutya oku ukuphekileyo kutheni? (what is wrong with the food you made?)

Me: I'm on a diet.

Mama: i'diet \*laughs\*

She was making in these noises while she was laughing. She really laughed like I told a good joke, it made me feel so offended. But I faked little laughs.

mama: kawutsho ke uyiqalenini le'diet  
\*chuckles\* (so tell me when did you start this diet)

Me: ngoJanuary. (In January )

Mama: yilonto uhlile eWeightin bendizixelela ba inoba utshaya intsango nala Kayla ndini (that's

why you have lost weight I was telling myself  
maybe you're smoking weed with that Kayla)

Me: akayotshomi yam ngoku (she's not my  
friend now)

Mama: waze wabona ilight lomntana. Jonga ke  
ntombi, apha endlini yam kutyiwa lento  
iphekiweyo for wonke umntu. (finally this child  
sees the light. Look girl, here in my house we  
eat food that was cooked for everyone)

Me: kodwa mama- (but mom-)

Mama: hey! Sundiphambanela Lelona!  
Uzokwenza ezonto zakho zokuziphakamisa pha  
eKapa! (Don't go crazy on me Lelona! You'll do  
your stuck up things in Western Cape!

Me: okay.

Mama: okay, ba? (Okay, who?)

Me: okay, mama.

Mama: cima esostove'u nale ketile (turn off  
that stove and this kettle)

I did as I was told with my heart broken into a million pieces. I was not trying to make myself look like I'm better than them I don't eat their food, but I'm on a diet. But I guess to my mom, I'm lying and I am being stuck up. I was about to go to my room when she pulled me back.

Mama: itya okukutya (eat this food.)

Me: mama-

Mama: hey! Itya okukutya uyeke lento uyenzayo!  
(Eat this food and stop you are doing!)

She roughly pulled me towards the kitchen counter. She took my plate and opened it with so much force I was shocked that she was this angry because I wouldn't eat the food.

Tata: kwenzaka ntoni apha (what's happening here?)

Me: tata- (dad-)

Mama: lomntana uzenza umlungu apha akakutyi ukutya esikutyayo. (This child is acting like a white person she doesn't eat food we eat.)

Me: andizami ukuzenza betere mama, qha ndikwi'diet. (I'm not trying to make myself stuck up but I'm on a diet)

Mama: uyaxoka man! \*yelling\* (you're lying!)

Tata: Lelona, iya eroomin yakho. Ndizothetha nomama wakho. (Lelona, go to your room. I will talk to your mother.)

I went to my room with tears, I quickly wiped them. I could hear their argument in my room.

Mama: umoshwe nini lomntana! Niyamtefisa!

(you are ruining the child! You're baby'ing her)

Tata: usengumtana uLelona! Una18 (Lelona is still a baby. She's 18!)

Mama: uzotyala lento siyityayo okanye ubuyela apha avela khona! (She'll eat what we're eating or she'll go back to where she came from.)

I decided to put on earphones to zone them out, I took out my journal and started writing about how my mother just hates me like I didn't come out of her womb. She says she doesn't hate me but her actions say the opposite of her words. I am hungry, and I am being treated like a slave in my own home. My brothers aren't even here to defend me. It's like the whole family is against me. I am sure dad will take her side and i will just starve for today. Then tomorrow I will wake up and eat cereal. I wish Xavier was here, he would've parked outside and took me somewhere where I could have bought food to

actually eat. He would just make my day brighter with his rare smile and he always licks his lips first then looks at me with the most amazing eyes ever and gives me a look I can't describe then he just chuckles. But he rarely laughs a genuine laugh. If he does then he'll first shake his head looking down and laugh. It's such a good look on him. When he smiles, I don't think anyone notices but his lower teeth also appear when he smiles. And his eyes lit up, that's why I want him to smile forever because I just love his smile. I closed my journal smiling after writing a full paragraph about Xavier. I don't know what is happening to me but I miss him. I'm used to him calling me. Cardo plus me meeting him in town "randomly" but I know Cardo always tells him about our whereabouts. I went on my WhatsApp and decided to post in my status. I blocked Muller and King first from seeing my statuses before I could even post that picture. It was a picture of me and Xavier

when he took me out for some ice-cream after Omar's memorial funeral. I captioned it "I miss you " then I looked at my phone. It was boring. Now new messages at all from anyone. Then my phone vibrated and I was shocked to receive a WhatsApp message from Zikhona. My heart told me not to open it but my curiosity and mind told me to open it. So I did.

Zee : so you're one of Rellik's bitches now?

She was replying to the picture I posted. I knew right away that she must have sent a screenshot to her "friend" Kayla. I didn't want to reply but I was pissed off that she would in my business.

Me: how does that concern you?

Zee : awuzithandi ntombi emtwini womntu  
(you don't love yourself dating a taken man)

Me: I wouldn't stoop to your level. I know my worth.

Zee : know your worth? Hay lol! then why are you fucking Kayla's leftovers? Phof Kayla's man.

I just looked at my phone in shock. Kayla is dating Xavier? Isn't she dating Scrappy?

Me: they're not dating.

Zee : I bet he told you that lie. you'll always be his hoe nothing more. Accept that

Me: mxm.

Then I blocked her. I was more angry that Kayla and Xavier had sex. In my anger I took a lot of



screenshots from our chats then sent them to Xavier.

Me: please tell me this isn't true.

He didn't reply. It was one tick meaning he's offline. I tried calling him but it went straight to voice-mail. I paced up and down my room. I can't believe Kayla had sex with Xavier!

.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

I threw my phone on the couch. I was upset about the conversation Zikhona had with Lelona. More upset that she blocked me because I was

about to give her a piece of my mind. Zikhona even sent me the picture and I looked at it. He was smiling, like actually smiling not a mean smile that he always has but a genuine happy smile. Time to get this bitch out of his life. There's no way she's going to play the wife role to my man. I texted Skylar the picture of Rellik and Lona.

Me: she really didn't care about Omar. It has only been like what? A month and she's already missing another man. She never posted a picture of Omar nor even said R.I.P to him. She's really wrong for this. I can't believe she's like this. Thank God I stopped being friends with her.

Within 30 minutes Skylar read the message, and she replied.

Skylar : I never knew Lona was a bitch like this! I am truly hurt by this. Omar loved her so much yet she goes and fucks with a dirty low life gangster. She's a fool, I hope he takes his anger out on her and kills her for being like this.

Me: she's really a bad person that loves playing victim to everything.

Skylar : she'll pay for this. I want her so humiliated that she'll regret playing my friend like that even after his death.

Me: right! She couldn't wait a couple more months. Maybe she didn't even want Omar, he was just a toy to her. She needs to pay for this.

Skylar didn't reply, I waited for her then 10 minutes later she did.

Skylar: check Omar's facebook account.

I quickly went to Facebook and searched for Omar's account I was found a picture Skylar posted it was the picture i sent to her and she tagged Omar and Lona. With the caption "it hasn't even been 2 months and already she has moved on from my friend. What a hoe " I laughed super hard, and smiled. At this rate, Lona will probably not finish this year. I will not be shocked if she kills herself. She's too fragile anyway.

Me: Skylar! you're so good. I wonder how she'll feel if everyone on campus saw the pic of her and Xavier written HOE on it

Skylar: I'm going to do that especially on our first day back. This bitch messed with the wrong one.

I smiled. Skylar was easy to manipulate, so easy. I tried calling Khanyi again because I

missed her. But as always voice-mail. I haven't seen her after the club incident. I heard she was at her boyfriend's house and he is no where to be found and her too. I hope she returns next semester because I miss her. She would be giving me ideas right now. I hope she's fine wherever she is. I don't even know her grandmother's number because I would've called to ask where she is...

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.  
. .  
.

I got up with my stomach upsetting itself. I was hungry so much that I had a headache. I woke up and the time was 3am. I sneaked to the kitchen to take some bread and make juice then I sneaked to my room again. I ate the bread

then drank juice. I frowned thinking about what I'm doing. I am sneaking around taking food in my own home. After I was done, I was silently crying. I couldn't take it anymore. I called Muller because I know he'll react and he'll do something out fast. While King would want me to talk with mom

Muller: lelona... \*tired\*

I could hear he was still tired from sleeping but I was said so I was sniffed to do show him I was crying.

Muller: kwenzeka ntoni? (What's going on?)

Me: she wouldn't allow me to make food because I am on a diet. She wanted to force me to eat. She literally pulled me roughly to eat. If it wasn't for Dad, she would have forcefully

pushed the spoon with food in my mouth. I didn't eat at all and I had to wake up at this time to sneak to the kitchen and get food. \*cries\* I want to come back to Cape Town.

Muller: I'll talk to her. Don't worry, she won't do anything else again. Utheni na umama (what's wrong with mama?) I'll send you money and you can go to the shops to get anything you want to eat. Okay? We'll talk better later on.

Me: okay. Love you.

Muller: love you too.

We both hung up and I tried sleeping but it was no use, I was not tired at all. I tried calling Xavier again luckily this time he answered.

Me: finally!

Xavier: sorry, I was busy.

Me: oh, I can call next time.

Xavier: was, past tense. What's up?

Me: what do you mean what's up?

Xavier: you never call me. I'm usually the one that calls you, so that means you need some serious cheering up or you're being a crybaby and you miss me.

Me: I'm still mad at you.

Xavier: I didn't fuck that hoe.

Me: well that's not what I heard-

Xavier: well you need to stop believing everyone. That's why you get hurt so easily because you let people control you by your emotions. Why would I lie about fucking Kayla? Everyone has had her, I don't want her. She tried to fuck me but I do curved her.

Me: I... I believe you. It's just that Kayla-

Xavier: Kayla nothing. I'm sure you called me for



something more important rather than Kayla.

Me: I'm starving that's why I called.

Xavier: what? \*chuckles\*

Me: my mom went crazy on me and I'm not allowed to eat unless I eat food that is the same as everyone else's.

Xavier: give me your address and I'll come pick you up tomorrow to get some food.

Me: my address? You'll pick me up tomorrow? What are you saying Xavier?

Xavier: I'm here. I must say, your town isn't all that great.

Heeeh! I told him he shouldn't come and he just didn't listen to me.

[02/17, 16:43] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER  
~

INSERT 15

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

After my call with Xavier I decided to get some sleep, 2 hours later I woke up again because of my alarm. I rushed to do my morning routine then wore a black sweats, with my new sneakers, that Xavier bought. I have to give him his R1 100 back forreal. I made myself cereal and quickly ate before my mom wakes up and wants to start drama again. I quickly cleaned the house, and after I was done. I went to sit under a tree, I received a notification saying someone sent me R1000 in my account, I knew it was Muller.

Mama: Lelona! \*shouts\*

Me: ma!

Mama: iza apha. (Come here)

I got up from my chair then went to her, she looked angry. When I was close to her, she slapped me hard. I was so shocked I held on my cheek. I have been beaten before by my mom. Because I have woken up too late and the house is dirty, or I wasted groceries by burning the food I cook or making the kitchen dirty and leaving it dirty. but today I was shocked because I didn't do anything. At least I don't think I did anything.

Mama: bubuxoki bantoni obu ubuxelela umntana wam!?! (What lies are you telling my child?!)

I guess Muller called her, and if I'm right he shouted at her because she lets him do

anything even shout at her but if I look at her funny she'll beat me up.

Me: mama-

Mama: hey! Sundinyela endlini yam, Lelona! Ungakhe ulinge! Into engasoze yenzeke kuphathwa nguwe mntanandini (don't shit on me in my house, Lelona! Don't you dare! Something that will never happen is being controlled by you, you child!)

Me: ndiyakuva mama (I hear you mama)

Mama: khawsuke phambikwam tchin! Uzukhe uxoke kuKhazimla ubone ba andizokubethela into eyiyo na. (Get out of my sight! I dare you to tell Khazimla lies that I beat you up, and see if I won't really beat you up)

I nodded and walked away from her. I went back to sit in the chair, I had tears in my eyes.

My father is gone and my aunt would never stand up to my mom they are best friends. My uncle is also gone to work. I looked at my cheek through my front camera and it look like pink and red bruise. I doubt it will be a permanent bruise. Maybe in a few hours it will go down. I didn't want to call Muller because I know my mom is serious she'll really beat me up. Worse than this little bruise. My phone rang and it was Muller. I breathed so I don't show that I have been crying. I answered it after it was ringing for a long time.

Muller: you got the money?

Me: yes, thank you.

Muller: I talked to mom.

Me: I know...

Muller: how about you find a B&B then let me know which one I'll cover the costs. Just until I

get there.

Me: she slapped me.

Muller: what!?! Maybe I need to come back home and really sort this out.

Me: no. It's okay, I'll just find the B&B, she'll beat me up if you confront her now.

Muller: \*sighs\* okay, I'll pay for the place. And don't do anything crazy.

Me: I won't try to kill myself. Don't worry.

Muller: okay kid, I love you.

Me: I love you too Bro.

We both hung up and I was so bored that I went on Instagram to check my feed. That got boring, I went on my Facebook. I saw I was tagged in a post by Skylar. My eyes popped out when I saw that it was also picture of me and Xavier. How did she even get it? I quickly removed it but it

was no use, most people saw it. There were plenty of comments that were hurtful to me. I found myself crying and I deactivated my Facebook account. I didn't even want to see the rest of those comments. How did Skylar get the picture she doesn't even have my number! I see Zikhona behind this! I received a call from Xavier. I dropped his call upset that hanging out with him always brings me trouble! He called again and I just dropped it. He didn't understand and he sent a message.

Xavier : answer the fucking the phone.  
I'm not playing with you.

I didn't reply to it, he sent me a message again. I just sighed wiping my tears.

Xavier : I'm going to track your phone, so

if you know what's good for you you'll answer your fucking phone.

He called me again. if he comes here my mom will cause a big deal out of it. But then Xavier is just playing he wouldn't do that. I told him how crazy mom is he wouldn't do that. I went to my room to sleep because I was really tired. I slept with a heavy heart.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

Pissed off, I threw the phone on the bed. I was currently staying at nearby B&B. She wasn't even replying to my texts. I had this app that tracks people's phones on my laptop. So I tracked her down. I found out where she is. I quickly got in my new rental white Audi than



drove to the place. It wasn't that far, I knocked the lock on the gate. The dogs went crazy. I just looked at them. They kept barking and barking all angrily. I texted Lona again.

Me: come outside.

The door opened and it was this woman that looked like Lona, I assumed it was her mother. She had this weird look on her. I didn't even smile at all because I don't agree with her slaving my wife around.

Me: I'm looking for Lona.

Her: why?

Me: she knows

Her: she went out.

Me: I know she's here.

She went inside the house without closing the door. I waited for her to call Lona then Lona appeared. She had red eyes, and her eyes were puffy. I knew she must have slept crying. She came closer and opened the gate then stepped outside.

Lona: are you trying to get me killed?

Me: why weren't you answering my calls and texts?

Lona: so every time I don't do what you want you're going to come to my house angry.

Me: yes.

Lona: my mom won't like that.

Me: then I guess you have to stop pissing me off.

Lona: what do you want Xavier?

Me: what did I do now?

Lona: nothing. I just want to sleep then look for B&Bs when I wake up.

Me: B&Bs?

Lona: I'm moving out until Muller and King return.

Me: why?

Lona: my mom is being a bit crazy.

Me: how?

Lona: she slapped me this morning.

Me: what!? \*angry\*

Lona: chill.

She touched my chest, I looked at her hand then at her. She removed her hand and looked at me.

Lona: I don't want to cause drama. I'll just pack and I'll find a B&B.

Me: I know a place.

Lona: really?

Me: yeah. I could even pay for you. I-

Lona: hell no. Muller will pay.

She chuckled holding her stomach. Then I remembered I was going to take her out to get her some food.

Me: let's go.

Lona: go where?

Me: to get you some food.

Lona: I have to tell mom I'm going first.

Me: okay, I'll be waiting next to the car.

She went inside the yard, and I walked to my car. This street was very quiet maybe because it's next to the town? I waited for Lona and I received a text from Scrappy.

Scrappy : how's the EC?

Me: nothing major.

Scrappy : well it's about to get major. I need you here by next week. Kingston wants 30 girls. And you know he won't deal with anyone besides you.

Me: fuck! I'll be back next week then.

Scrappy : fede fede.

I looked at the time and Lona was not getting out the house. I didn't know if I should go in there and check on her especially when her mom might try something on her. At the same time there are dogs here. I brushed my face

with my right hand in anger. She later came out, she had changed her outfit. It was a Jean with white sneakers and a "madness" t-shirt. Her hair was in a curly ponytail that was on her front like a bang and she was wearing these white shades. She had on this little bag with her. She looked great, I was just in awe. My wife never ceases to amaze me. Every time I look at her, she gets more and more beautiful. I opened the door for her and she mumbled a cute "thank you". I got in the car and we drove off. She directed me towards Pick 'n Pay. There she went inside, I held her hand. She chuckled and browsed through the store with me.

Lona: I don't want your hoes beating me up.

Me: \*chuckles\* don't worry, they're all the way in Cape Town.

Lona: \*rolls eyes\* mxm.... Oh this is cute.

She said at this ugly black teddy. I picked it up, and she looked at me more like glare at me.

Me: stop that shit.

I chuckled and pulled her close, into a side hug. She just smiled up at me. She picked her food, it was just something that looked like oats and some yoghurt. Then she took some peanuts, and we went to pay. And of course we argued on who will pay, and I ended up paying. I kept laughing at her pouting. I took the plastic and held her hand. We walked to the parking and I opened the door for her when we got to my car.

Lona: I'm still getting used to you being a gentleman.

Me: don't push it.

She laughed. I gave her the plastic then closed the door. I went to my side and got in.

Lona: aren't you going to eat?

Me: nah.

Lona: nigga-

Me: didn't you say you're hungry? Eat your food.

She laughed at my serious expression. She started mixing the oats thingy with the yogurt. I looked at her food, then at her. I don't understand why she wants to lose weight when she is this perfect. She took off her white shades and place them on the dashboard then started eating. She looked so adorable eating, and she had this cute little smile.

Lona: want some?



Me: fuck no.

Lona: come on, please try it.

Me: Lelona no. Why don't you eat proper food?

Lona: you sound just like my mom. \*rolls eyes\*  
please try this.

She gave me a spoon full of the food she was eating, she pouted and I just shook my head. I ate the food in the spoon, it wasn't bad but it wasn't nice at all. I don't know how she survives on this. She took the black teddy and I chuckled at how I'm changing for this girl and she might not even feel the same way.

Lona: what? \*smiles\*

Me: nothing, that teddy is ugly as hell.

Lona: don't diss my child.

I smiled and took out my phone. I went on WhatsApp, Lona was eating so I went to my statuses. I took a video of her eating.

Lona: this is good... wait, why are you taking a video of me?

She blushed hiding her face. I smiled and turned off the camera. I just put a caption of a black heart. I turned on some music and the song that played first was Post Malone ft Quavo- Congratulations. I didn't think she liked the song until she took out her phone and made of video of her singing it. I also rapped along, and she made of video of us singing the song together.

Us: "They was never friendly, yeah

Now I'm jumping out the Bentley, yeah

And I know I sound dramatic, yeah

But I know I had to have it, yeah  
For the money, I'm a savage, yeah  
I be itching like a addict, yeah"

She stopped the video quickly and pressed sent.

Me: I didn't even know you listen to these type  
of songs

Lona: King always plays them in the house. I  
just listen to them.

Me: \*chuckles\* will you pack everything at your  
parents house?

Lona: no, just a few stuff because I won't be  
staying at the B&B for long.

Me: what's something interesting to do here?

Lona: nothing at all. It's a boring town.

Me: it can't be that boring.

Lona: trust me it is. \*chuckles\* all the interesting things are in East London.

Me: damn, no wonder you don't want to come back here.

Lona: yeah ans the other thing too.

me: your mom can't be that bad.

Lona: trust me she is.

~~

Me and Lelona talked a lot to a point where it got dark. She was worried that I wouldn't take her home, earlier. But I wanted to piss off her mom. If she does something to Lona and I'm in town. She'll fucking kiss Lona's ass when I'm done with her. Since Muller and King don't do anything I will do something. I'm not going to sit around and let her abuse Lona.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I was very scared that my mom will turn everyone in that house against me and say that I went against her and went out with my boyfriend. And Xavier isn't even my boyfriend. She almost strangled me when I went out the house to go to town with him. I didn't even want to tell Xavier about Skylar's post because he told me that I shouldn't let people's actions control my emotions. And people shouldn't control me by my emotions. So I just cried at home and tried to get over it. Now I'm learning to just deal it. Not everyone will like me. And Skylar is just stupid to let people control her because Zikhona is too much of a coward to do anything she's always fighting for her friend Kayla. But I wonder if Kayla will ever fight for her.

Xavier: she's not going to do anything to you, you'll just take your clothes and leave.

Me: she'll have my dad beat me up for bringing a guy over. I'm surprised she hasn't even called Muller or King to confront me.

Xavier: this lady will end up annoying me.

Me: she already annoys me.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* it's only 2 weeks.

Me: I want them to hurry up.

Xavier: to cheer you up, how about tomorrow we do something fun?

Me: let's go the Aquarium! \*excited\*

Xavier: what? \*laughs\*

Me: I have always wanted to go there. But it's in East London. You don't mind a long ride right?

Xavier: nah \*smirks\*

Me: umdaka \*laughs\* (you're nasty)

Xavier: you're the one that said it.

Me: well I meant literally not figuratively. I should've said excuse the pun.

Xavier: \*laughs\* yes you should have.

Me: excuse the pun, Xavier. \*chuckles\*

He looked at me with the look he always does, it's like I'm the only person he sees, I doubt I'll get over this look.

Me: stop that. \*blushes\*

Xavier: stop what? \*smirks\*

Me: looking at me like that .

Xavier: I always look at you like this.

Me: no you don't. This is a different look. And it needs to stop \*laughs\* so what's the real reason you're in King Williams Town?

Xavier: for you.

Me: liar.

Xavier: I'm serious.

Me: you came all the way from Western Cape to me because I was crying. Yeah right.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* if you don't want to believe me than that's fine.

Me: wow. I thought you came for your shady businesses

Xavier: \*chuckles\* shady businesses.

Me: well you don't want to tell me what you do exactly I only know that you're a gangster

Xavier: and you don't need to know.

Me: you sound just like Muller and King. Why shouldn't I know? I can keep a secret .

Xavier: so we don't get you into a lot of trouble when the police get involved. So they can see you really didn't know anything and you can go



off easily.

Me: okay, now I finally understand.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* took you long enough.

Me: shut up. Are you even ready to take over the whole drug empire?

Xavier: what?

Me: I heard you're going to take over.

Xavier: who said that?

Me: somebody.

Xavier: who?

Me: just answer the stupid question. \*laughs\*

Xavier: yeah only a few months left. You need to tell me who told you about that anyway?

Me: the answer is so obvious.

Xavier: Cardo.

Me: we were just talking about it. I feel bad for your girlfriends.

Xavier: they are my hoes.

Me: whatever .

Xavier: why are you even worried about them?

Me: since you'll be taking over. Just means that they will be in more danger.

Xavier: well they wanted that life, now they have it.

Me: don't say that, they're still humans.

Xavier: they are hoes who are willing to sell themselves to the highest bidder vir geld. (for money)

Me: you don't know their situation.

Xavier: \*sighs\* stop seeing the good in people. That's what gives fucked up people the advantage to bully people. You need to be more rude

Me: mxm I'm not going to change just because a person. I can't treat everyone badly because I

was bullied, that will make me be just like them.

~~

After talking Xavier finally agreed to taking me home to get my stuff so I can move to the B&B he lives in but we'll have separate rooms. I was scared to even go in the house. Dad's car was not there, maybe he's working late. I went inside and Xavier waited outside for me.

Aunt: heeeh! Libuyile ihule \*laughs\* (the hoe is back)

I didn't reply, I just walked in my room. I was shocked to see my mom on top of my bed with my journal in her hands. I felt angry. How could she invade my privacy like that? She picked up her sjambok .

Mama: kutheni ndixakwa nguwe Lelona? (why

are you giving me a hard time. Lelona?)

## LONA'S OUTFIT

[02/17, 16:43] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 16

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I backed away from her, and going towards my door. Xavier was the only one I knew that could save me right now. I was so scared, tears were falling like waterfalls in my eyes. And I couldn't even get a word out.

Mama: kungona uzofumana isizathu sofownela uKhazimla kengoku (now you'll have a reason to call Khazimla)

Me: mama, uxolo. (mama, I'm sorry)

Mama: xolo for ntoni? Ukundiqhela endlini yam? Tchin Lelona. Unezinza ngoku. Ubhala ngekwenkwe apha kodwa awukagqibi neVarsity le! Ufuna ubuya eCertificate seSisu? (Sorry for what? Disrespecting me in my house? You have grown. You're writing about a boy but you are not even done with university! Do you want to come back pregnant? )

Me: hayi mama. (No, mama)

She stood up, and I just ran out of my room, she whipped me once when I was running in my back. I felt the pain, I tripped and fell outside in the front. The dogs kept barking. She whipped

me and whipped me as I cried covering myself up. I just hoped I didn't have bad bruises on me. I screamed in pain. She wasn't hitting me in much force but it was painful. I was crying begging her to stop. I doubt she even cared. That's when I heard the gate open. And Xavier pushed my mom so hard, she fell on the stoep dropping the sjambok. The dogs tried biting him but he took the sjambok and started beating them up with it and they ran. He looked like he was ready to strangle my mom. I was still in pain on the stoep.

Aunt: hey! Kwenzeka ntoni apha!? (What's going on here!?)

Xavier took out his gun and he was about to shoot my mother. My aunt screamed and ran inside the house.

Me: Xavier no! \*shouts\*

My mom looked so scared. She was crying and she even pissed herself. I gained the courage to get up, and I stood in front of Xavier and his gun. He was very angry, and it scared me a bit. His gun was now aimed to my chest because I was in front of him and my mother .

Me: no. Don't do this, please. She's still my mother no matter what happens. Please.

I got closer and hugged him, he calmed down a bit. Once I broke off the hug, he placed his gun back in the back of his jean. I winced because my body was painful

Xavier: you're in pain?

I nodded crying. I really don't understand why she hates me so much. He picked me up bridal style and went out the gate and to his car. I helped him by opening the door of the car and he placed me in it. Then he closed the door. Once he went to his side, he sped off down the road.

Xavier: are there any doctors at this time that are still accepting patients?

Me: no. But there's a public hospital.

Xavier: direct me to it. I'll accept anything at this moment so you can be okay.

He sped off to the hospital. There it took a long time for me to be attended to and he was very annoyed, and very angry.



Xavier: why the fuck are you standing there and talking when she's in pain!? \*shouts\*

Me: Xavier please calm down

Nurse: sir, she's not the only patient in this hospital and she doesn't even look like she has injuries. You have to wait. You do not own this hospital.

Xavier: what the fuck did you just say to me!?  
\*angry\*

He was about to take out his gun, I quickly stood up from the place I was sitting in and stopped him from doing something he'll get arrested for. What is up with him and guns!?

Me: calm down.

Xavier: this bitch really doesn't know me.

Nurse: tchin batheni na ababhuti bacinga

sizoqala ngabo ngexaba bene'mali.

Baphambene. (These men think we'll attend to them first because they have money. They are delusional)

Xavier was about to go to her, and really beat her up. I quickly pulled him back, it was no use because he was stronger so I stood in front of him and hugged him holding his arms and hands, to prevent him from beating up the nurse.

Me: please. Don't do this, not here.

Xavier: I can't let her disrespect me like that.

Me: let's just go home. I'll drink painkillers then we'll go to the doctor tomorrow.

He took his hand, and we were about to walk out. I heard the nurse mumble something.

Nurse: ezinto ziphathwa ngabafazi babo bagulela thina. (These things are controlled by their wives, they go crazy on us)

I held Xavier's hand tightly to let him know he shouldn't pay any attention to them. He opened the door for me and he drove off to the B&B he was staying in. The rooms were fully booked so I had to share a room with Xavier.

Xavier: let me call JR, maybe he has some meds. I didn't bring any.

I just nodded and just looked around. There was only one bed here. And I don't feel comfortable sharing a bed with Xavier because he's my friend, who happens to be so hot, and I don't want to develop feelings for him.

Xavier: come to my room... fede fede.

Then he hung up. He looked at me, I was still analysing the room. It was really good. EL Shaddai is really a good B&B. I heard a lot of politicians and important people come here when they have business trips in King Williams Town.

Xavier: get on the bed.

Me: what!?

Xavier: not like that. \*chuckles\* I know you're in pain and standing up won't help.

He opened his suitcase and took out another t-shirt.

Xavier: you can wear this

It was a military printed t-shirt. I went to the bathroom, even though I struggled putting it on because of the pain I was in. Finally I wore it, it's wasn't long, kinda too short. I think he would be able to see my ass and I was wearing a thong. I didn't even want to get out of the bathroom.

Xavier: JR is here with the meds, Lona.

I quickly took the towel and wrapped it around my lower body, then walked out. JR gave me the medication and the water then he walked out after the gang handshake with Xavier. After 30 minutes of me and Xavier talking and also us watching the "Smurfs The lost village" on his laptop, he downloaded it for me. I was tired. And I had removed the towel a long time ago

because I was inside the bed.

Xavier: I can't believe an 18 year old is watching Cartoons.

Me: \*yawns\* cartoons make the best movies.

I smiled, and i felt drowsy and slept. Even though my curly hair was annoying me because it was all in my face. But I managed to sleep.

~~

After my morning routine, Xavier got me a new toothbrush and all the toiletries I needed. I still wore the same clothes from yesterday. Xavier went out to get me food. He was angry when he saw the bruises on my arms and legs. After he came back. We ate then he wanted to take me to the doctor. So we were on the road again

Xavier: direct me to a good doctor.

Me: my family doctor is Dr Fredricks.

Xavier: direct me to him.

I did as he said, he looked really angry as he sped off to Fredricks. While his hand was on the gear, I held it to calm him down.

Me: it's nothing major. I'm going to be fine.

Xavier: don't fucking tell me that! She was ready to kill you. Every time I think about it, It angers me more. I should do what she planned on you with her.

Me: don't touch her.

Xavier: what!?

Me: I'm serious. Khazimla and Yanga love their mom so much that they'll do stupid shit.

Xavier: I don't give a fuck about those two.

Me: I do because they're my brothers and that's my mom no matter what. And King plus Muller will put a stop to our friendship. Please don't act irrationally. I'll be fine, it's just a few bruises.

~~

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

She was told to wear a gown, the gown was dirty and I was pissed off that they would give her a gown like that.

Xavier: don't you have cleaner gowns?

Lona: Xavier! I'm so sorry, he's not always like this. He is under a lot of stress these days.



She glared at me, the nurse walked away.

Lona: what is wrong with you! ?

Me: this is dirty.

Lona: I know but we're not here for clothes but for the medical attention. Now please stop being rude. Please.

She looked at me with a pout, and she hugged me not tight at all. I could see she was still in pain but she was trying not to piss me off.

Lona: you have to wait here, I'm going to be naked there.

Me: so?

Lona: don't start.

Me: wait, the doctor will see you naked?

Lona: duh.

Me: is it a female?

Lona: no.

Me: fuck no.

Lona: he has been my doctor ever since I was a child

She chuckled and quickly stopped. She was in real pain. I swear her mom is going to pay for this. After the doctor check, she came out. She went to change her clothes

Lona: we need to go to the chemist to get some of the medicine and ointment the doctor said I should use for the bruises. They're not that deep. Luckily the clothes I had on helped, and she didn't get my face. So there are no bruises on it.

Me: she still needs to learn her lesson.

Lona: Xavier we talked about this.

Me: why are you protecting her!?

Everyone looked at us because I was loud. She pulled me outside with my hand, I smiled at how tough she thinks she is. She had this serious cute facial expression on her. Then she folded her arms.

Lona: I'm protecting you, if Khazimla and Yanga'inkosi find out that you have touched or offended their mom. I'm even scared she'll tell them about the incident earlier and turn them against me.

Me: I'm not scared of your brothers.

Lona: i know you're not. But please respect what I just decided on. You're going to leave my mom alone. I don't want my brothers hating me.

Me: why don't they do anything?

Lona: she never listens to them when they are not in town. But when they are, she becomes more nice to me and all of that motherly stuff

Me: are you sure she's your mom?

Lona: positive. She's just too strict. Because if I were to get into a street fight, that's totally never going to happen, I know she would defend me.

Me: and how do you know that?

Lona: when...

She stopped and looked down. I lifted her hand up with my index finger. She had glossy eyes.

Lona: when I tried to kill myself because of the bullying, she went to the school and started beating up my bullies with a hard stick. I used to

tell them about the bullying but they always thought it was just kids playing, until I tried to kill myself. She got angry, and went to the school. And she beat them all up looking all crazy. Kayla still has that scar \*chuckles\* I know she loves me it's just that she can't express her love properly that it comes off as abuse. She doesn't feel any connection with me because of the depression she got after giving birth to me. She's a strong woman and me being weak made her believe I was a demon child aka we both have been bewitched.

Me: well now I'm here and she has to follow some rules

Lona: \*laughs\* you're crazy.

Me: I'm serious. She can't touch you. Or else I might have to do something.

She stopped laughed, and her phone rang. I didn't even think she had it with her.

Lona: hello?... she tried to beat me up with a sjambok... I'm serious... she got aimed with a gun? What? She lying. I couldn't even take my clothes because she was so angry. I didn't go there with any guy. She's trying to make you guys hate me, and maybe it's working because clearly you are taking her side.

I smiled at how fluent she was at lying. I didn't even think she had it in her. In between the call, she would take silent breathing practices.

Lona: you're coming back when? Next week!?  
\*excited\* thank God! I am staying at the El Shaddai B&B. No I'll pay with the remaining money i have in my account. Please don't worry.... okay love you too Bro.

She smiled and closed her eyes. I chuckled and opened the door for her. She got in and smiled. After I closed the door for her, I went to my side of the car and got in.

Lona: they're coming back next week. I am so happy.

Me: I see. I have to go back to Cape Town next week. So you'll be safe.

Lona: you are going because of King & Muller?

Me: no \* chuckles\* I have to get back to the businesses.

Lona: what if my brothers weren't returning next week?

Me: then you would've returned to Cape Town with me. \*shrugs\*

Lona: \*laughs\* you're crazier than I thought.

Me: you need to direct me to the chemist

Lona: what would you do without me? \*smiles\*

I chuckled then she directed me to the chemist and I got out and opened the door for her. Their chemist was in a mall. When we were walking in the mall I made sure to hold her hand so these niggas know she's taken. And they won't try anything crazy because I'll kill them now in a split second. Once we went inside Clicks. I followed her around when she was getting the medication and other stuff she needs. After all of that, I paid for the things

Me: why are you always upset when I pay?  
\*chuckles\*

I help her hand and took the plastic and we walked out.



Lona: because I know guys. They want to get you all the things and expect something like sex in return. I do not want that.

Me: am I like the other guys?

Lona: yes. You have like 3 or 4 girlfriends and they are all okay with you having other girlfriends. It's weird.

Me: that's because I haven't found the one yet. Well I have found her. I'm just walking on eggs around her

Lona: you? Found the one? Yeah right \*laughs\*

Me: why is it hard to believe I would find the one?

Lona: because you don't look like the type that believes in soul mates or even in relationships.

Me: got that one right \*laughs\*

Lona: see! You would just sleep with the girl and be annoyed afterwards because she was just fresh meat you thought you couldn't have. Now you have it, you'll get annoyed by it.

Me: are we still talking about me?

Lona: yes!

Me: this seems personal. \*laughs\*

Lona: mxm. Your fuckboy tendencies are arising again. Let's just drop this conversation.

She let go of my hand and walked fast, I pulled her back by the belt string of her jean. When she turned around, I held her waist.

Me: come on. Don't be like that, I like that you're not afraid to speak the truth about me. I won't take it as a joke again.

Lona: yes. You shouldn't.

She pouted and I laughed. On other people, I would be annoyed by their pouting but Lona's pout was just too cute and her chubby face was

cute as fuck.

Me: let's get you food in Checkers .

Lona: yeah.

We walked there and she picked the food and some dry fruit.

Lona: ugh, we should've come to this chemist. I forgot about it.

Me: it's fine by me. At least you have the medication now.

Lona: but I'm tired. The bruises are becoming painful. I want to sleep on something soft, the bed. I want to sleep \*sighs\*

Me: we're almost done. Stop complaining we're getting your food.

Lona: what will the B&B say when we are not

eating their food?

Me: I don't give a fuck.

Lona: too much anger. \*laughs\*

She walked us over to the tills and I paid, we left. At the B&B, she ate and watched the cartoon movie she was watching last night. She was continuing with it. After making plenty of calls to Scrappy to get girls for the human trafficking dealings. He told me he has 5 girls right now. I will finish up when I get there. I sat on the bed, she was inside the bed. Her medication was starting to kick in because I could see she was tired. Once I laid on the bed, I took the laptop and she stared at me. Time to test her trust on me.

Me: why are you so far? Come closer. I'm not gonna try anything.

She chuckled and moved closer to me. I placed the laptop on my thighs and pulled her closer to my chest. She laid her head on my chest and continued watching the movie. I smiled looking at her. I know she's developing feelings for me because if she wasn't she would've frozen at the thought of us cuddling. But now she's doing it. Her arm was wrapped on my lower stomach. Her actions show me she's now comfortable with me. She continued watching the movie, she laughed at another Smurf being clumsy. I was glad to see her this happy. Now after all of these cartoons and she's asleep. I will have to pay her mom a visit. She can get keep treating my wife like this and keep thinking I'm going to let it slide. She has to pay.

[02/17, 16:43] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 17

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

after I heard her light snores. I gently removed her, then wore some black sweats. I made sure to take my gun with. I won't kill her mom, just talk to her. And if she becomes disrespectful then I will have to really do something to her. I called JR to watch over Lona since she's familiar with him and she won't have any panic attacks.

Me: watch over Lona for a while. I'm going out I'll be back in about an hour.

JR: ba uyabuza uphi? Zendithi uphi? (If she's asks where you are? Where should I say you are?  
)

Me: tell her I went out to check out the town.

JR: fede fede (sharp sharp)

Me: and do not let her out of the room without me returning.

I hung up the call, then I drove to her house. I never forget directions, so I didn't have trouble along the way. Once I parked near the house. There wasn't a car in the yard still. So I thought maybe they didn't have a car. I walked over and knocked the lock on the gate. I knocked and knocked. It was no use, I climbed over the fence since it wasn't that long. I didn't see the dogs, so I went inside the house. It wasn't locked. When I opened the door, there she was standing from a bit far in the passage. She looked scared of me, and I did not care one bit.

Me: i am here to lay down some rules.

Mrs D: endlini kabani? Tchin unoluyolo andizokwenza lonto mna. (In whose house? You're overexcited I won't do that.)

Me: then we are going to do this the hard way.

I took out my gun and aimed it at her, she screamed and I'm sure the neighbours heard her. She looked like she pee'd herself.

Me: go get the sjambok.

Mrs D: intoni? (What?)

Me: I won't repeat myself. I did not stutter.

She cried going to her room to get the sjambok. My gun was still aimed at her. She threw it over to me because she was scared to get closer.

Me: no wonder you are so bitter towards Lona,



because your husband is never home.

Mrs D: uyasebenza. Sumxeka. Ibetere nakulento uyenzayo. Uku'rob'ba abantu ayondlela yophila. (he works. Do not judge him. It is better than what you're doing. Robbing people for a living is not the way to live.)

Me: here are the rules... one, you won't even lay a hand on her or else your life will end. Two, all this bullshit you keep talking to bring her down will stop today. Three, if you tell Khazimla and Yanga about this, you'll regret ever blabbling your big mouth. Do we understand each other?

She nodded very scared. I chuckled, she's just a scared bitch.

Me: now after all of this, you are going to pack up her things and I'll pick them up tomorrow.

She nodded quickly with no hesitations.

Me: just to assure we understand each other with the rules.

I picked up the sjambok, she started crying hysterically. I shook my head, and started beating her up with it so she can learn her lesson.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I woke up and the other side was empty. Maybe Xavier went out. I looked at the time and it was still 1pm, so it's still early. Well to me. I looked over to Xavier's side board and he left his cross

chain and his laptop. I smile looked at the cross chain. I decided to wear it. He's my friend, i hope he won't mind. I wish he won't mind because this chain is too cute. I went to brush my teeth and wash my face. Then I went back to the bed. I took my phone, and the battery was 23% and I don't even have a charger. When Xavier returns I'll have to ask him to charge my phone with his laptop. I went on WhatsApp with the remaining battery percentage. I wanted to send Xavier a message and ask him where he is, but than I don't want to seem like a needy person. So I just looked at statues Cardo posted because he was the only one who posted a lot. After that, I went out of WhatsApp and went to Snapchat. I took a selfie with Snapchat and edited " itme" in it. I was still wearing Xavier's shirt and chain. Then after saving the picture. I went on WhatsApp and posted it with you caption " ", after all of that I unblocked my brothers. But they still won't see

the picture. I started getting hungry so I ate the dry fruit just to tone down my hunger. Boredom started striking in so I took selfies on his laptop. A lot of selfies. Then after a while I wanted to get some fresh air, so I wore my jeans. I looked for my shoes and finally found them then wore them. When I opened the door I was shocked by JR standing outside the door like a bodyguard. What is going on? Am I in danger?

Me: JR! \*shocked\*

JR: afternoon ma'am.

Me: really now?

JR: sorry. Afternoon, Lona.

Me: what are you doing here? Is everything okay? Where is Xavier? Is he ok?

JR: \*chuckles\* yonke into igrand (everything is okay.)

Me: sorry, it's just that I was not expecting this.

You do not need to watch over me. I am not a child. I know how overprotective Xavier is.

JR: harde, Lona. Uzohlanya ba ndinohamba, ingabekwanga leplek (I'm sorry, Lona. He'll go crazy if I leave this place unwatched.)

Me: \*sighs\* but I want to go for a walk. Just to exercise my legs.

JR: kuzofuneka sim'fownele (we will have to call him.)

Me: I will do that. Don't worry.

I went back inside the room and called Xavier. He answered the call very fast.

Xavier: you can't leave the room

Me: what!? \*laughs\* why not?

Xavier: I'll tell you when I get there.

Me: where are you?

Xavier: I will be there.

Me: you can't control whether I leave or not.

Xavier: Lelona stop being stubborn. You are injured.

Me: seriously? It's just whip bruises and it is not that deep.

Xavier: you are not leaving.

Me: I just want to go for a walk.

Xavier: I'll take you for a walk when I return.

Me: can you please just tell me where you are right now?

Xavier: I'm turning by Shoprite right now, I will be there in a few minutes.

Me: okay, Xavier.

He chuckled and we both hung up. He can't just say I should not leave the room. That is so bossy and controlling. I am thankful that he

wants me protected but I am not a child that has to be locked up and watched whenever he leaves. After a few minutes he walked inside the room. I folded my arms. I was sitting on the bed. My back was against the dashboard and my legs were straight on the bed. I had a serious facial expression so he can know I did not like what he did one bit.

Xavier: are you really that upset?

I didn't reply and just stared at him. He smiled, I tried to hide mine because he was so cute and it was hard not to blush and smile. He came to my side of the side board then he sat on the bed he was really close to me

Xavier: come on I was trying to protect you here.

Me: from what!? Am I in danger?

Xavier: no. But I just want to be careful and take safety precautions.

Me: liar, you just don't want me to wonder around town without you.

Xavier: that too. \* chuckles\*

Me: well that is pretty unfair because you just went to town without me. But I can't go without you.

Xavier: fine, I'll take you with next time.

Me: what if I want some alone time?

Xavier: that's fine i will let you get some alone time.

Me: I thought you were going to say no. I was going to be so angry. I do not like being controlled.

Xavier: now I know \* laughs\* you still want to go to the aquarium?

Me: no. Let's just do it tomorrow. I think today



we have to go to Street Fever. Check out some new sneakers.

Xavier: you love sneakers more than me  
\*chuckles\*

Me: that is not a bad thing at all. \*laughs\*

He looked at me, again with that look that is so sexy I find myself thinking about things that I shouldn't. He noticed the chain, and held it. He smiled at it, and just chuckled.

Me: I could take it off. It just looked too cute to be laying on a side board.

Xavier: I didn't say take it off. It looks more good on you anyway.

Me: thank you.

He nodded, and leaned closer quickly. I was

shocked that he was about to kiss me. I didn't stop him, but then he kissed my cheek. I smiled because his lips were so soft, I wanted to taste them. Fuck! The worst is happening. I think I am developing feelings for Xavier. He got up and went to his laptop on the other side of the side board. He opened it and luckily he didn't see the pictures I took, yet. I smiled, because once he sees them he'll just smile at me with his cute smile.

Xavier: I am just going over some emails then we will leave. Okay?

Me: okay. I don't mind. I'll go change this t-shirt.

He nodded and continued checking his emails. I went to change back into my "madness" t-shirt. I was still wearing the chain. But it was inside the t-shirt. Once I walked out, he was also done with the business stuff.

Me: I need my phone charged please.

He reached his hand out for it. And I gave it to him. He noticed that the chain was inside the t-shirt. He smiles and placed his hand on my neck making me shiver from his cold hands. He smiled, then pulled the chain out.

Xavier: now you're good.

He charged my phone then he came close to me

Xavier: Let's go.

I smiled and blushed that he wants me to wear his chain.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

I smiled counting up my rent money and it finally reached where I want it to be.

Tomorrow it is settled I will pay my rent. Then the remaining money I will get some groceries.

After fucking Patrick, he finally gave me R20 000 because I lied and said I wanted to do

some lingerie shopping and he was more than happy to sponsor me for that. I will have to get

a new sugar daddy so I can have more

money. I am the lazy type that does not want to work. So I would rather fuck men that are really

willing to give a lot of money than to work shifts that will only reward me a lousy R500 per week.

I like my lifestyle and some may say it's

prostitution but I do not care as long as it pays

the bills. I am ok with it. I did not go home this holiday because I do not want to go back to my drunk father and his misbehaving son. My little brother get on my nerves and with my dad being a single parent, he had to take care of the both of us, I had to be a mother to my little brother. I did not like that so I promised myself if I leave Eastern Cape, I am never going back to that hell hole. There was a knock on the door, I groaned getting up to go answer it. I was shocked to see a detective in my doorstep.

Detective: afternoon, Mi-

Kayla: what do you want? \*annoyed\*

Detective: can I come in?

I opened the door further and he walked in. I was confused why the police was here. I did not do anything illegal.

Detective: I am just here to question you about the disappearance of Khan-

Me: wait, who reported this? Khanyi is probably with the guy she left with the other night.

Detective: her grandmother is very worried about her. She filed a missing persons case.

Me: what?

Detective: I need you to tell me everything that happened that night.

Me: we just went to a club, had fun and she said she was going home with her ex, I don't remember his name, Thando or Thabo I think.

Detective: which club was it?

I told him the name and he wrote it down, he was writing everything down. After that he stood up from my sofa, and shook my head.

Detective: thank you for your cooperation.

I just nodded and I let him out. I was very scared because what if she was dead or something and it would all be my fault. I really did not think Rellik would hurt her but now it believe that he really likes that fat bitch Lona. I received a call from Zikhona. I rolled my eyes, ever since Khanyi has been no where to be found, Zikhona has been annoying me and thinking we should be best friends. To be honest, I liked Khanyi more than her.

Me: Zee

Zee: check Khanyi's Facebook. \*sniffs\* kuthiwa ulahlekile (they are saying she's missing)  
\*cries\*

My heart stopped and immediately started beating very fast. I quickly took my laptop and logged in on Facebook. It's already all over. People can not know what happened in that toilet. I do not want them blaming me. I will act shocked that she's missing so I don't have people thinking I knew about this. This is all Lona's fault if she didn't cry, and Rellik wouldn't have noticed and she would've made us all happy by killing herself.

Me: please don't prank me, Zikhona. Khanyi can not be missing! We were at the club together, and she went home with some guy, her ex Thando or Thabo I think, and they were both nowhere to be found. They're probably still having fun elsewhere together.

Zee: he was found dead in his flat. And it looked like it was broken in there, Khanyi wasn't there

Me: what!? When did all of this happen? And



why am I just finding out!?

Zee: apparently her grandmother tried calling her and she didn't answer so she knew something was wrong and filed a missing person's case.

Me: I was never questioned by the police.

Zee: maybe they still don't know you were there.

Me: yeah. I hope she is okay wherever she is.

Zee: me too. This can not be happening in her first year.

Me: yeah. Look Zee, I have to go. I'll call you later on.

Zee: okay, bye chommie.

I hung up. If my suspicions are right then that means Khanyi was killed by Rellik, and that means that Zikhona and Skylar are in danger. I hope those stupid bitches do not mention my

name, because Rellik will also kill me. And he did warn me about hurting Lona. But I will do anything to get him to be mine. And I'm not stopping now, Khanyi's death can not be in vain. There no going back now. I already have started and I will get Rellik in the end.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

We went to Street Fever and looked at the sneakers. I kept looking until I found the one I really wanted.

Me: I am so getting these. They look dope.

Xavier: they look alright.

Me: liar, they look dope. I'll buy you some too, I

got cash. \*chuckles\*

I was joking, but he glared at me making me laugh more.

Me: why can't I buy you these sneakers but you buy me a lot of things?

Xavier: because that's not how it's supposed to work.

Me: this is not 1980 where males had to take care of their females. This is 2017 and women can buy things for men too.

Xavier: well my mind is still in 1980 and it is still going to remain there.

Me: mxm, I'll go pay for these.

Xavier: don't test me, Lelona.

Me: \*rolls eyes\* anger for what? \*chuckles\*

Xavier: I will buy the sneakers for the both of us,

just not let you buy them for me.

Me: next time i am going shopping, I won't tell you because you are buy a lot of things for me. It is annoying.

Xavier: me being a man is annoying? \*chuckles\*

Me: no, you disrespecting my decision to not let you buy me stuff is annoying because I like being independent and buying my own things. It makes me feel good.

Xavier: well you will feel even better knowing you won't use a cent when you are with me.

Me: with you?

Xavier: yes, when you are going to places with me. What did you think I was saying? \*smirks\*

Xavier thinks he is smart. He is saying something else but it actually means something else to make me feel confused. I don't even know what to think. I don't know if he means

when I am with him as in dating or as in us shopping around and hanging out. He just loves confusing me.

Me: nevermind.

He just smiled at me and we look for someone to look for our sizes. When the person finally came back, we went to pay. Well he paid, I did not even want trouble so I just kept quiet. He is a guy with an ego and he likes knowing people around him are well taken care of, that's what I noticed with him. He likes controlling things and he will get angry when things do not go his way. But that's not a bad thing, it shows he is a perfectionist he likes everything to be perfect and I am sure he plans everything he does. I like that, it means he is very sure about his future. He took the bag and we walked out holding hands. He looked at me, I think he was shocked

that I was the one who took his hand and held it.  
He usually does it. He smiled and I smiled too.  
When we were out, I frowned when I saw  
trouble. Kenny smirked when he saw Xavier.  
Xavier glared at him. Gosh, why did we have to  
bump into him today!?

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

## LONA'S SELFIE

[02/17, 16:44] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER  
~

INSERT 18

- .
- .
- .

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I held Xavier's hand tighter to tell him to control his anger because I know him. He'll want to fight for no reason at all. He could just avoid this by ignoring Kenny.

Kenny: en ons ontmoet weer (and we meet again. Now in my territory.)

Me: Xavier, please let's just go. \*whispers\*

Kenny: you should listen to your bitch, Rellik.

Xavier: I dare you to call her a bitch one more time. \*angry\*

I pulled Xavier, so he can just calm down. But that only fueled his anger. He really wanted to fight and I just wanted to leave.

Kenny: she's a bitch.

Next thing I know, Xavier was on top of Kenny throwing punches. He got up and started kicking him. I was now on the verge of tears. I have never seen Xavier this angry and he was scaring me. Everyone started forming a circle around them, the fight was quickly broken off. I was worried that the police would come here and arrest Xavier. Xavier was angry as fuck, I could see his mouth was bleeding so Kenny did end up throwing some punches too. But Kenny looked messed up, because of the rings Rellik was wearing on his fingers. I picked up the plastic with sneakers. Thank God, they weren't taken. I pulled Xavier away from people because I did not want this drama at all. I held his hand and tried pulling him towards his car.



Me: can you please control your anger? They are about to call the police. Let us just go.

And then I screamed when I felt a punch on my side cheek out of nowhere. I held my cheek in pain, I looked back and Kenny was trying to punch Xavier but it landed on me. Xavier threw a punch at him and Kenny ducked, then when he got up, Xavier quickly sneaked a punch and it landed straight to his nose. The fight was broken up again. People were hyping this up. I was still in pain because of my cheek. This holiday just won't let me have me relax. First my mother whoops my ass. Now I have been punched, unintentionally I know, but still I have been punched. Some random guys helped me get Xavier in the car because he was so angry. He did not want to leave. He wanted to continue beating Kenny up. After getting him in the passenger seat.

Me: give me the keys.

Xavier: fuck no.

He touched my chin and checked my cheek. Then he slightly brushed it, I winced. His jaw clenched in anger.

Me: I am fine.

Xavier: he fucking touched you!

Me: Give me the keys, Xavier.

Xavier: I swear I am going to kill that motherfucker!

He will not kill anyone. I will talk to him but when he's calmed down. Because there is no use talking to him when he is like this.

Me: Xavier. I am not playing. Give me the fucking keys before I take them myself!

I was upset, if he had just ignored Kenny then I would have not been touched in the fucking face. He took them out of his sweatpants and gave them to me. I placed the plastic underneath the seat he was sitting in.

Me: and you better not move when I close this door and I will drive this car to the B&B. Let this petty bullshit go!

I went to the other side. I pray there isn't any traffic today because I don't have a learner's. And I'm already driving cars. Normally I drove to the B&B and luckily for me, there wasn't any traffic along the way. On the ride, I did not even

utter one word. And Xavier understood, so he didn't even talk to. After parking, we both got out. He got out with the plastic. I walked to our room.

Xavier: Lelona.

Me: do not even talk to me right now!

Once we arrived in our room. I went to check my cheek and it was pink. It was a bit swollen too. But it wasn't too much damage as I thought it would be. I drank some painkillers to take away the pain.

Xavier: what the fuck did I do? I was defending you! \*angry\* you want me to let people disrespect you?!

Me: you do not to react with violence every single time people talk shit!

Xavier: he called you a bitch and he fucking threw a punch at you. I can not let him do shit like that.

Me: just stay here I'll be back.

Xavier: where are you going?

Me: I said stay here

Xavier: do not fucking test me, Lelona. Now is not a good time.

Me: i am just going to the main reception. Do you want to hold my hand through that!?

I angrily walked to the reception and asked for a first aid kit for Xavier because he was bleeding in his mouth. But he acts so tough as if he doesn't feel shit. Gosh, I sometimes hate how manly he is. I just wish he could control his fucking anger and stop entertaining bullshit and reacting with violence. I was given the first aid kit. I rushed to the room, and when I was there, I

was shocked to see JR and 4 other guys there. Xavier was still angry, and walking up and down while they were just standing still.

Xavier: I want him gone! I don't give a fuck about a stupid war.

I shook my head, and pulled him to sit down on the bed. Then I opened the first aid kit

Me: don't listen to him guys. That's just the anger talking.

Xavier: Lelona, he fucking touched you. I can not let that slide.

Me: you are not. You are being mature about it.

I started by cleaning the blood off with a wet cloth.

JR: ndinqinela noLona kule. Imfazwe ayonto uyifunayo okanye oyidingayo (I am with Lona on this one. War is not something you want nor need.)

Xavier: who the fuck asked you about your opinion?

I slapped Xavier on his arm. He looked up at me since I was standing up and he was sitting on the bed. Then I put the colorless spirit on his little cut that was near his mouth which was why he was bleeding. He winced once the colorless spirit touched his wound.

Xavier: and why the fuck are you calling her Lon-  
me: I said so. Stop being rude.

Xavier: Lelona-

Me: no. These are humans too. And you are not killing Kenny, a war is too much. I am sure you do not want to die. Now stop feeding into your ego, and calm down.

The guys smiled at me, Xavier just chuckled shaking his head. I went to get him some painkillers and water. Then I gave them to him.

Me: drink up.

He drank the medication and gave me back the bottle of water. The little fridge had plenty of still water.

Me: guys, can you please come back when he is calm and refreshed? I am going to make sure he sleeps and thinks carefully.



I almost fell when Xavier pulled me to his lap, because I didn't expect it. The guys were cheeing at us, and I just started getting butterflies in my stomach, because Xavier kissed my shoulder. It's the little things he does that make my develop more feelings for him. The guys left and I looked at Xavier. His wound was little but still it was a cut. I tried to touch it but he winced.

Me: it is painful?

Xavier: a little bit.

He touched my bruised cheek. I could sense that he was becoming angry again.

Me: it is fine really.

Xavier: I feel like killing him with my own hands for even calling you a bitch and he made it worse by touching you. He keeps fucking provoking me.

Me: because he knows you will react in anger. Next time just let him talk his bullshit and not respond. Everyone will see how dumb he is.

Xavier: not in the streets. I let him walk all over me, then I'm a pussy. I need time teach him a lesson.

Me: what you need to do is rest.

I got up from his lap, and opened the bed covers for him. He smiled and took off his sweater then his shoes he was now shirtless because he also took off his tank top. He also took off his sweatpants and wore black shorts. I quietly cleared my throat, he is really getting too comfortable. He got in the bed.

Xavier: am I a child now?

Me: when you are behaving like one. Yes you are.

Xavier: I see you like controlling things too.

Me: it feels a tad bit good.

Xavier: but next time. Let me address my boys. I do not want you involved in any gang shit. And when you're too nice they will walk all over you.

Me: they are humans, they have feelings. You belittling JR like that was not cool at all. And I have to tell you the truth if I do not like something and I did not like that.

Xavier: fine. Just talk to me privately not in front of them.

I smiled then went to the other side of the bed. I took off my shoes and took his military shirt

then rushed to the bathroom to change. I was scared again to leave the bathroom with only this short t-shirt. I finally quickly went out and got in the bed. He looked at me and just chuckled at my childish actions. He was watching rugby on the TV.

Me: can you please pass my phone?

Xavier: get it yourself \*smirks\*

Me: Xavier it is next to you.

Xavier: get it yourself, Lelona.

I groaned. This was his excuse to see my ass because clearly the shirt is too short and my ass will be exposed. I decided to sacrifice my phone. He chuckled when I folded my arms and leaned against the dashboard. Then he took my phone out of his laptop and gave it to me. I smiled and checked my WhatsApp messages

and they were none that's how my life was boring. Xavier shocked me when he pulled me closer to him.

Me: what are you doing? \*blushes\*

He wrapped his hand around my waist. He held my waist and laid his head on my chest, well my breasts. My heart started beating fast, I quickly contained myself before he feels my heartbeat beating fast. He was doing this while continuing watching TV.

Xavier: getting comfortable.

Me: on me?

Xavier: yes now, quiet down. The game is getting interesting.

I just smiled at him and let him be comfortable. I wanted to brush his little curly hair but then I did not want to make it seem awkward. But I went with my first instinct and brushed his little wavy hair. I could see he was enjoying this. He was even smiling. I have never been this close to any guy that isn't my family. It's like I am moving way too fast with Xavier. Even practically live with him without my clothes. He lays on my breasts and I let him. He kisses my cheek and I let him, earlier today I slept way too close to him before I woke up with him nowhere to be found. I feel like I am even forgetting Omar, and I do not like that feeling because Omar meant so much to me, and I do not want to seem like I never cared about him because I really did. Xavier and Omar are really different people yet they both make me feel special, what am I saying? Omar is dead and he is not coming back. He made me feel special. Past tense, now he is gone. And I can not keep

comparing Xavier to a dead person. I want to move on from what me and Omar shared because clearly it is not coming back. But then Xavier seems like the type to have plenty of girls begging for him. Am I willing to let him play with my feelings because I am sure he has done it with plenty of girls. What is different about me? I am a nobody, just a nerd. He probably sees me as a kid or he is doing all of this to just to get in my panties and say he had sex with me. If he is real then I can not date someone with anger issues. So this crush, it's just a crush that I do not see going anywhere. It will fade over at least I hope it does. After a while, I heard him breathe heavily like he was sleeping. I smiled and just continued brushing his hair because he needs the rest. This gave me a chance to admire out his tattoos and whole body. His tattoos were a lot and very intriguing. I frowned when I saw the bruises he had on his hands. I could see he took off his rings. I do not want

Xavier involved in fights because of me. He could get really hurt or get jail time because of him not controlling his anger. I carefully took the remote to change the channel but accidentally woke him.

Me: sorry, you can go back to sleep.

He just nodded and held me tighter and I brushed his head again to make him sleep. I think they painkillers were making him sleepy. He slept again as I was watching Keeping Up With The Kardashians. I was in love with reality shows even though some are just fixed.

~~

He woke up at 6pm well his phone rang, and I had to wake him up because I did not want to invade his privacy and answer the call. He groaned waking up and snatched his phone



from the sideboard.

Xavier: what?

I shook my head at his rudeness. He cuddled on my chest again. I just smiled, because he is acting like a baby. He loves attention.

Xavier: I told you I will be back there next week... Scrappy I am sure it is not that fucking bad, I will handle it when I come back... just handle it for now and I will fix everything when I return.

Then he hung up. He got up, and checked my cheek. I just smiled at him caring so much for me. After that he continued cuddling with me, and just watched the TV.

Me: look who's the baby now.

Xavier: hoe jou bek (hold your mouth)

Me: \*chuckles\* you just love attention.

Xavier: this is a comfortable spot for me.

\*chuckles\*

Me: yeah whatever.

Xavier: and what the fuck are you watching?

Me: do not judge. \*laughs\*

Xavier: things you girls watch. \*shakes head\*

Just 5 minutes later, food was served for him. I made my own little supper with the food I got from Checkers. It didn't require me to cook it so I was happy. After we ate our food, I decided that I needed to talk to Xavier about this whole war thing. I do not want to die.

Me: we need to talk.

Xavier: sounds serious.

Me: it is.

Xavier: okay, I am listening.

Me: you can not kill Kenny.

Xavier: Lona-

Me: no, listen. An unnecessary war will get created and people will get killed. I do not want to die. I am only 18

Xavier: while I am still alive, no one will touch you.

Me: what about your family? My family? The innocent people that will be hurt through all of this. Please Xavier. Please don't start something you won't be able to finish. I heard a lot about gang wars. They never end well.

Xavier: next time he does fucked up shit. I will have to kill me.

Me: so that means you won't kill him?

Xavier: I'm letting this one slide.

I squealed and hugged him. He chuckled as he hugged me as well.

Xavier: tomorrow I will go get your clothes from your house.

Me: you can not go alone my mom will flip

Xavier: I can handle her.

Me: Xavier....

Xavier: trust me. I am just going to take the suitcase and leave.

Me: I will be there.

Xavier: no. You will be here.

Me: am I a prisoner here?

Xavier: no, but I am keeping you saf-

Me: then I am coming with. I have to see my

mom after that incident. She must be worried about where I am.

Xavier: \*sighs\* why is it that you never listen to me?

Me: because you also never listen to me.

Xavier: \*laughs\* you are something else.

Me: I know right!? Such an amazing person I am \*smirks\*

Xavier: okay, you hang around me too much. Now my swag is rubbing off on you.

Me: your cockiness is rubbing off on me, you mean.

He chuckled then we watched some TV but he kept annoying me by working so much on his laptop.

~~

Tomorrow I woke up and after my morning

hygiene routine. He borrowed me his oversized t-shirt. I wore it with my jeans and white sneakers.

Me: when we return I will changed and we will go to the aquarium.

Xavier: okay.

We drove to my house, and I won't lie. I was very scared of what will happen. Once he parked, I was even scared to walk out. I mean I left my home to share a room with Xavier. My dad will very so disappointed. Mom must have already twisted the story of what happened that day. I don't even want to think of the words she will say to me.

Xavier: you are ready?

Me: yeah. Let's go.

We both walked out, and I knocked the lock on the gate. After a long time. My aunt opened the door. She was about to say something, but then she looked at Xavier and didn't say anything. She opened the gate, and walked back in the house. We walked in the house and as soon as I entered. I saw my mom, she stared at me. My heart started beating fast.

[02/17, 16:44] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 19

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

Lona's looked at her, there were just staring at each other.

Mrs D: your clothes are in your room.

Lona nodded with teary eyes. I glared at Lona's mother, if she mentions anything about me beating her up. I swear I will kill her and be happy about it. I won't lose Lona because of her. Especially when Lona is starting to trust me. Lona went to her room, and took her suitcase from her room. I followed after her. She started sniffing.

Me: are you okay?

Lona: she is not even apologising for hurting me. I return home thinking she is worried but she just tells me my clothes are in my room. What type of mother does that!? Gosh,



sometimes I hate her so much for making me feel like I don't matter.

Me: hey! You do matter. A lot, especially to me. ... and your brothers.

Lona: thanks. \*smiles\*

I could see that she was smiling painfully because she just wanted to cry all her pain away. And I did not like seeing her cry at all. It's like a knife is being twisted in my heart seeing tears on her face. She picked up a small book that looked like a diary and I helped her with her big suitcase. Once we went outside, her mom rushed to lock the gate without even saying goodbye to Lona. The suitcase was a challenge putting it in the car because of the pain in my hands, but I managed. I opened the door for Lona and she got in. I rushed to my side and I sped to the B&B. I opened the door for her again and took out her suitcase. When we arrived in

my room, she threw herself on the bed and closed her eyes looking up at the ceiling.

Me: you still want to go to the aquarium?

Lona: yes please.

Me: let's both change and we'll go.

She nodded and got up. She opened her suitcase and took out the clothes she needed, she walked to the bathroom to change. I also changed into my white Gucci hoodie. And a black bomber jacket. Then wore my red Gucci headband. I was wearing my black knee ripped jeans with white sneakers. After a long time, she came out wearing a black supreme hoodie and tight blue knee ripped jeans then had on black knee high boots that were like high heels. Her hair was in a messy bun. I love that she never wears makeup. It makes her look more

beautiful than she already it.

Me: all done?

Lona: yes.

I walked closer to her and held her waist. She looked up at me.

Me: this is why I did not want you to go there. She ruins your spirit.

Lona: I am sorry.

Me: don't be. She should be. Now forget about her for a little bit and try to have fun.

Lona: I will. \*smiles\*

I kissed her forehead and she wrapped her hands around my body hugging me.

Lona: thank you for everything. Really. Without you, I probably wouldn't have survived any of these things. I really appreciate what you have done for me.

Me: dit is 'n plesier. (It is a pleasure)

She smiled and then broke off the hug. When we return from the aquarium I will ask Lona to be my girlfriend I am tired of beating around the bush about how I feel. I want her to be mine and only mine. When we walked out I decided to send JR a quick message to do romantic shit for Lona when I return from East London.

Me: doen iets romantiese soos in die films vir Lona (do somethings romantic like in the movies for Lona) in the room, I want to surprise her when I get back.

JR : sure thing, bozza.

I opened the door for Lona and she thanked me getting in. I rushed to the other side. My phone rang when I started the car. It was Scrappy.

Me: Scrap.

Scrappy: you need to return ASAP.

Me: I told you, nigga. Ek will jou sien in die volgende week. (I will see you next week)

Scrappy: Kenny is planning to do something to you. Our spy called me yesterday. You are in his territory, you know Ghost can not protect you there.

Me: I hear you.

Scrappy: even though he can't kill you because of the war. It doesn't mean he won't hurt you. Keep Lona safe.

Me: fede (sharp)

I hung up the call. I did not Lona to worry, so I didn't cancel the aquarium trip. I drove off to East London. She didn't know East London that well so I had Google where the aquarium was. Once I found the destination, I used a GPS app on my phone to lead us to the place. When we finally arrived, she had this big smile. I think she was really excited.

Me: and we're finally here.

I got out and opened the door for her. She walked out, and held my hand. I smiled because clearly she had feelings for me now. My plan worked. I eliminated Omar, became her comforter and finally she developed feelings for me. I paid the money to get in and we went

inside. I could see how her eyes lit up every time she would see a fish.

Lona: wow.

She gasped when she saw a shark. I smiled at her because she looked so fucking beautiful. I don't understand how a girl like this doesn't see how beautiful she is? She has the most perfect body. The jeans were so fucking tight, it made her ass pop out. Lona is so amazing, and the thing that makes her more beautiful is that she doesn't brag about her beauty. She is just chilled, and what she did with the first aid kit showed me that she really cares and she is willing to do whatever for me. She keeps me calm and away from making irrational decisions. If it wasn't for her I would've killed Kenny and a big war would've been created, because Kenny's father is very powerful. And a war with him

could mean that I am digging my own grave. I can not just put Lona's life in danger like that. She is still in her first year. She loves her academics and I want to let her finish her studies so I won't jeopardise that for her. She means a lot to me. I don't even believe that I actually am falling for her. I never planned to feel this way, falling in love and being a gangster is a bad thing. Because your lover becomes your weakness.

Lona: are you okay?

Me: ja

Lona: you have been quiet.

Me: ek dink oor iets. (I'm thinking of something)

Lona: what is it?

Me: where did you learn afrikaans? \*chuckles\*

Lona: that's what you are thinking about?

\*laughs\*



Me: no, but it's a question I always want to ask you.

Lona: I took Afrikaans as a subject in high-school.

Me: so you can speak it \*smiles\*

Lona: no \*chuckles\* but I understand it.

Me: you should surprise me and speak in it.

Lona: yeah, no \*laughs\* now tell me what you were thinking about that you can not enjoy this beautiful place.

Me: just about light stuff. It is not important.

Lona: just tell me and stop being dramatic.  
\*smiles\*

Me: I will tell you when we get back to the B&B.

Lona: why can't you just tell me now?

Me: because andifuni (I don't want to.)

She laughed at me speaking Xhosa I don't know why she keeps laughing at me speaking Xhosa because I speak it well. I wrapped my arm around her shoulder and we walked around the place with her talking non-stop about how cool this shit is. I am not the romantic type, that's why I commanded JR to do that shit in the room. I don't even know what he will do as long as Lona loves it then it is okay with me. After the aquarium we went to get something to eat. But she said she wasn't hungry so I had to park at Spar and force her out the car to get her food.

Lona: I really am not hungry \*chuckles\*

Me: just get something to eat.

She took dry fruit and some yoghurt then juice. I shook my head. I have to convince her to eat proper food when we get back home. It was a bit late so I didn't want it cause a stupid fight in

Spar.

Me: you want to go home immediately? Or is there something else you want to do?

Lona: I am tired, so, home please.

Me: okay.

I paid for her things and we went to the car. I went to a drive by McDonald's to get something for me to eat. Then we drove off back home. We were the only ones in the freeway, and it didn't feel quite bad until... I saw cars blocking the way. I was pissed because Kenny may have something to do with this. I quickly took out my phone and gave it to Lona.

Me: immediately call JR and tell them to come here fast.

Lona: why don't you do it yourself?

Me: I have to handle something first.

She looked at the cars, and started breathing heavy.

Lona: Xavier no! You can not go out there. What if-

Me: not questions. Call JR. And do not get out of this car.

She nodded scared, I sighed and held her face.

Me: I am serious Lona. No matter what happens do not leave this car.

She looked scared and just nodded because

they were a lot of cars. Probably like 6 cars and I was only one. Scrappy was right, it is dangerous for me being in their territory.

Me: once you get out. They will think you are involving yourself in it and they will do something crazy.

She looked at me with teary eyes.

Me: I will be okay.

I made sure my gun was secured in the back of my jeans and I got out the car. Once I locked the doors with a touch of a button in my keys. She quickly called JR. I walked closer to the cars that were busy also blasting Trap music. Kenny walked out of a Mercedes Benz AMG. Then the rest started walking out.

Me: a sneak attack? \*chuckles\* you are getting weaker by the day.

Kenny: sweet Lona won't think that when I am done with you \*smirks\*

Me: a war isn't something you want, Kenny boy.

Just as much as I can't kill him, he can't kill me. Ghost will get pissed and a war will happen. But Kenny loves provoking me because unlike him, I can not control my anger that much. If someone messes with me or someone I love. I want them dead, and I want to be the one that kills them. That's why I was named Rellik because when I get angry I become a Killer.

Kenny: \*chuckles\* no, but beating you up just to scare your girl will make me a very happy nigga.

I was now more angry, but I need to calm down and stall them by talking, so JR and the others can make it here.

Me: jy dink sy will praat met jou? \*chuckles\* jy droom groot. (You think she will talk with you? You dream big.)

Kenny: sy is 'n meisie. Een dag sy wil gee in (she is a girl. One day she will give in) she gave in to you.

Me: I am warning you.

Kenny: you will do what? \*chuckles\* look at this nigga thinking he is still tough.

All his stupid lapdogs laughed. In my mind I was hoping Lona will listen to me and remain in that car. But knowing my baby. She is stubborn, she probably will never listen to me.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

When Xavier walked out, I quickly called JR . He answered very fast.

Me: you need to come to the freeway, just after Mdatsane. We were coming back from East London. Kenny has ambushed Xavier. You need to hurry up.

JR: okay, get in the car and stay in the car.

Me: okay. I am already in the car.

Why do they keep telling me to stay in the car? I looked at them, they were talking for a long time. At even one moment they both looked at me and continued talking. I could see Kenny



was being angrier by the minute. Out of nowhere he threw a punch at Xavier. And that's where Xavier went crazy and started beating the fuck out of him. The other guys started attacking Xavier too I could even see them taking out his gun. I was screaming so scared they might actually kill him. I can not just sit here and watch them beat him up like that I quickly unlocked my door and got out the car and ran to remove them from him. One guy held me back roughly. I was crying and calling Xavier. He was on the tar road bleeding a lot and I could see her was badly hurt.

Kenny: isn't she beautiful?

He walked closer to me and I kept sniffing. I wish JR could get here faster.

Xavier: I swear if you fucking touch her again.

Kenny: never have I ever thought you would have a weakness, Rellik. You always gambled with people's weaknesses now it is your turn.

I was crying like crazy, Xavier looked at me worried. I was so scared because in times like this people get kidnapped or raped. Why in the hell did I choose to hang out with a gangster!? Now I can't just let him get hurt because in the process I get hurt too. What I feel for him I can't describe because I can not say it is love, we met like a month away. It is too soon to say it is love. I tried toning down my cries. I didn't want them to hurt Xavier more because I was loud. I did not want them to hurt me either.

Kenny: maybe a night with her won't be too much. Don't you gents think?

My eyes popped out in fear. Xavier tried getting up but he was kicked down by another big guy. The one holding me tried dragging me towards a car. I screamed and resisted. The heels were no help though and the guy was very tough. I screamed and screamed. I was shoved in the car. I tried getting out but the guy got in and held me still. Another guy got in on the other right side.

Me: Xavier! Xavier!

I saw cars approaching. they were speeding off very fast.

Kenny: get her out of her fast! \*shouting\*

I tried poking the other guy in the eye, it worked and I also did it on the driver so he can not drive. I can not be kidnapped today! Not ever, the other guy who was sitting in the right side slapped me so hard, I saw some tiny colourful stars.

?: drive, you idiot!

The car started moving slowly and my heart started moving fast, my breathing got abnormal and I was struggling to breathe.

?: itheni na lemedi kaRellik? (What's wrong with Rellik's girl)

I felt the need to vomit so bad, before I knew it I was vomiting on the guy on the right. Who was the one talking a lot. I felt a bit better at

breathing. The guy screamed and shouted at me then the most scariest thing happened. The car was hit, making it spin and spin until it stopped. My head was so sore from the spinning and from hitting the chair in front. The guys opened the door, I was pulled out of the car. I saw JR.

JR: let her go.

He tried to come closer, but I was aimed with a gun. I gasped thinking about how I am going to die. I used to pray for death to come to me, now I am so scared. I was going to have a second panic attack. I screamed when one guy was shot, and I don't even know where the bullet came from. I stared at his lifeless body with tears following repeatedly.

JR: should I repeat myself?

I was praying so hard, even promising God I will go to church the next Sunday. I just cannot lose my life at only 18, my brothers still need me. I heard another shot fire off, I was just crying and asking myself why this happened in my life? I miss my boring life with only just books and family. What is happening today is so scary I don't ever want to talk about it again. The guy pushed me towards JR and tried to run. But he got shot by JR. I have never seen so many dead bodies in my life and so much blood

JR: sukhalo umoja (don't cry, you're okay.)

Me: w-where is Xavier? Is he o-okay? Can we just go home please please.

JR: ndizoku hambisa khona (I will take you there)

Me: no.! No! I am going with Xavier. Where is he? Please take me to him.

Another guy came closer to us, I noticed it was one of Xavier's guys. He was behind the car

Me: he was the one shooting?

JR: yeah, this is Shooter.

I nodded, we got in the car, and I was still shaking scared from what happened.

JR: bozza uthe ndikubeke straight kwiB&B  
(boss said I should take you straight to the B&B.)

Me: no. Take me to him, please. \*sniffs\*

He turned the car around and sped off to where

we left Xavier. I could see from afar he was not good. Another guy of his crew was examining him like a doctor. Once the car stopped, I got out quickly ran to him. I didn't care about the guy examining him. I just hugged him crying he hugged me back even when he was in pain, I still love his hugs, because he never gives them a lot.

Xavier: I told JR to take you home.

Me: I want to go home with you.

Xavier: Lona, please stop being stubborn. It is not safe.

Me: I don't care. You're hurt, I don't want to leave you.

Xavier: Kenny got away, he could be anywhere near East London and he will come for you.

Me: which is why I need to be closer to you.



He touched my cheek where I had a redish  
bruise from the slap. He looked at JR, but I  
answered the question he wanted to ask

Me: they are dead. \*sniffs\*

I saw people die right in front of my eyes. Will I  
ever get over that?

## OUTFITS THEY WORE

[02/17, 16:44] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 20

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I was still worried about Xavier. His white Gucci hoodie was covered in blood. And he had bruises on his all over his face. His left eye was a bit swollen. And he had a black eye on it. He looked angry speeding the car off to King Williams Town. I didn't want to tell him to slow down because I would've made the situation worse. When we arrived at the B&B. We both got of the car in the same time. I didn't even want him to use his energy opening the door for me because I knew he was in pain. He was really badly beaten up. I held his hand and we walked to his room. When he opened the door, I got the shock of my life. There were red rose petals everywhere in the room. It was also lit up with candles that were almost going to be finished. The bed had rose petals that spelt "be mine?". I smiled covering my mouth, and got in the room smiling.

Me: Xavier, what is going on?

Xavier: I was planning on surprising you.

Me: wow, this is. This is beautiful. Thank you so much.

I hugged him but later regretted it when he winced in pain. I avoided answering the question because do I really want to date Xavier? He comes with a lot of baggage and problems. Today I was almost kidnapped and raped. Do I want to live my life in fear all the time?

Xavier: you haven't answered the question.

Me: Xavier. We can't date. My brothers will get very angry.

Xavier: so all your life you are going to live behind your brothers?

Me: they will go crazy and do something stupid.

Xavier: I am not scared of Muller and King.

Me: I am. I can not disappoint them. They want me to finish school.

Xavier: who said you won't finish school when you're with me?

Me: Xavier... what happened today showed me that you live a very dangerous life. I can not survive tha-

Xavier: look, I am tired of hiding my feelings for you. I want you and clearly you want me, so why do we have to drag it?

Me: do you have to be rude about it?

Xavier: Lelona. I know I am not perfect, but having you by my side is the only perfect thing that would complete my life. I know I come with a lot of disadvantages but baby, I promise you. I will never involve you in my businesses that are dangerous.

Me: I don't want to ruin our friendship.

Xavier: we are sharing the same bed. Cuddling together and we hold hands in public. Lelona, it's clear we have something more than friendship.

Me: they are already calling me your weakness. I am not safe

Xavier: you are, because what I feel for you I can not even explain it. But I will make sure to keep you safe at all times even if I die doing that. Now stop being scared and be mine?

I looked down, and looked into his eyes. I don't know what happened but I thought all the times we have ever seen each other. From the kitchen at my brother's house party to today. I trust Xavier with my life, and I would be lying if I said these feelings will go away. He lives in Cape Town for crying sake! We will see each other often. And he is in the same gang with my brothers, well he is about to control my

brothers. He looked disappointed that I wasn't responding to him. I smiled and nodded, then he chuckled and tried to hug me, but it was hard for him because he was still in pain.

Xavier: I promise you, this shit that happened today. It will never happen again. I will protect you from anything.

Me: don't worry about that now. Worry about your health.

Xavier: You really mean a lot to me Lona.

Me: \*smiles\* you mean a lot to me too

I made him sit in the bed even when the roses were there. I fixed the pillows against the dashboard and helped him inside the bed. Thank God the roses didn't make him uncomfortable. The little dinner that was organised on the floor really made me smile.

This is so cute, and the candles make it more adorable.

Me: you need to sit down and rest.

Xavier: give me a few days and I will be okay.

Me: you should've went to the hospital.

Xavier: the same hospital that gave me shit for wanting quicker services.

Me: I will get you painkillers and you can rest.

Xavier: wait first take off my hoodie. I can't move my body properly.

I frowned and help him out of his clothes. He was now shirtless and I saw a lot of bruises. I tried touching his one of his bruises which was on his left side. He touched my hand, and kissed the back of my fingers because when he picked my hand it formed into a fist. He did this

in the most cutest way, my heart started beating fast and butterflies were going crazy.

Xavier: I promise I will be okay. I don't want you to worry so much.

Me: maybe you do need to return to Cape Town, there you weren't getting hurt like this.

Xavier: I am not leaving you behind. Not in a million years.

Me: you could die here!

Xavier: ek sal nie gaan nie. (I will not go)

Me: what will you do then?

Xavier: I am taking you with me to Cape Town.

Me: what? My brothers will get very angry. I can not tell them about us yet, we have been dating for like 30 minutes? It is too soon.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* calm down. You will have to tell them you got tired of your mom.



Me: won't Kenny kill them?

Xavier: he respects them. Trust me, your brothers are not weak at all. They can handle themselves. It is you I am worried about.

Me: okay, when do we leave?

I could see she wasn't that much happy with us leaving.

Xavier: finally, you listen to me without being stubborn.

Me: because I do not want Kenny to sneak an attack on you again.

I gave him painkillers and some water. But looking at his bruises I was worried he might have broken a rib when he was being attacked by plenty of men.

Me: who was the guy examining you?

Xavier: K9.

Me: is he a doctor?

Xavier: you could say that.

Me: it's either yes or no. Not "you could say that.

Xavier: he studied medicine but he is having a difficult time with financial issues.

Me: which room is he staying in? I need to call him to check you out again. What if you broke a rib?

Xavier: Lona, please sit down I will be okay. Are you not hearing me?

Me: just to be sure, please.

Xavier: check the second room on the right.

Me: I will be right back, stay put.

He got out, struggling so hard. I rushed to him to help him get up.

Me: why are you getting up?

Xavier: I am going with you.

Me: no! You are hurt. Stop being manly about it, please. I will be back right now.

I sat him down again, and quickly checked the room he told me to check. I knocked and he answered quickly, he was on his phone talking to his girlfriend because I heard the word "baby."

me: Xavier needs help.

He nodded and quickly got in the room and took this little bag that looked like a doctor's bag.

Then he went out the room then he followed me and we both went to the room me and Xavier share. He was still talking on his phone with his girlfriend. He kept assuring he he was fine and he will be back next week. That is so cute, I wonder if I will be like that when Xavier leaves for his trips?

Xavier: K9 assure my worried girlfriend that I am fine.

I smiled at him calling me his girlfriend. I could get used to this. His voice when he says baby and girlfriend really send me over the edge.

K9: \*chuckles\* she's doing what any worried girlfriend would do.

He opened the bag, I switched on the light and

examined him again. He checked to see if he had any broken ribs by touching his body. I turned off all the candles.

K9: lucky motherfucker. No broken ribs. Just body bruises and face bruises.

Xavier: painful bruises.

He was about to give him some painkillers.

Me: I already gave him some painkillers.

K9: then I am done here.

Me: I am taking him to a doctor tomorrow.

K9: \*chuckles\* try to convince him.

Me: oh sorry, I am not saying you are a bad doctor or anything. I- ... I am sorry. \*sighs\*

He just looked at me with no smiles or anything I was scared. I didn't mean to offend him, but Xavier needs proper care.

K9: kumoja (it's okay)

Xavier: stop stressing my girl.

K9: I said it's fine. \*chuckles\*

He smiled at me and picked up his bag and I walked him out. I looked at Xavier who was becoming sleepy.

Me: we are going to a doctor. You need to see one.

Xavier: K9 is one.

Me: don't make me feel bad because I already feel bad.

Xavier: he didn't take it to the heart.

me: but you still need to go to a doctor.

Xavier: come to the bed Lona, it is late.

I fixed his pillows and made him sleep properly. I changed into my shorts and baggy top pyjamas. Luckily he didn't see me. Then I got inside the bed, I looked at the remaining roses just smiling at them.

Me: what about the little dinner set on the floor?

Xavier: don't worry about that.

Me: okay.

He pulled me closer to him and I laid on his shirtless chest. I swear I could hear his heartbeat. I blushed because in a weird way this was so romantic. I heard his light snores and I knew he was sleeping. I wrapped my eyes

around his waist but not in a painful way. After a long time, of me just staring at his tattoos and bruises, I eventually fell asleep. I woke up to things shuffling, I groaned waking up. Xavier was up and looking for something.

Xavier: damn, I woke you up?

Me: yes. It's okay. What are you looking for?

Xavier: painkillers. My body hurts like kak (shit)

Me: they are on my side drawer. Don't take a lot okay?

Xavier: okay.

I tried going back to sleep but it was useless because my sleep did not even come back, so I woke up to go brush my teeth. After I was done, I washed my face. When I returned to him, he was sitting on the edge of the bed. He looked at me, and motioned for me to come to him.



Xavier: come here.

I walked to him confused. He sat me on his lap. This dude is hurt and he wants me on his lap.

Me: Xavier you are hurt. I shouldn't be sitting on yo-

He cut me off with a kiss. Like a full blown kiss. I was shocked he licked my lips for entrance and I gave in and the kiss was amazing! Even the little brushes he did on my waist sent me to heaven! Guys I never had a kiss like this. It was so passionate and sexy at the same time. His hand travelled inside my top and still brushed my waist. His hands were making me feel a way I know I haven't felt in all my years of living. I broke the kiss off because I didn't want to move

too fast with him. He pecked my lips, and sucked my bottom lip then he pulled it. He pecked my lips repeatedly. I started giggling. And he chuckled looking at my eyes

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I have always wanted to kiss her, and it was the best for her being pure. I chuckled at her being horny because her eyes became so small. I let her break the kiss off for because I know she doesn't want to move too fast. She's still an unexperienced 18 year old. Her being bullied in her high school life, I know I will have a hard time with her. But I think she is worth the challenge.

Me: you should start packing.

Lona: why?

Me: we are going back to Cape Town remember.

Lona: Xavier I can not just leave. Muller will flip because I haven't even told them I am staying with you.

Me: Lona we talked about this, you will tell them that you do not want to stay with your mom and you hate this place.

Lona: what?

Me: it is the truth.

Xavier: yes but what if mom tells them that I went with you?

Me: trust me, she won't.

Lona: what if Kenny hurts mom and the others? I can not just leave.

Me: Lelona I am not leaving you here. It's not safe.

Lona: \*sighs\* are you not hearing me? He could hurt my family.

Me: I do not care about that, your life is important to me more than them.

Lona: well I care about them.

Me: why? They treat you like shit.

Lona: that doesn't mean I should treat them like shit.

Me: Lelona, listen to me for once! \*shouts\*

She got quiet and looked at me with fear in her eyes. I regretted shouting at her because I do not want her fearing me. She stood up from my lap, and I sighed.

Me: I can not just leave you in danger. You are coming with me. I am sure Kenny will do nothing to your family he respects your brothers.

he is messing with you because he knows how I feel about you.

I stood up even in pain, and slowly kissed her. She smiled in the kiss and I knew she was going to say yes.

Me: I only want to protect you.

Lona: fine. Let me pack.

She chuckled. I smiled at her giving in to my charms. I went over to my bag, and she stopped me.

Lona: what are you doing?

Me: trying to pack.

Lona: I will, do not do that. You are injured. Sit on the bed.

Me: you are exaggerating my injuries.

Lona: just sit on the bed and hush.

I smiled and slowly sat down while I was in pain. She packed my things then packed hers. It was taking a long time, and I was getting sleepy. The medicine was working.

Lona: I will book a late flight. You need to sleep.

Me: no. We need to go now. The quicker we are out of here the safer you will be.

Lona: and you. Your safety is important too.

me: yeah.

She took her phone and started booking flights.

Me: I will pay.

Lona: you will rest. Now do that.

Me: lelona.

Lona: mhm...

Me: use my phone to book flights and put in my bank account details. I will tell you what they are.

Lona: I have already booked yours and I have paid now I will book mine.

I glares at her angry that she would pay but I told her I would pay. I have the most stubborn girlfriend ever. She never listens to me at all, that's what I like about her because she challenges me. But I also hate it when it puts her life in danger. Like yesterday I told her not to get out of the car, but she did. That almost had her kidnapped and raped but as soon as I find where Kenny is. I am killing him, I do not care about any war. He touched Lona twice so he

digged his own grave. And I will help him get into it.

Me: that's not how it is supposed to go.

Lona: look, I like paying for stuff and you always buy me stuff so I will buy stuff for you now.

Me: that is never going to happen.

Lona: stop fussing over petty things and sleep.

I chuckled at her being bossy. After a few minutes she was still packing and I slept.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I watched him sleep again. Thank God because



he talks and I can't concentrate on the packing I am doing. After I was finally done with my packing. I found my diary, well it didn't feel like a diary anymore because my mom has read everything. I wanted to burn it and forget about the things I wrote in there. It surprises me how she would read all the hurt I wrote in there but she would not reply to that by hugging me and telling me everything will be okay, she only replied to the "Xavier's smile" confession, and she reacted with a whooping of my life. What a disaster my life actually is. And I can not believe I am saying this but Xavier and my brothers are the only ones that makes my life better.

Gangsters make my life better! Heee if someone told me I would be dating a gangster at only 18 I would scream saying they're lying. I always told myself I will never date a gangster because they come with trouble. My brothers do heists so they have a less dangerous life their only obstacle is being caught and going to

jail. Gangsters like Xavier have enemies who want you to feel pain. They never find true love because everyone around them is killed. Do I really want that for myself at 18? I mean I was almost kidnapped yesterday! He was brutally attacked if it weren't for JR and Shooter. I would probably have died because of Kenny.

~~

We finally arrive late at night in the airport. The rental cars were taken, and we were waiting for our flight. I kept playing with Xavier's rough hands as he talked to his crew. I knew their names now, it was JR, Shooter, K9 and Wiz. My phone rang and Xavier looked at me. I looked at the called ID. It was my aunt.

Me: I have to take this.

I walked a bit further away from them.

Me: dabawo. (Auntie)

Dabs: uphi? (Where are you? )

Me: ndibuyela eKapa (I am returning back to Cape Town)

Dabs: he!?! Ngexaye ndoda? (What!?! Because of a man? )

Me: dabaw-

Dabs: buyela kulendlu wena ndingekaxeleli uKhazimla noYanga ngalama nyala uwenzayo. (Come back to this house before I tell Khazimla and Yanga about the disgrace you are doing)

[02/17, 16:44] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 21

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

My heart started beating fast, she sounded so angry and I knew she would do it. But if I stay here, Xavier is not going to be happy. Hell he won't even agree for me to stay. Kenny could be roaming around King Williams Town right now, and I am sure he is looking for me.

Me: dabawo andizokwazi. (auntie I can not)

Dabs: uhlalisana nomfana kungaphumanga neCent for wena. Inoba sowutyiwe notyiwa. Kodwa Lelona awuzithandi. Inoba waziyela nakulama ntombazana pha eskolweni sakho njemba waxoka kuthi wathi bafuna ukudlengula. (You're staying with a boy that didn't even pay a cent for you. Maybe he even had sex with you.

Lelona, you do not love yourself. Maybe you even went to the girls at your school by yourself then lied to us and said they wanted to rape you)

Me: \*silently crying\* dabawo. Ndicela ungandenzi Lento. Uyayazi ibuhlungu kangakanani lameko kum. (Auntie. Please do not do this to me. You know how painful that subject is to me.)

Auntie: into endiyithethayo ndithi buya qha. Utata wakho une'worry apha. Hamba uzonatya kulamadoda for uhlala kwiB&B. (All I am saying is come back. Your father is worried here. You go around opening your legs for men to stay in B&Bs)

I was so offended I even had hiccups while crying. I do not even know why I answered her call. She is my mother's best friend and my dad's sister what did I expect!? They all hate me like I did something to them. I would say I am a

bastard child and I remind them of my father's mistress, but I look so much like my mother it is like I am her younger version. Especially in pictures. I know I am her daughter she can not deny me, then why is she treating me like this? I felt hands on my shoulder, when I turned around. Xavier looked at me, he was confused as to why I was crying.

Xavier: what's wrong?

Dabs: uxelele lotsotsi wakho angaboyikisa bonke not mna. Makaye kwintanga zakhe. Inoba zimxakile yilonto esiza kwabantu abalula njengawe. Uyayazi ba angathi umhle and akubize baby wena sowuthatheka umthande. Umuncu, ntombi yam (Tell that thug of yours they may all fear him but I do not. He should go to the people in his age group. Maybe they are too much for him and that is why he went for easy people like you. He knows he can call you

beautiful and baby, and already you are in love.  
You're dumb, my niece. )

Xavier: give me that phone. \*angry\*

I just gave it to him. He was so angry and he doesn't even know why am I crying. He put the phone in his ear, and I looked down. My head was so down, tears fell on the floor. That's how hard I was crying. They do not realise them trying to make me strong only breaks me more and more. I am not being bullied by my school mates or Kayla anymore. Now I am being bullied by my own aunt and mother.

Xavier: do I need to come over there so we can have that talk again?...oh you're her aunt?

\*chuckles angrily\* I know her mom told you we had a talk. Give her the phone.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

I wanted to curse the mother so bad, but I was shocked that it was the aunt. What the fuck is up with this family and hurting Lona?

Me: one thing I do not do is repeat myself.

Her: mxm inoba ucinga unguChuck Norris wena. Baninzi abantu endibaziyo nam abanoku susa kulomhlaba ngemini nje! (You think you're Chuck Norris. There are a lot of people I know that can erase you from this world in just a few days!)

She wasn't saying all of that when I was there. She ran out when she saw the gun. She was making me angrier by the moment. I dropped the call and gave Lona the phone. I am in so



much pain, dealing with this right now will only make me react badly towards everything.

Me: call your mother.

Lona: what?

Me: just do it, Lelona. No questions asked!

She dialed on her phone. She was shaking, whatever her aunt said really made her upset. After dialling she gave me the phone. Her mom answered after a long time.

Lona's mom: yintoni Lelona? (What is it, Lelona?)

Me: fix your bitch ass sister in law or I will fix her for you. You know I do not make empty promises.

Lona's mom: a-a. .. kodwa andikwazi uphatha izinto azenzayo. Ungumfazi omdala. Akasoze

andimamele( i-i... but I can not control what she does. She is a grown woman. She will not listen to me.)

Me: hey hey! I do not give one single fuck. Make a plan. Whatever she has in her chicken head, I will remove in the most unpleasant way. Moenie speel met my nie ek is nie 'n spel nie. (Don't play with me I am not a game)

Lona's mom: he? (What?)

I dropped the call on her dumbass. I swear if those bitches jeopardize my relationship with Lona, they will pay. It has been a long time since I killed someone probably like 1 or 2 weeks. And my ego is craving for someone's miserable cries for help. Lona was still looking down, I picked her head up, and hugged her. That only made her cry worse. It confused me, hugs are supposed to help but it looks like mine triggered her more. I even thought my black

plain t-shirt was going to be soaked in her tears but eventually she stopped.

Lona: I am so sorry.

Me: it is okay. You know I will always be here for you.

Lona: maybe I should really go back. She- she will te-tell my bro- brothers...

She was having these hiccups she was struggling to speak. I hated seeing her like this. Her face was so red, I wanted to forget about my injuries, go back to King Williams Town and kill that bitch for making my wife feel like this.

Me: you are not going back there. Your mom will sort it out.

Lona: but she also ha- hates me.

She cried hugging me again. I looked at the gents who were looking at me in smirks. They were surprised I actually have feelings for a crybaby. Trust me, I am also surprised I am not annoyed yet. I brushed her back, and whispered in her ear

Me: baby don't let them get you down like this. I promise everything will be okay.

Lona: I know her, she will tell them.

Me: fine, I will tell them myself if I have too!

Lona: no! That's a even bigger disaster.

Me: I am trying everything to make you stop crying my lief (love) but it seems like it's not working. Tell me what I should do, and I will do it. Please just stop crying.

I wiped her tears away frustrated that she is still crying. She sniffed and remained with hiccups.

Lona: I am done now. I just need- need a nap.

Like clockwise our destination was called and I held her hand and walked to the boarding planes. After everything, we were finally in the planes. She looked out the window all sad and I did not like it one bit. She was so sad, I could feel it even in myself. I wish she could see how wonderful she is in my eyes, maybe then she will stop listening to other people's opinions of her. I held her hand and kissed it, she smiled painfully and laid her head on my shoulder.

Me: I don't like seeing you like this.

Lona: I am sorry.

Me: she should be sorry, not you. What did she

say anyway?

Lona: I do not want to talk about it please.

Me: it is okay. You should take your nap. You might wake up refreshed.

She nodded, after she pecked my lips she tried to sleep. Wiz looked at me and mouthed if she is okay. I nodded. But I want her aunt dead, I do not care how. But I do want it to happen.

~~

We arrived in Cape Town and I told Lona she will stay with me until her brothers know she is in Cape Town. When we went inside my house, she was looking at everything in awe. My interior design was mostly black and white. Black was my favourite color.

Lona: wow, you live in this big house alone?

Me: no one to share it with.

Lona: yeah right.

Me: \*chuckles\* why are you so sure I have hoes?

Lona: it's the woman instinct in me.

I chuckled and just walked to my bedroom. The house was clean because my maid cleans it every 4 days a week. My room had a huge closet and I wish that none of my hoes left anything that will make Lona angry. I will have to drop all the hoes I had, damn. But I guess my baby is worth the sacrifice.

Lona: Xavier. ..?

I looked at her from the door of the closet. She was holding a g-string.

Lona: so, let's talk about the hoes.

Me: \*sighs\* they are all going to be gone.

Lona: I am not mad because it was before we dated, so now we are dating. I would love a little bit of respect. Dirty lingerie is not what I like seeing in my hubby's drawer \*chuckles\*

Me: you won't see it again babe.

Lona: I am serious, one wrong hoe move and we are done, Xavier.

She wasn't smiling at all anymore. I nodded because I really am going to drop my hoes for her, but also needs to know I am a man, I have needs. But I won't tell her that right now because she will feel pressured to have sex with me, and I don't want to pressure her because I might end up losing her. I don't even know who put that dirty lingerie there.



Me: baby, trust me. They are gone, you are the only one now.

Lona: mhm.

I walked closer to her and kissed her cheek. I took the g-string from her and threw in the bin that was in the bathroom. When I went back to the room, she was sitting on the bed and looking into her hands.

Me: fede? (Sharp?)

Lona: ndimoja ntwana. (I am okay, dude.)

I looked at her confused as fuck. I like how different she is from the girls that are always ready to jump on my dick. She laughed at my facial expression.

Me: I think I like you being all princess like and being a crybaby.

Lona: of course you do \*rolls eyes laughing\*

Me: anything you want to do before we had off to sleep?

Lona: you sleep a lot.

Me: medicine makes me sleep. You aren't hungry?

Lona: no. I will just watch TV.

I drank the painkillers and went downstairs to order some pizza from the television I had in the lounge, I asked them for some vegan pizza shit, standard size for her then I brought myself large but i didn't buy that vegan shit . I brought the triple decker with extra cheese. I went back upstairs. She was watching Bad Girls Club on Vuzu Amp, she was so intrigued by the show, I could see it in her facial expressions.

Me: got pizzas for us.

Lona: pizza? I can't eat pizza.

Me: do not worry, I asked the worker if there were vegan pizzas and he said yes. So you can eat pizzas.

Lona: \*laughs\* what if I do not want pizza?

Me: then I will forcefully shove the pizza down your throat. \*chuckles\*

Lona: so much anger. \*laughs\* you should be on the bad girls club.

Me: hell no.

She chuckled, I went to change into some basketball shorts so I can sleep. I was shirtless and I went inside the bed. She looked at me, more like stare at me. I grinned at her always interested in my tattoos. I moved closer to her

Me: your show is back on. \*smirks\*

Lona: mxm.

She laid on her stomach and she was next to me. She touched my neck, more like brush it softly looking at my rose tattoo on my neck.

Lona: didn't this hurt?

Me: a little bit.

Lona: liar! It did a lot. \*smiles\*

Me: I was high and very drunk that day. So it didn't hurt that much.

Lona: why a rose on your Adam's apple?

Me: \*shrugs\* just to fill up the space.

Lona: you're crazy. Do you know how painful tattoos are? And you did this one just to fill up

the space? Wow \*laughs\*

Me: I told you it wasn't that painful.

I heard the house phone ring indicating someone wanted to be let in the yard. It must be the pizza, I went downstairs with my wallet. I let the scooter driver in the yard with the pizzas. When I opened the door, the dude was smiling at me. I just took out the money, gave it to him and took the pizzas. He noticed I wasn't the smiling type, and just left. I closed my door, and walked upstairs with the pizzas. My wife was still caught up on the television show. I gave her, her pizza and placed mine on the bed. I was about to walk back downstairs but I was tired as fuck from the injuries.

Lona: sit down. I will get the drinks myself.

Me: I am fin-

Lona: Xavier, do not make me drag you to this bed. Now sit down, I will be right back.

She quickly went downstairs and I sat down in pain. I was even sweating, I wiped my sweat and drank some painkillers again. After that, I ate a few slices, then she finally came back.

Lona: sorry, I couldn't find cups \*laughs\*

She gave me a cup full of coke, I placed it on my side board. I felt her looking at me, and I knew why but I just wanted to mess with her. She cleared her throat because I didn't look at her. I finally looked at her licking my lips, with a charming smile.

Lona: you are forgetting something.

Me: a kiss? \*smirks\*

I made my face into a kissing face, she laughed so hard I thought she was going to fall on the floor.

Lona: you look so cute.

Me: I never been ugly. \*chuckles\*

Lona: so cocky \*shakes head smiling\* I was going to say you are forget to say thank you.

Me: thank you, baby.

I smiled, and she leaned closer to me a quick kiss. I could still get used to her lips being so soft. She smiled, and started eating her food. I admired her when she ate her food. She had this cute facial expression on her.

Lona: please stop staring I am trying to eat.  
\*blushes\*

Me: can't I admire what is mine?

Lona: stop. \*blushes\*

Me: come here. \*licks lips\*

She blushed and I decided to lean in and kissed her slowly. She smiled into the kiss, she broke the kiss off by pulling my bottom lip. That surprised the fuck out of me, I held her neck not wanting the kiss to end. She giggled and continued with the kiss. Damn, what is this girl doing to me?

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.



.

after the kiss, he stared at me. Like stare at me from my hair to my lips again. I blushed because I could never get tired at how he looks at me. Then his eyes looked up and he looked into my eyes.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* your eyes are small.

Me: what's wrong with them being small?

Xavier: \*smiles\* you will understand later.

I rolled my eyes smiling, and continued eating. The way he kisses me always makes my panties wet. Should I be feeling like this? We just started dating and it gets so hard to resist him.

~~

I woke up to the bed empty, I frowned and

looked around. When I got out of the bed, I shook my head because I slept in my clothes I blame Xavier because we were talking so much last night I slept late . After brushing my teeth and doing my morning routine I changed my outfit into denim jeans with a black bodysuit top and a denim crop jacket with my white Adidas sneakers. I let my hair loose. My phone rang and I saw it was Muller. My heart started beating up so fast, I was scared auntie called him and told him. I answered the call in fear.

Muller: uphi? (Where are you?)

Me: I... Cape Town.

Muller: \*sighs\* I thought I told you to stay in King Williams Town.

Me: I couldn't, if I stayed there I would've killed myself. They were really bullying me. I don't want to go back there.

Muller: \*sighs\* fine. Auntie called me last night saying you weren't sleeping at home because of your boyfriend but I told her you don't have a boyfriend.

I panicked for a bit, but I came up with the quickest lie.

Me: she's delusional. You know how they are. She must've mistaken the Uber driver helping me with the bags as my boyfriend.

Muller: yeah. I will let you know when I am back in King, I want you there too so we can solve all of this petty shit.

Me: okay.

Muller: talk to you later, I will send some money for groceries, we left the fridge empty. Bobby came with us so you will be alone. Love you, lil sis.

Me: thank you, love you too.

We both hung up and finally breathed. I lied to Muller and he thinks I am at home, he trusts me so much. He actually listens to my word over auntie's. Wow, this is actually an advantage for me. I walked downstairs. Xavier was watching some soccer shirtless with Scrappy. I could still see he had the bruises. I smiled and greeted them. Scrappy was surprised I was there.

Scrappy: wat gaan aan? (What is going on? )

Xavier: we're dating.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POPOV --

.

.

Scrappy looked at me and I already knew what he was thinking. Lona just smiled and walked to the kitchen.

Scrappy: Muller will kill you.

Me: let me worry about that. Not you.

~~

I parked at my uncle's yard, and there was a woman getting out of the house. When I got out my car. I was shocked to see Lona's mom, well I think that's her. But she had on a weave with makeup, she looked too different but looked exactly like her. She was wearing heels and she got in her white Mercedes G Wagon. She drove past me while I stood there shocked. What the fuck did I just see?

[02/17, 16:45] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 22

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I couldn't even go after the car because she was driving so fast. I quickly walked in the house and started looking for my uncle.

Me: Ghost! \*shouts\*

Fifi: he's not here. He went out an hour ago.  
\*smiles\*

Me: tannie (auntie), who was that?

Fifi: what happened to your face!? \*worried\*

Me: who the fuck was that!? \*shouts\*

Fifi: who? \*confused\*

Me: the woman who just went out right now. She was driving the G Wagon. She is Lona's mother!

Fifi: no, Sisipho does not have any children. I think I would know if my best friend had children. \*chuckles\*

Me: she is Lona's mother! It is that fucking bitch! She was here to hire a hit on me. Are you fucking protecting her!? \*shouts\*

Fifi: okay, Xavier. Calm down. I will not have you speak to me in that tone. I am telling you Sisipho, my best friend, does not have any children. She can not have kids due to medical issues.

Me: I swear, tannie. She looks just like Lona's mother...

Fifi: or you are just paranoid. Sit down and I will get you something to drink. People look alike everyday.

Me: yeah, maybe my eyes are fooling me. I hate that bitch so much that I start seeing her  
\*chuckles\*

Fifi: now, tell me what happened to you.

Me: Kenny happened.

Fifi: what? When did this happen?

Me: he sneaked an attack on me in Eastern Cape.

Fifi: what were you even doing there, tell me again.

Me: had to go check on Lona

Fifi: does this Lona know the sacrifices you make for her?

Me: yes. And she appreciates every single one.  
\*chuckles\* she is different from the girls I used to have. She is a crybaby, but sometimes she loves thinking she is bossy and orders me around \*laughs\* and she has this cute expression on her when she eats. And when



she sleeps she-

Fifi: oh my God. \*smiles\*

I looked at her and she was looking at me with tears in her eyes. I was confused what the hell she was crying for.

Me: what's wrong?

Fifi: you are in love.

Me: then why are you crying?

Fifi: I am just so excited! You are going to give me grandchildren. \*sniffs\* she needs to come over for dinner. Tonight, Xavier.

Me: too early. Ghost might scare her \*laughs\*

Fifi: do not diss my baby like that.

Me: \*laughs\* I want to chill with Lona first before her brothers get back and they might want her back in their hometown.

Fifi: where is her hometown?

Me: Eastern Cape.

Fifi: wait, isn't that wher-

Me: Kenny is. I know, but i trust her brothers. They would never let anything happen to her. Kenny respects them. It's me that he likes fucking with.

Fifi: he may respect her brothers but his hate for you is stronger than the respect he has for them. She can not go back there. You are sending her to her death. And I have not even had my grandchildren yet.

Me: you are going to wait a long time for that.  
\*laughs\*

Fifi: just bring her to dinner today.

The door opened, and I heard Ghost talking.

Ghost: I want the money cleaned in less than 24 hours or it is not going to be a great day for you laaitie. (kid)

He came inside the kitchen and immediately dropped the call, and looked at me. I knew he was upset over my face bruises.

Ghost: who did it?

Me: you dropped a business call for these tiny bruises? \*chuckles\* they are healing.

Ghost: who did it?

Fifi: Kenny. He was in Eastern Cape.

I looked at her, she smiled and shrugged her shoulders. I was going to tell him after I stressed him for a while so he can agree to help me with the war because I was going to kill

Kenny after I find him.

Ghost: what the fuck were you doing in Eastern Cape!? \*annoyed\*

Me: I had to go protect Lona.

Ghost: this Lona will start to get on my nerves if she make you think irrational.

Me: trust me, she is the only reason a war hasn't started.

Ghost: he sneaked an attack?

Me: that is the only way he would ever lay a finger on me. That weak laaitie thinks he can do anything he wants. I want him dead.

Ghost: fuck a war, let us do this.

Me: fifi and Lona will go to the safe house for a while.

Fifi: wait! Why don't you guys just call his father and tell him to control his son otherwise, he

might find him dead. Instead of killing him right away, send a warning first.

Me: I do not care about warnings. I want him dead.

Fifi: I hate the safe house. And I am sure Lona will hate it too.

Ghost: I will think of a plan.

Fifi: can you believe Zay thought Sisipho had a daughter and it is Lona \*laughs\*

Ghost: \*chuckles\* Sisipho and children?

Me: she looks exactly like her mom, it's just the weave and lifestyles that are different

They shook their heads laughing not believing a thing I said.

~~

I walked inside the house, and I saw everything was clean. I smiled that she cleaned the house

because I was going to sort everything myself when I came back from my uncle's house.

Lona: you are back.

Me: yeah. Ghost was away so I had to wait for him.

Should I tell her about the lookalike situation? I decided not to because I might be the wrong one here. She came and reached over to give me a peck on my lips.

Lona: are you okay?

Me: yes.

Lona: your mind just seems like it is all over the place. You are too quiet .

Me: I am fine. Ghost gave me permission to kill Kenny but I have to wait a few days first.

Lona: murder is the last thing I want to talk about please.

Me: what's wrong?

Lona: I keep seeing the dead bodies I saw that night whenever I sleep. The event keeps replaying in my head like a broken CD.

Me: want sleeping pills?

Lona: no. I will be fine. I have a therapy session when I return back to school I will be fine.

Me: okay.

I wanted to ask her about the safe house, but I kissed her first so she can agree easily.

Me: how would you feel staying in a safe house?

Lona: what is that?

Me: it is a small house in the middle of nowhere. No one knows the location except Ghost, and

there is no Internet connection or anything only food and books plus games for boredom. It is a safe house. No one can hurt you there.

Lona: I have school.

Me: I kno-

lona: then you know I can not go.

Me: let me finish.

Lona: sorry.

Me: it is for a little while until we sort things out after I kill Kenny because Kenny's father is very dangerous.

Lona: Muller wants me back home when he is done with the job.

Me: he will have to wait.

Lona: no, the safe house will wait.

Me: lona-

Lona: baby.



I just chuckled at her being stubborn. She smiled at me, I licked my lips shaking my head.

Me: you have to listen to me.

Lona: I am.

Me: when does Muller want you back in King?

Lona: after he is done with the mission.

Me: so next week.

Lona: yes.

Me: what if Kenny is there and he is waiting for you to get there an-

Lona: I will be with my brothers at all times. I won't even go to town. So don't worry.

Me: maybe I should come with you.

Lona: no. You are going to stay here. Stop being paranoid. I will be okay.

Me: you will call me in case you have any problem.

Lona: yes. \*rolls eyes smiling\*

Me: I am serious

Lona: I know you are. Are you hungry?

Me: Lelona...

Lona: yes Xavier, I will call you if I have a problem. Stop worrying, you should be worried about your injuries.

Me: I am feeling better.

Lona: are you hungry?

Me: are you going to cook? \*smirks\*

Lona: no. \*laughs\*

I looked at her, she laughed even more. I don't mind not being able to cook but at least she should be able to do something besides clean.

Lona: I'm joking babe, I will cook. I thought you liked takeaways.

Me: not all the time. I want my baby to surprise me sometimes.

Lona: well you should buy groceries so I can surprise you.

me: I think Gladys bought some food.

Lona: Gladys...?

Me: my maid.

Lona: oh...

Me: don't worry, she's old enough to be my mother \*chuckles\*

Lona: I just said oh, nothing else \*laughs\*

Me: I know when girls say oh, it means something bad.

Lona: eshee \*laughs\* you think you know everything about females.

Me: I know I do. \*smirks\*

Lona: okay, Xavier.

She walked over to the kitchen. I followed closely behind her. The kitchen was spotless and that confused me because I remember Scrappy making a big mess when he wanted some food. That time Lona was in my room.

Me: you should've forced Scrappy to clean his mess.

Lona: I am not that mean.

Me: once you start doing things for him, he will take advantage. Trust me I know.

Lona: \*chuckles\* stop being mean, and sit down.

Me: fine, don't listen to me. \*smiles\*

Lona: have you taken your medicine?

Me: yup.

She started making a sandwich for me. Filled with cheese, tomatoes, lettuce and ham. Then she made some juice for me. And gave the plate to me and juice with a smile on her.

Me: I could get used to this.

Lona: here you go ruining a moment with your cocky comments. \*chuckles\*

Me: oh we were having a moment \*smiles\*

Lona: no, I am just imagining things. \*sarcastic\*

I laughed at her being sarcastic to me. I pulled her closer to me. And kissed her she blushed and grinned.

Lona: what was that for?

Me: can't I kiss my girl?

Lona: \*laughs\* I didn't say that.

Me: I just really admire you.

Lona: \*smiles\* who would've thought the tough Xavier would be this soft.

Me: I'm never going to be romantic with you again

Lona: I am not saying that baby.

She smiled, pecked my lips repeatedly until I smiled. She giggled.

Lona: I just didn't expect you to be this sweet. First time I saw it was very scared, you looked way too mean.

Me: and you were the biggest crybaby in that house. And you still are. You were dramatic too

Lona: I am not dramatic.

Me: baby, you pulled Kayla to another room just to talk to her.

Lona: I don't like talking around people I don't know.

Me: \*chuckles\* okay, if you say so.

Lona: \*smiles\* mxm.

Me: my aunt wants you to go at her house for dinner

Lona: no.

She looked scared and I just laughed out loud. She folded her arms and looked at me.

Me: she is really a ncaa lady.

Lona: it is way too soon.

Me: we were just talking about you, and she wanted to meet you.

Lona: talking about me? what about me?

Me: she was just asking why I was fighting with Kenny, and the reason for me being so happy.

Lona: and you said it was me? \*blushes\*

Me: yes \*chuckles\*

I placed her in between my legs, and held her waist. I wanted to touch her fat ass so bad but I had to control myself because I have to take baby steps with her even when I want to rush things so much.

Lona: I will go, but what if they don't like me?

Me: trust me they will.

Lona: but-

Me: no buts, let me enjoy my food and my woman.



I kissed her slowly, I made sure to kiss her so good because I wanted her to be horny. The small eyes on her look sexy as fuck. It is really cute she doesn't know when her eyes become small they mean something else. She pulled my lips, breaking the kiss off. I looked at her eyes and they were small. I licked my lips looking at her. She blushed and looked down.

Lona: stop looking at me like that.

me: like what?

Lona: just eat your food.

She walked away laughing. I shook my head and ate the sandwich with some juice.

~~

I looked at her wearing the simple tight blue dress. She had braided her hair in two braids. She looked very beautiful. The dress showed

off her curves in the most sexy way ever. I wore my blue t-shirt with a black Jean, with blue cap and blue sneakers.

Lona: copying my style, I see.

Me: nice try \*smiles\*

She smiled with me and we went to my uncle's house. We got there and I remembered what I saw yesterday.

Me: what is your mom's name?

Lona: what?

Me: your mom's name.

Lona: why are you asking?

Me: there is no valid reason for it.

Lona: don't tell me your planning to research

about her. I will be very annoyed.

Me: no, Lelona. Just tell me her name.

Lona: Isipho

Me: not Sisipho ?

Lona: no. Isipho.

Me: okay. ..

Lona: why are you asking?

I need to research on Lona's mom because her having someone who looks just like her still confuses me a lot. I need to get to the bottom of this.

Me: I told you, I do not have a valid reason.

Lona: well what is that reason?

Me: just wanted to know for the sake of knowing

She didn't believe me so, she just rolled her eyes and walked towards the door. I shook my head because I didn't want us to have an argument right before we have dinner with my uncle and my aunt. I caught up with her and held her waist from the back and kissed her cheek.

Me: I I am not going to do anything to her. I promise.

She looked back at me and smiled. I can not believe I am being controlled by a woman. Love is really the strangest thing ever. I don't want to admit it but if this girl said she wanted someone dead, I would do it in a heartbeat. She could tell me to jump in a river full of sharks. I would do it just for her. I chuckled in disbelief at how whipped I am. I opened the door, and

walked in with her. I could see she was nervous so I held her hand to assure her everything will be okay.

Me: Ghost!

Ghost: dining room!

I knew we were a bit late because Lona had to braid her hair. That's why she was also nervous because she didn't want them to say she's rude.

Fifi: and we finally meet the famous Lona.

Lona smiled and looked nervous as hell.

Lona: good evening.

Fifi: hey, I am Refiloe and this is my husband

Xander. He is Xavier's uncle.

Lona: it's very nice to meet you.

Fifi: likewise. \*smiles\*

They started talking and talking about so many different things, my uncle and I started getting annoyed.

Ghost: you will call her in time for dinner. We will be in the man cave.

Fifi just waved us off and started talking to Lona again. I smiled and left them there and followed behind my uncle. We watched some rugby while drinking beers because the dinner was taking a lot of time.

Ghost: she's pretty. I will give you that.

Me: I know.

Ghost: what will her brothers say about this?

Me: we will cross that bridge when we get there.

Ghost: so you pushing her to a kitchen counter was your way of charming her? \*laughs\*

me: don't start.

Ghost: she is not your typical type but she's good for you. I see the way you look at her. She's good for you, but don't let her change you in the game.

Me: meaning?

Ghost: the first time I fell for Fifi I became weak, everyone started challenging me and disrespecting me because when you're in love. You try everything not to disappoint your girl but remember the hustle never stops. She shouldn't interfere with your money or game.

Me: she won't.

He nodded. And I looked away upset that Ghost wants me to be more tough but he's soft as fuck with Fifi.

{NEXT WEEK}

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

Xavier: you will call as soon as you land.

Me: yes

Xavier: okay, be safe. And as soon as a problem resurfaces. Call me quickly

Me: I will.

Xavier: I am serious, baby.

Me: I am too.

Xavier: when you will come back?



Me: I will talk with my brothers so I can come back early.

Xavier: okay. See you then.

Me: I will miss you.

I pouted looking at him. I really will miss him. This week has been amazing, we bonded over everything. And he lets me be me. The dinner with his family was also amazing. Fifi really likes me, and boy am I happy about that.

Xavier: I will call you everyday.

Me: bye.

Xavier: bye.

He let me go and I went to do everything so I can get in my flight. When I was done, I finally got on the flight. When I finally arrived. I saw

Muller & King I ran to them with my bag and hugged them.

Me: I missed you guys so much!

Muller: missed you too lil sis.

King: what happened to your cheek?

He seen the remaining small bruise from where Kenny punched me. Words got stuck and I didn't even know how to reply.

.

.

.

Guys my battery is on 3% and I'm at my village that is why I am so busy . I will try to find a charger though there may be mistakes in the post

[02/17, 16:45] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 23

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

They both looked at me and I was utterly stuck with no lie in my mouth.

King: Lelona.

Me: please just drop it.

Muller touched my face and checked the bruise out. I know he was angry far more angry than he could explain.

Muller: I don't want to cause a scene here.  
Masambeni. (Let's go)

Muller took my bag and walked first. When we were inside the car. That's when he exploded.

Muller: who the fuck did this to you! ? \*angry\*

Me: can you please just drop this?

Muller: I will not fucking drop it!? You're our little sister and I swear if you dare to fucking tell me to drop it, I will lose it.

Me: mom.

I didn't know what to say so I lied. I can not tell my brothers I was with Xavier and Kenny accidentally punched me. That would cause a huge havoc situation. I didn't want trouble at all,

and mom deserves what's coming to her for treating me so badly. I didn't even know if I should tell them about the whip situation. They both looked very angry shocked that our mother would "punch me". The guilt kept eating me alive when he drove off in anger. The car was moving so fast I was scared he would crash the car. As soon as we arrived home, he parked in the garage and jumped out of the car.

Me: Khazimla!

Muller: stay out of it.

Me: I am already in it. Please let it go. It will make matters worse.

Muller: do you see your cheek!? Matters are already worse. I need to sort this out once and for all.

He stormed inside the house, and King helped

me with my bag.

Me: can you tell him to not overreact.

King: mom needs to stop this madness. And Muller is the only one she listens to.

Me: I don't want to cause tension in the house. I will be the bad person.

King: no. That's not true at all, she is the one who keeps creating the tension and all of this will end today. Come on.

We walked inside the house, and I regretted returning because when I stepped in my aunt glared at me, mom looked angry.

Mama: kutheni uxoka ngam nje wena? (Why are you lying about me?)

Me: ma?

Mama: uthi nya .

Me: mom, please don't do this. You know you're the only who did it. Don't make me look crazy.

Right now tears were falling, not because I was scared of her but because the guilt was eating me alive. She looked at me so sad, I wanted to come out with the truth but I just looked down.

Muller: here's what's going to happen. You will apologize and she's off the chores for a while until I don't see the bruise on her.

Me: Khazimla it's oka-

Muller: quiet!

I shut my mouth up real quick and I felt really bad. I don't know why I am like this, maybe

because I know she didn't take part in this bruise.

Mama: Khazimla awuzondi xelela mandenze ntoni endlini yam! (Khazimla you won't tell me what to do in my house!)

Muller: ndibhatala yonke ikaka elapha ndizokwazi. (While I'm still paying for everything shit that is here I will.)

Mama: bonanje masive utata wakho uzothini ngalento! (You know what let's hear what your father will say about this!)

Muller just shrugged carelessly. Mom got so angry she stood up and tried to come beat me up, but King stood in front of me.

King: yintoni na olady ingathi ungumntana ezway uzenzayo. (What is it Mom you're acting



like a child)

Mama: Yanga, ungandixeleli ukholelwa lento!  
(Yanga don't tell me you believe this thing!)

King: unemibala elimnyama ngexayakho! (She has a dark bruise because of you!)

Mama: unenza nindijikele (she's making you turn against me.)

I walked to my room and just laid on my bed. I couldn't stay there for that fight because it was about me. I called my boo since I missed him so much. I wanted my mind to get distracted by all the mess my family has. He answered very quickly.

Me: baby...

Xavier: my lief. (My love) wat gaan aan? (What's going on?)

Me: why would you say that? You said I should call you as soon as I get home. I am home.

I heard the door being knocked. I hid my phone under the pillow and ran to the door so the person doesn't suspect anything. I opened the door and it was Muller

Muller: ugrand? (You're okay?)

Me: yes.

Muller: ubuthetha. .. (you were speaking...)

Me: I was just giving myself a pep talk.

Muller: I don't want you to hate your home. That's why I was tough on mom because that's when she'll talk treating you differently.

Me: I hope so.

Muller: okay, I will be in my flat if you need me

I nodded and he walked away. I breathed, then I locked the door. When I sat on the bed, I took my phone and Xavier was still on the line.

Me: sorry about that.

Xavier: what's going on?

Me: Muller handled the mom situation. We will see tomorrow if she treats me differently.

Xavier: I knew I liked him better than the other brother.

Me: don't Diss King.

Xavier: jammer baba. (Sorry, baby.) \*laughs\*

Me: never say baba again because that sounded so weird. \*laughs\*

Xavier: I miss you.

Me: really now... \*smirks\*

Xavier: don't push it.

Me: I miss you too. More actually.

Xavier: right now I would be cuddling, watching soccer and kissing you then my day would be all made.

me: you're just trying to make me blush.

\*smiles\*

Xavier: I am serious. I miss our cuddles. You need to hurry up and come back.

Me: it's 2 weeks left.

Xavier: feels like eternity.

Me: \*blushes\* and you said you weren't the romantic type.

Xavier: I am not. But I am just being honest.

Me: my brothers asked about the cheek bruise from the Kenny fight.

Xavier: what did you say?

Me: I pinned it on mom. I feel so guilty. It's eating me up

Xavier: why? She deserves it

Me: the way Muller spoke with her. It was like she wasn't his mom, it was so disrespectful. I felt really bad.

Xavier: every time you feel guilty you should remember the way she treated you and all that shit will fly off the window.

Me: \*chuckles\* okay, I will try that.

~~

After the call that lasted for hours. I was always laughing and I am sure those that heard me think I have lost my mind. I got on WhatsApp and posted a status saying "who knew I could be this happy. " I smiled just looking at my phone. I can not believe I am actually falling in love. My phone vibrated because I received a message. I checked my WhatsApp and it was Cardo.

Cardo : Rellik is good for you, you even happy now

Me: mxm, if you're going to annoy me don't text me

Cardo : miss you too kiddo.

Me: I don't miss you

Cardo : hahaha very funny

Me: I'm only joking idiot I miss you too, you and Xavier are the only friends I have left.

Cardo : that's because you're too crazy to have more friends.

Me: that's because i dont want new friends. I am good with only 2 friends.

Cardo : yeah right

I know Cardo was joking but i was a bit offended that he was right. I can't even make friends. I am stuck with only 2 friends in my life.

I was getting a bit thirsty so I unlocked my door and went to the kitchen. I saw my mother and aunt preparing food. I wanted to turn back so bad but I was really thirsty. When I opened the fridge that's when they stopped talking and both looked at me.

Dabs: nali'ihule lomzi (here's the hoe of the house)

Mama: Ndesh myeke man. Inento eninzi into enalomntana. (Ndesh leave her alone. This child brings a lot of trouble.)

They both kept quiet and I just drank my water and walked back to my room. I was feeling sleepy so, I slept. I don't even want their greasy food! I don't even do anything to them but it's like their day is not okay without them tearing me down. The next day I woke up screaming. I had the dream of the dead people JR and

Shooter shot. I was sweating and having a panic attack scared that I will die here in King Williams Town. I reached over my phone to call Xavier but I stopped because I couldn't call him. He would rush here very fast and that would place him in danger. I tried containing my panic attack then after it got better I breathed better and I just couldn't stop thinking of all the blood I saw. I rushed to take my small blanket then went to the lounge to watch some cartoons maybe they will make me feel better. I didn't want to bother my brothers because they have separate flats outside the house and I was scared of bothering them. After watching the cartoon movie that's when I felt sleepy and it took everything away. I went to to my room and threw myself on the bed and just slept. I woke up to someone banging on my door. I groaned waking up. I walked to the door in a bad mood.

Muller: why didn't you turn the TV off at night?



Me: what? \*tired\*

Muller: Mom says you're not being cooperative with the agreement to not provoke her. You should turn the TV off at night and the lights off.

Me: sorry, I forgot. I was sleepy.

Muller: you guys are starting to irritate me I swear.

He walked away clearly annoyed with the childish behaviour me and my mom had. I wanted to sleep again so I started creating my sleep until it came up. I slept like a baby until I finally woke up shocked that I slept till noon. The time was 4pm and i remembered I haven't eaten anything and I still wasn't hungry but I needed to eat. I walked to sleep the kitchen to boil water for my eggs. After my morning routine and changing into my grey sweatpants and black baggy t-shirt and black puffy slides. I went back to the kitchen. Right now my mom

was preparing samp and beans. I boiled my eggs and eat them with bread after I was done I noticed my brothers weren't there.

Me: baphi ooYanga? (Where are Yanga and Khazimla?)

Mama: andibazi oko bebemke ekuseni. (I don't know, they left in the morning)

Me: okay.

She continued stirring the pot and adding some spices and oil. Dabs wasn't around and that was quite shocking to me because she's usually wherever mom is.

Me: uDabawo umkile? (Auntie is gone?)

Mama: ewe, oko ebeyothenga iVeg etown. (Yes, she went a long time ago to go buy vegetables.)

Me: I'm sorry.

Mama: he? (What?)

Me: I am sorry.

Mama: ndiyayazi (I know)

Me: mama-

Mama: ba uyakubetha hamba ngoku usakwazi  
Lelona. (If he hits you leave while you can  
Lelona)

Me: he didn't beat me up. He would never do  
that. He loves me.

Mama: ucacisa njani lombala? ( how do you  
explain that bruise? )

Me: masiyiyeke. (Let's leave it.)

Mama: inyani izophuma and uzosisola ba  
utheni uyenza lento hule ndini rhaa uzokunya  
Lelona man! Uyandinyisa endlini yam ogqiba  
undixelele ndiyiyeke ingathi abantwana  
abandijikelanga wena! (The truth will come out

and you will regret what your are doing you hoe damn you will see Lelona! You're making me live uncomfortable in my own house then you tell me to leave it alone like my sons didn't turn against me for you!)

Me: I. ..

I just walked to my room because I knew if I said another word I will land in more trouble. Maybe I need to just shut up and let this go.

~~

Next day I woke up did my morning routine and into my knee ripped light blue jeans with superstar sneakers and my grey "yeezus tour" t-shirt. My hair was still in the two braids. My brothers were taking me out for shopping and I wanted new sneakers. My aunt was still not back and my uncle plus dad were on a business trip. They are truck drivers so that's why they're never home.

Muller: you are ready?

Me: yes.

We went to town, and I was a bit scared I might bump into Kenny and he'll reveal I am dating Xavier. We first went to Mr Price, and bought new clothes.

~~

After the whole shopping the time was now 3:30pm and I wanted something new.

Me: i want to have a new color weave.

King: what?

Me: I want to have a new weave and my weave should be blonde.

Muller: which salon?

King: blonde? \*laughs\* ndizoybona le! (We'll see about this)

I went to the hairport salon and I had to buy weave and do my hair. So I set an appointment for a week later because I wanted to buy a weave first.

~~

At home we walked inside with us laughing at me having at dumb moment in the car. When we got inside, mom saw my bags and shook her head. I went to my room and placed them on the bed. I called Xavier, and he replied after a long time.

Xavier: yes?

Me: sorry are you busy?

Xavier: a bit.

I heard a mumbled scream in the background and a loud smack.

Me: I will call you later. Bye.

Xavier: okay, bye.

I hung up and just tried to not freak out that he was in the process of hurting someone. I do not want to get involved so I will just keep quiet about it. I went to the lounge and there she was looking mean as ever. My mom could never look happy even if her life depended on it.

Mama: ndiyabona ugqiboba ncuva (I see you have just finished using them)

Me: not now.

Mama: ndithini ungathethi Lelona xa abantwana

bam bebeziATM zakho!? (Why can I not talk  
Lelona when my children are your ATM? )

me: nam ndingumtana wakho! (I am your child  
also!) \*shouts\*

I was very angry because she always had to  
comment bullshit on any little thing I did it was  
starting to create anger inside me.

Mama: mxm.

She looked at the TV again. I was so  
heartbroken and angry at the same time, in my  
anger I screamed and she looked at me like I  
was crazy.

Me: yintoni inxaki yakho!? Ndenza yonke ikaka  
uyifunayo kodwa uyandinyela qho zange



ndenza nix kuwe kodwa undiphethe kakubi ingathi andingowakho. (What is your problem!? I do every shit you want but you shit on me every time I never did anything to you but you treat me badly like I am not yours.)

Mama: hewethu ungandinxoleli mna ndibukele uRhythm City (don't make noise for me I am watching Rhythm City)

I was so defeated because she was so calm and here I was raging with anger. I felt so dumb because clearly she will never listen to me. And I really don't know how and when our relationship got to this point.

mama: inxaki yakho uyibukela too much iTV. Uzotswina xa unomsindo \*laughs\* iraki zininzi kwaDaniel kodwa \*claps hands\* (your problem is you watch too much TV. Screaming when you are angry, mentally unstable people are too

many in the Daniel family.

In my anger I went to the kitchen to grab a knife and when I was about to stab her, she screamed getting up quickly and running away from me.

Me: ndiyakucapukela! (I hate you!) \*cries\*

My brothers appeared in the process of me chasing her. King quickly took the knife from me.

King: uphambene !? (Are you crazy!?)

me: I hate her, I want her dead. Andizohlala apha mna ndifuna ubuyela eKapa. Ndiniwe nguye \*cries hysterically\* (I won't stay here I want to go back to Cape Town. I am tired of her)

Muller: mama kwenzeka ntoni apha? (Mom what's going on here?)

Mama: kutheni ubuza mna! ? Buza lento ibufuna undibulala. (Why are you asking me!? Ask this thing that wanted to kill me.)

King: stop calling her a thing. She's your daughter!

Mama: mxm, ungandixeleli ikaka Yanga'inkosi. (Don't tell shit, Yanga'inkosi.)

Muller: Lelona go to your room.

I walked to my room, but at the same time I wanted to hear what they will say to her. I called Xavier to take my mind off all of this. He answered quickly.

Xavier: baby.

Me: hey...

Xavier: you're okay?

Me: yes. Just thought I should call you since I miss you.

Xavier: I miss you too. The house is very quiet without you.

Me: \*laughs\* really now?

Xavier: can't you talk to your brothers and you come back early?

Me: the way things are going I might come back early.

Xavier: what's going on?

Shit! I forgot how crazy he is. He might even fly over here when he learns I went crazy and almost stabbed my mother. I never want to be that angry again.

Xavier: lelona.

Me: nothing big...

Xavier: what happened?

Me: I almost stabbed my mom.

Xavier: what!?

Me: I was angry and I really regret it.

Xavier: you need me there? This is getting out of control.

Me: no! I will be fine, baby. I promise.

Xavier: you're sure?

Me: yes. Now stop worrying.

~~

After the call. I was getting hungry so I walked to the kitchen but I could still hear them lecturing mom. I didn't want to appear just yet, so I listened to them speaking without them knowing I was there.

Muller: dad talked with you about this. You know her mother is dead, you agreed to not treat her any different.

Were they talking about me?

Me: what's going on?

[02/17, 16:46] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 24

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I looked at them hurt that a secret like this was

being kept from me this whole time.

Me: akango'mama wam? (She's not my mother?)

King: Lelona, that's not what we're saying...

Me: do not lie to me! \*shouts\* that explains why she hates me so much.

Muller: she is your mother. She raised you, therefore she is your mother.

Me: I want the full story.

Muller: when dad gets back.

Me: I want it now! I already know the big secret, you might as well tell me the full details.

I wanted to cry but tears were just not coming out. I was more angry than sad, all my life I was led to believe the woman who ill treated me was my mother but all along she wasn't.

King: let's go sit down.

Mama: hambani naye andinalo ixesha lezonto mna. (Go with her, I don't have time for those things)

I was breathing hard with anger because she still treats me badly she doesn't even care that I just found out something that could change my life forever. My brothers and I sat in the lounge. She, the devil mother, continued preparing supper for us.

Me: what is going on?

Muller: you're our half-sister.

Me: so i'm the bastard child?

King: no.

Me: I don't understand. I look so much like her.



She walked in the lounge looking sad as ever, I noticed she has tiny tears. She was holding back.

Mama: ufana naye, not mna (you look like her, not me)

Me: I don't understand.

Mama: utata wenu webongo wenza isiqibo sojola newele lam wena waba yimpumo yelonyala (your precious father decided to have an affair with my twin sister and you were the result of that betrayal)

Me: that's why we're alike.

Mama: asifani tuu, uthambile nje ngaye. Ndazama ndlela zonke ubengowam ufane nam, kodwa inyan funeka ithethwa awusoze ubengowam- (we're nothing alike, you're soft just like her. I tried everything for you to be mine to be like me but the truth must be told you will

never be mine)

Muller: mama!

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

.

I laid on the doctor's bed feeling defeated. I kept vomiting and not feeling good, at first I thought it was the alcohol but then it went on for days. So now I'm in the doctor's office.

Doc: well the results are in and it is what I expected it to be.

Me: what is that?

Doctor: you are pregnant. Congratulations

\*smiles\*

Me: what?!

What he said next I could not even listen to. I kept replaying the words "you are pregnant" fuck! I am only doing my first year in varsity. Patrick needs to give me money for an abortion. I can't have a baby, I am still a baby.

Me: doctor! I don't care about anything else. I want to abort.

Doc: come back, next week. You need to rethink this. A baby is a blessing, it brings love back into a relationship and even if you do not have anyone you will always have your child's love.

~~

I arrived home with a sad face. No one will want me when I have a baby. I even wanted more sugar daddies but now they won't even look my

way. I miss Khanyi, right now she would've told me what to do. I called Zee even though I don't like her, I need some girl advice right now.

Zee: chommie (friend)

Me: I have a big problem.

Zee: talk to me, babe.

Me: I am pregnant. \*cries\*

Zee: what!? How?

Me: I slept with someone, idiot.

Zee: I know how, but how could you be so stupid? You think Rellik will want someone with some baggage?

Me: I need to abort the baby fast. The only baby I will keep is his.

Zee: that's right!

Me: duhh

Zee: I have a plan, fool.

Me: what is it?

Zee: I read babies bring couples closer.

Me: so what?

Zee: pin the baby on Rellik?

Me: I didn't even get a chance to sleep with him.  
This is a disaster.

Zee: he is going out tonight I think, I saw it on Cardo's status something about a spinning show. We will be there, drug him. Drive him to your place, get the job done.

Me: I can't sleep with him drugged, will his thing even stand?

Zee: wow, you're dumber than i thought. You will take pictures of you guys both naked. He won't know you didn't sleep with him, you will pin the baby on him.

Me: he will kill me.

Zee: you will tell him if you get hurt the pictures will leak.

Me: I will be the one embarrassed! Being a pornstar for a man.

Zee: they won't leak, bitch! \*annoyed\* you think he would jeopardise his relationship with Lona like that? He will start treating you like a golden eye just for the news not to leak.

Me: that is a great idea! Let me look for an outfit.

Zee: and I will get a car for us. Let's hope this plan works.

Me: me too, thanks zee.

We both hung up. I am starting to think I will like this Zee. I searched my drawers for an outfit and I found a black crop top with some short skirt that was high-waisted and some black heels. I tied my hair up and it was curly in

my ponytail. I applied makeup and started preparing for the mess I am about to create. I looked around the house for the drugs I will need. I smiled when I finally found them. Lelona is not going to stay after this, I know how weak she is. And because of that, I will always have the upper hand than her.

.

.

-- ISIPHOS POV --

.

.

I looked at them going to her room to comfort her like someone was dying. Lelona should be grateful I didn't kill her like I killed that bitch I called a sister. Sisipho was always more popular than me even when we were identical twins, people preferred her than me because I was always so mean. I was happy when her

crush approached in back when we were younger, but it seemed as though he was trying to get her through me. I felt betrayed and angry, that's when the hatred I felt for her started to get created. As time went by, in our varsity years I had a boyfriend whom is my husband now. My husband also took a liking to my twin, and I just lost it when he told me the baby she was carrying was his. I planned for her to get robbed and shot to death in her small house. I know I was wrong for killing her but the anger inside of me really did not care. I was heartbroken when I learned the baby survived the shot and murder in her mother's stomach. We just got a call saying my sister is dead and the baby was in the hospital. It was shocking to my husband but not to me. What was shocking to me what that her body was said to be dead but I never saw her dead body. I never really cared about it because deep inside I did feel like she was dead. What my husband asked me to



do 18 years ago was a hard challenge for me. To raise the child that came from your husband's infidelity with your sister! I couldn't treat Lona the same, I just couldn't because she had all the qualities she had. The smile and funny personality people loved so much.

King: mama.

Me: khandiyeke Yanga (leave me alone yanga )

King: umsulwa kuyoyonke lento (she's innocent in all of this)

Me: qho xa ndimjonga, ndikhumbula latlungu ndayiva ngoku uyihlo wayexoka ngobusuku ephuma kodwa ulala nodade wethu. (every time I look at her, I remember the pain I felt when your father lied about night outs only to be sleeping with my sister )

King: okay, ndiyayiqonda utata eberongo ngokuthi khulisa umntana ingathi ngowakho

abe eyazi intlungu ezayizisa. Kodwa wena umhlukumeza akuzolungisa nix. Ixesha alizobuyela. (okay, I understand dad was wrong for saying you should raise the child like your own knowing the pain that it might bring. But you abusing her like this won't fix anything. Time won't go back.)

Me: ndiyayazi, kodwa ndicela into ey1 (I know but I am only asking for one thing (

King: yintoni leyo? ( what is it?)

Me: andifuni abelapha ndiniwe kukhulisa umntana ka Sisipho mna. (I don't want her here I am tired of raising Sisipho's child.)

King: mama uyagula!? Uzoyaphi? ( mom are you crazy!? Where is she going to go?)

Mama: andikhathelelanga makahambe (I don't care I want her gone)

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I was crying in my bed and Muller was just trying to comfort me. I wanted to get the hell out of here. I feel like everything is a big fat lie here. How could I not realize this! ? This is why she hated me so much because I remind her so much of her husband's betrayal. I feel a slight bad because she is a strong woman. To raise the child who will remind you each day of the times to your husband cheated on you will your sister. Not just any sister. A twin! I would go crazy too, but to my husband not the innocent child who never asked for anything. Because I did not force my dad and her sister to have sex nor an affair.

Me: I want to go back to Cape Town.

Muller: I don't want you to go because she's forcing you to go. Don't let people control you like that.

Me: what should I do? Stay!?! Clearly she hates me, I can not believe you guys kept this from me.

Muller: you were too young to understand.

Me: you should've told me as soon as I was 16!

Muller: you are a vulnerable and weak child. You being sensitive, we were afraid a big secret like this would break you. You reacted better than we thought.

Me: next time, tell me. How I will react will be up to me!

That was the lamest excuse of not telling me,

but I decided not to press on it too much.

~~

I could not sleep at all, the time was 8:43pm and I wanted to call Xavier, but he didn't answer his phone. I went ro WhatsApp and the status on Cardo's statuses told me Xavier was really busy. He looked like he was in a party holding a cup, it was a group photo but I was only concentrating on my boyfriend who isn't answering his phone but he is busy with parties. I can not be angry because he is a man, he deserves to have fun, but I wanted to talk to him about how crazy my life is, and he decides to not answer the phone!? That's fucked up.

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

Scrappy: this laaitie has been whipped ever since he has been with her.

Me: hoe jou bek! (Shut up)

Cardo: they are both whipped. Lona is annoying the hell out of me with those love statues.

Me: loos my meisie alleen. (Leave my girl alone)

The gents started laughing. We were hanging out, in the spinning show. It was just me, Scrappy, Cardo, JR, OG, Shooter and Wiz. They were talking about me being whipped because of Lona. I don't even want to lie, but I don't want to admit it either. After a while the fun started and I was getting very drunk. Me and the gents were really enjoying ourselves. I saw Kayla and her friend Zikhona and instantly I was annoyed.

Wiz: nasis'fijo sikaScrappy (here's Scrappy's hoe)

They came to us and I was too drunk to even pay attention to them. Zikhona smiled first while Kayla was eye-fucking me. I got annoyed and continued talking with OG.

OG: ingathi lemedi ibeke wena \*chuckles\* (looks like the girl is checking you out)

Me: I don't care about her.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

He looked so hot wearing a black t-shirt with blue & yellow sweatpants and some sneakers. He looked so sexy I wanted to fuck him right there! I wasn't even paying any attention to Scrappy because he said he didn't anything to do with me so I want nothing more to do with him. After greeting the guys, me and Zikhona walked a far away from them.

Me: I brought eye drops medicine, I heard it makes people sleepy. And it will work fast. He is already drunk.

Zee: okay, let's do this. I will mix up a drink with a dash of a shot then you will add the eye drops and give it to him.

Me: he will never take it.

Zee: I will ask to talk to him and you will come asking for anything from me than make small talk and give him the drink!



Me: okay cool.

I saw her swaying her hips towards the guys' cars. They made their own circle with their cars. She stood next to him and whispered in his ear since the cars were too loud. He got up and she held his hand and walked with her. The boys started laughing and hyping him up. Lona will never be able to control him, he is a man whore. He did not even think about her he just held her hand. I quickly took plenty of pictures of them and I watched them talk then I slowly walked over to them. I made sure I had 3 cups so he doesn't suspect anything when just give him the drink

Me: Zee where's the phone? I need to call our transport.

She gave me the phone, I gave her the cup and I offered Rellik the drugged drink in a cup. He just looked at it and looked at me.

Me: look, I am not trying anything. I respect your relationships with other girl-

Rellik: one relationship with Lona. Only her.

I was shocked that they are already dating! I thought they were friends and not something more. My heart was broken that, that bitch has him before me. But I don't care, I can take him.

Me: I won't try anything, I respect your relationship with Lelona.

He nodded and took the cup, he couldn't even stand properly that much but he still took the

cup.

Zee: I got some weed in the car we came with.  
We can talk properly there.

Me: what are you guys talking about?

Zee: my fling is a gang member in jail and he might have and proposition for Rellik. It will make money for him.

Rellik: azishe (let's go.)

We went to the transport and he didn't even notice I didn't even call the transport. We went to the car, it was one of Zee's flings. Rellik was drinking his cup, and when we were inside, Zee started smoking the joint. I smiled looking at him drinking his drink getting very drunk and the weed will finish him off. She passed the joint to me, I puffed twice then passed it to him. He couldn't even puff properly he was very tired. I

smiled as he passed it to Zee, then it was lights out for him.

Zee: I will call Mzo. We will need him \*chuckles\*

Mzo was the transport guy, and I couldn't stop kissing Rellik even though he was sleeping and not kissing me back. His lips were soft, I just wish he would kiss me back. Mzo and Zee came back, and I had to cover Rellik's face with some shades because if Mzo saw who it was he wouldn't want to help us. Almost everyone is scared of Rellik he would've been shit scared.

Mzo: kuyini lokhu? (What is this?)

Me: just one of my flings I saw here. I am taking him back to my place.

Mzo: ungangifaki ekingeni (don't put me in trouble)

Me: never. Let's just go.

He drove off to my apartment fast. When we got there, Zee helped me get Rellik in my apartment. It was very hard and Mzo drove off without even helping us. I rolled my eyes thinking about how much of a pussy he is. We laid him on my bed and I smiled at her. The plan actually worked.

Zee: let's get him naked I will charge my phone in the meantime.

I grinned nodding, I started by taking off his t-shirt, and damn was I in awe at how beautiful he looked. The tattoos and body just sent me over the edge. Zee came back and I removed his pants and boxers. I bit my lip looking at his dick.

Zee: damn. You're lucky bitch!

Me: I know \*smirks\*

I took off my clothes and I was naked too. Zee took off his sneakers and took a condom from my drawer. I looked at her weirdly.

Zee: I have some sperms in a bottle inside my purse, we will stretch the condom with his dick then pour the sperms in. After that, we take pictures. it will make him think you guys really slept together.

I laughed happily at how smart she is! Then we did what she said then she threw the dirty condom on the floor so it can be the first thing he sees when he wakes up. I got on top of him and made it look like I was riding him and she took the pictures.

Zee: he looks drugged. Hide his face by kissing him.

Me: okay, and I need to take selfie pictures so it doesn't look planned.

Zee: here's the phone.

I took it and took pictures of us kissing, well me kissing him. And me cuddling with him. I laid on him and placed his hands on my ass then I took the pictures of it.

Zee: okay, now send the pictures and don't tell him you have sent them to me. Sleep, cuddling with him and the plan will work itself out.

I smiled and got up to hug her.

Me: thank you, Zee.

.

.

.

.

.

.

outfits they wore

[02/17, 16:46] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 25

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV--

.



.

I woke up with the most painful headache ever. Fuck! I hate hungover. I looked around and I didn't recognize the tiny room. I looked at the girl cuddling on my chest, and I was angry as fuck when I saw it was Kayla! I pushed her off so hard, she woke up almost falling off the bed.

Me: what the fuck is going on!?

Kayla: I think you're smarter than that. \*smirks\*

Me: I will fucking-

Kayla: kill me? \*chuckles\* and risk Lona seeing our beautiful pictures on the amazing sex we had.

Me: if she ever hears about this I will break your neck with my hands!

I rushed to strangle her, but she quickly ran out

of the room. She locked the door quickly and she started shouting on the other side of the door.

Kayla: I sent the photos to a lot of people and if something happens to me. The pictures will reach Lona. So I would be careful if I were you.

In my anger I hit the door, I heard her squeal in fear. Why the fuck was I so stupid!? I looked at the used condom and I was a bit relieved we used a condom. I started wearing my clothes, disappointed that I would get sloppy drunk to a point where I would fuck Kayla, the person that hates me girlfriend so much. I have given her a reason to hurt Lona. Kayla walked in, she picked up the condom and smiled.

Kayla: one round with the condom then the rest

was raw, I knew I liked you for a reason Rellik.

She tried to kiss me, I slapped her so hard she landed on the floor, I was about to kick her on her back.

Kayal: stop! Or else Lona won't ever talk to you again.

I searched for my phone and stormed out the house in anger. I looked at Lona's missed call and guilt ate me up. I called Scrappy to come get me.

Scrappy: nja ye game.

Me: come get me at your whore's apartment.

Scrappy : what?

Me: Kayla.

I hung up because I wasn't in the mood for questions. After 45 minutes of me impatiently waiting there, he finally came. I got in the car in anger.

Me: what the fuck took you so long!?

Scrappy: yo, I didn't tell you to fuck her.

Me: I fucked her raw after round 1 \*sighs\* fuck!

Scrappy: let's go get your car then we can think of a plan later.

We drove to the spot and my car was still there untouched. Maybe because the numberplate was written "RELLIK" and everyone knew not to mess with me, my car has a tracker anyway.

Me: let's meet in my house.

Scrappy: fede (sharp)

We raced to my house, and he won because he was in front of me. When we got in my driveway he got out first and I followed. Inside the house, there was no one and that made me miss Lona. Fuck I shouldn't have even went to that stupid spinning shit.

Scrappy: now explain to me what happened?

Me: I got sloppy drunk, started smoking weed with them and that's when lights were out I don't even remember anything else. Apparently we had sex and after one round I hit it raw, bro

Scrappy: shit. You're in deep shit.

Me: I know.

Scrappy: kill her.

Me: if something happens to her, the pictures

will go to Lona.

Scrappy: she's smarter than she looks.

Me: I can't have her ruining my relationship with Lona.

Scrappy: I will try and manipulate her into telling me what she wants.

Me: thanks man.

I walked him out and I went to my bathroom to shower. Then I wore white t-shirt with light brown sweatpants. I wore my Gucci slides. I decided to man up and call Lona. She didn't answer at first, and my heart started beating fast because I was worried that she knows already and it took me a month to get her. I can't lose her that easily. I called her again worried that maybe something might have happened to her. She finally answered after my 3rd try

Lona: yes?

Me: wat gaan aan? Hoekom het jy nie jou phone beantwoord nie? (What's going on? Why weren't you answering your phone?)

Lona: I was busy. Where have you been?

Me: besig met wat? Is jy OK? (Busy with what? Are you okay?)

Lona: I am okay. I just found out something big though.

Me: what?

Lona: my mom isn't really my mom.

Me: wait what?

Lona: she has a twin and the twin is my real mother, but she is dead.

Me: what!?

That's when everything came back. I have to call Fifi to set up a meeting, I need to talk to this twin. Before I let Lona meet her I need to make sure her motives are okay.

Lona: yeah I know, it's crazy. But I am returning back home tomorrow. I don't even want to stay in this house .

Me: so you're coming back?

Lona: yes, isn't that what you wanted?

Me: it is, and i am very happy. Can't wait to see you beautiful.

Lona: see you then, I have to pack.

Me: okay, bye.

Lona: bye.

I smiled dropping the call. She sent me a selfie of her looking ever so beautiful. I bit my lip



wishing she was next to me so I can kiss the fuck out of her. I texted her replying to the selfie.

Me: damn! the things I would do if you were near.

It had one tick so I knew she was offline. I posted her selfie with the caption. "wife. " and I knew the hoes would start crying about who she is, so I turned off my mobile data. I looked for my Range Rover keys and drove to my uncle's house. When I was there, he answered the door shocking me because usually Fifi answers.

me: ek moet met tannie Fifi praat. (I need to talk to aunt Fifi)

Ghost: wat gaan aan? (What's going on?)

Me: niks groot nie. Ek wil meer weet oor Sisipho.

(Nothing major. I want to know more about Sisipho)

Ghost: sy is in ons kamer (she is in our room)

we walked together there, and I saw aunt Fifi looking very sick on the bed. I was worried because she is never the sick type. She usually falls sick like once a year.

Me: are you okay? \*worried\*

Fifi: yes \*smiles\* I will be fine just a minor flu.

I could sense she was lying because she looked at Ghost and they both had sad faces on them.

Me: I know you're lying but it won't press on it. I need to know more about Sisipho.

Fifi: why?

Me: I just found out she is Lona's mother and everyone in that family thinks she's dead. But she's not dead, I saw her the other day in the yard.

Fifi: she's coming over for lunch tomorrow. That's the only time she has left in Cape Town.

Me: where does she live?

Fifi: she lives in London permanently.

Me: in London? What was she doing here then?

Fifi: she was here on a business trip. And she missed me so she came to visit me. Nothing spectacular.

Me: I will be there for the lunch tomorrow.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I packed my belongings because I wanted to get the hell out of here. I know she wants me out so I will grant her wish. I know my brothers will not want me to go but I am tired of fighting back and forth with their mother.

King: what are you doing?

Me: packing. I am leaving tomorrow. You can't stop me, I have already booked my flight.

King: we want you to stay though.

Me: I don't want to. Not after I heard that bitch isn't my mother.

King: but she is my mother and you should respect her.

Me: sorry.

King: maybe it is best you go to Cape Town to get some break then in June you will spend the holidays over here to mend issues with her. All you need is time.

Me: yes. Thank you for understanding .

King: you leave at night or early in the morning?

Me: early in the morning tomorrow. You will drive me there right?

King: yes. Muller might be there as well or he will be busy comforting mom.

Me: is she still crying?

I am the weak one but she is still crying? OK.

King: this is a hard situation for her and the secret being exposed is opening old wounds for her.

Me: mhh.

King: \*chuckles\* when did you get this mean?

Me: ever since I started hanging out with Xav...  
Cardo.

I quickly changed my sentence because I forgot I haven't told them I am hanging out with Xavier. I haven't even told them I am dating Xavier.

King: what?

Me: ever since I started hanging out with Cardo.

He nodded but I felt like he knew I was lying and he wasn't going to say much about it. He left my room without saying a word and I was so scared I feel like I am busted! I packed my stuff quickly and paced up and down the room thinking of a lie to say when they ask me about it. My phone rang, and it was Xavier. He must miss me to call me twice a day and it hasn't even been 3pm yet.

Me: baby?

Xavier: you should answer the phone like that to me every time I call.

Me: \*chuckles\* someone misses me a lot.

Xavier: more than you can imagine.

Me: I will be there before you know it. My flight is in the morning.

Xavier: Fifi wants to have lunch with you.

Me: really? \*excited\* can't wait.

Xavier: I know you can't. Baby?

Me: mhh mhh?

Xavier: I love you.

Me: what?

I was very shocked. We haven't been dating for that long and already he says "I love you" maybe it's because of the distance or maybe he was saying it to someone else? I sound so stupid because I can not believe a guy like Xavier really

loves a girl like me.

Xavier: I want you to know I love you, and I would never hurt you, intentionally. Without you, I wouldn't survive. Trust me. You're the right in all my wrongs, losing you will be losing my heart. I wouldn't be the same. I would go back to the monster I was before you were the light in the darkness that consumed my life.

Right now I was getting emotional and worried that he was going to die. He never expresses his emotions and when he told me this it really touched my heart.

Me: baby, what's going on? Are you okay?  
Please don't do anything that will put your life at risk.

Xavier: everything is okay.



Me: you promise?

He got quiet, and breathed. I was scared that he was in danger. My heart started beating fast.

Me: Xavier, you're scaring me

Xavier: I promise. Everything is okay.

Me: I hope so

Xavier: I have to go now, I will call you at night.

Me: okay, and Zay?

Xavier: yeah?

Me: you'll never lose me. I love you too.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* bye.

Me: bye.

We both hung up and I wished he was next to me so I could kiss him because I really do love

him. I know for a guy like him to lose all his hoes for me, and to go such a long time without sex and girls. He is sacrificing a lot for me because a lot of girls are willing to jump at the opportunity to have him, yet he... he chose me! I wiped my tears and smiled at myself in the mirror.

Me: I am in love.

.  
. .  
. .

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.  
. .  
. .

Zee sat on the couch and I smiled at her. She is the reason my plan is actually working!

Me: we need to send the pictures to other people incase he kills the both of us.

Zee: does he know he was drugged?

Me: I don't think so, he thinks we really had sex and after the first round we went raw.

Zee: after you pin the pregnancy on him, what if he wants you to abort?

Me: I need to go away for a while and come back when I am 5 months pregnant and it will be hard for me to abort. It will be illegal.

Zee: sorry to burst your bubble but... he doesn't care about the law.

Me: she will. And when she cares. He will care too.

Zee: what about Patrick?

Me: I will tell him to find another bitch. I already am set for life.

I smiled rubbing my growing baby bump. This baby is going to take me to places.

~~

It was the next day and after my morning routine I changed into my pink crop top with blue jeans and light brown fake no sleeve fur. I wore my Fenty Puma white sneakers. I flat ironed my weave so it can be straight. I smiled thinking about how all of this is going in my favour. I ate some breakfast while scrolling through my WhatsApp. My whole mood changed when I saw the picture he posted of her. I rolled my eyes, when he could have all of this. He still wants a boring bitch like her who can't even go a day without crying her ugly face off. She doesn't deserve him, she doesn't even deserve life because she's always complains about how it doesn't go in her favour. Life isn't fair and she should get used to it. Me on the

other hand, life has always been unfair to me and I deserve this break! I made a decision to drop out of Varsity even though I have good grades but I know it will not take me anywhere. I don't even like the course I am in, and I feel like Xavier will take care of me, and the baby. In anger I took my purse and left. The post really ruined my mood. I took a screenshot and sent it to Zee.

Me: this bitch has him whipped, he never posts his hoes.

Zee : don't worry, after all of this. He will be yours!

I smiled because she always had good words. I can't believe I didn't like her at first, she is a great girl! And an amazing friend. I didn't want to tell her Xavier might kill her after he finds out she has the pictures. For safety purposes I have

to get the photos printed out so I can threaten him better. I met up with Partick at Tasha's. He looked paranoid meeting up with me in public because we always meet in hotels or my apartment. After I sat down, he glared at me. I smiled, I am finally going to be free from this ugly old man!

Me: It's over.

Pat: what?

Me: I have better things to do now, and I feel like our deal is pulling me down. So it's over.

Pat: don't fuck with me, Kayla.

Me: goodbye, Patrick.

I stood up and walked away from him, when I was a bit far from him, I smiled and when I was about to call an Uber. He appeared and strangled me, he didn't care about a few people

staring at us.

Pat: you leave when I say you leave, stupid bitch.

I looked at him in fear, I nodded quickly just so he doesn't kill me.

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I smiled at my baby looking fly as ever waiting for me at the airport. He was wearing a black t-shirt with a black bomber baseball jacket with black jeans, he had on a rolled up wool beanie

and black sneakers. I stood there just admiring my man, after a while he noticed me and had the best smile on his face. I chuckled pulling my two heavy bags towards him. He licked his lips, and when I finally close to him, he kissed me. His hands landed on my ass, it wasn't the pervert ass-grabbing kiss. His hands just laid there not moving while kissing me, I think he wanted to see how much I trusted him. And I really did, but I wasn't ready for sex yet. So I removed his hands smoothly by holding his hands, and he pulled away and pecked my lips.

Xavier: let's get you to my house.

Me: I need to get home first, put my luggage there.

Xavier: why don't you keep your bags over at my house, and we go to Fifi's lunch first?

Me: I look like a mess, and you want me to have lunch with her looking like this?



Xavier: you look beautiful. \*pecks her lips\*

Me: can't I shower again and change my outfit?

Xavier: no, you look beautiful.

Me: of course you would think like that \*laughs\*

~~

We arrived in their house, I can't believe he really didn't let me change. I thought he would let me have some time with him to at least lay up with him and be lovey dovey but I guess Fifi really wanted me to come over for lunch. I heard music playing outside the backyard.

Me: it's a party and you let me come here looking like this! ? Look at all those beautiful people, Xavier. You're being unfair.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* you're overreacting, you look more beautiful than those people.

Me: what is up with you being so sweet today?

Xavier: I missed you, you know that.

I smiled and brushed his cheek. He looked better now. He was really recovering from the attack. He opened the door for me, and the lunch table had 3 other ladies there. They all looked sophisticated and here I looked like I just came from a hood party and I didn't take a shower.

Xavier: here she is.

They all turned and looked at me, I saw a woman who looked exactly like Isipho. I just felt dizzy, and everything became blurry then I was on the floor.

.

.

.

.

.

Kayla

[02/17, 16:42] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 11

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

She screamed her lungs out. I just laughed, the pain written on her face was my pleasure.

Me: you'll have to change to another varsity.  
Wait this year out and get into another one next year. I don't want to scare my wife, with you looking like that.

I punched her, then knocked her out.

Me: untie her and put her in the boot.

I ordered the boys. They listened to me, I checked my phone and no new message from Lona so she really must be asleep. I called JR to talk about him being late.

JR: Rellik.

Me: wat gaan aan? (What's going on?)

JR: andiva? (Pardon? )

Me: my wife was unprotected for 2 hours, JR.

JR: harde, mjita. (Sorry, man) bekukho inxaki endlini (there were problems at home)

Me: I don't give a fuck. We'll discuss this tomorrow.

JR: yeah-

I cut him off by hanging up. Scrappy looked at me with a smirk. I know where this was going....

Scrappy: vrou, huh? (wife, huh?) \*laughs\*

Me: (hou jou bek) shut up.

Scrappy: a few days ago you saw her as a kid.

Me: we'll talk about this later on. Now we're going to deal with the Khanyi situation.

Then I walked out of the warehouse. Scrappy

followed me when I drove off with Khanyi in my boot. Fuck, my car will have blood stains. I'll have to properly clean it off. Once I saw we were in the middle of nowhere. I stopped the car. Scrappy also stopped his and parked next to mine. He got out of his car. I got out too.

Scrappy: probleem? (Problem ?)

Me: yeah.

I went to my boot and opened it. I roughly shook her to wake her up. She whimpered in pain but I didn't care, she just sounded like a dog standing in the rain. I pulled her out and she fell on the tar.

Me: she's going to run home, you know you way home right?

She shook her head no. Her hands were still tied together behind her back and her mouth was covered. Her legs were not tied though.

Me: run before I change my mind and kill you.

She hesitated looking at me in fear. I took out my gun from my behind and fixed it to shoot. She quickly stood up and ran. I waited for her to run a little bit faster so she can taste freedom. I aimed and shot her. She fell on the ground hard. I went to her body, and just like always. I aimed correctly, the bullet went right through her head. This created a blood pool on the tar. I pulled her head up with her hair and dragged her towards the car.

Me: call the gents to clean up. Tell them I need this body to get removed from here in 30

minutes, fast!

Scrappy: thought you weren't going to kill her.

Me: changed my mind. My guts told me she'll start ratting about this to everyone. It needed to be done.

He just nodded, and he went to his car. Put on some music and bought the weed. We smoked we waited for the boys to clean this place and get this body out of here.

~~

× 1 WEEK LATER ×

--LONA'S POV--

Omar's funeral went by fast, his family decided to burn his body and have his ashes, they said his body was too ruined to even recognise him



from the car fire in the accident. But they knew their son, and they were sure it was their son . So they only did a memorial service for him where they talked about him a lot. I didn't go to introduce myself there. But I was shocked to know that he told Skylar about me. Skylar was his girl best friend. She invited him to the party and that's when the accident happened. She still blames herself for it but I felt bad that she felt that way because Omar wouldn't want her to feel like that. The exams were here and the Easter holiday was approaching. I didn't want it to come because I'll have to go back to those demons I call family. I don't want that. I received a call from Xavier, he has really been a great friend these days. I might even call him my new best friend. Him and crazy Cardo. They always cheered up my mood.

Me: hey?

Xavier: ja.

I could hear he just woke up. His voice was raspy and so sexy. I can't even deny that he's good looking and sexy. His voice is already amazing when he's full awake but when he wakes up. It's incredible.

Me: aww you just woke up? You can go back to sleep.

Xavier: nah. I just saw your text. Talk to me.

Me: woah, are you always this grumpy when you wake up?

Xavier: talk, Lelona.

Me: I told you don't go to the party now the hangover is too much. \*laughs\*

Xavier: Lelona \*groans\*

Me: sorry. I need a favour.

Xavier: anything.

Me: there is a sale at Sportscene and there's these sneakers that I'm dying for. I'll send you the pictures. I just want you to stand there quickly before someone takes them first.

Xavier: I'll send someone over there. Why can't you go?

Me: I have to start at the campus first. Mr Maybank wants to talk to me.

Xavier: you have classes today?

Me: no. And send a picture of the guy you're going to send over there so I know who I am going to. I just want to get in the shop and pay. I would've asked Muller and King but they're -

Xavier: Lona, I really don't mind.

Me: I don't want you to think I'm taking advantage of your kindness. I really appreciate everything you have done for me.

Xavier: everyday you say thank you to me, and I

still don't know why. \*chuckles\*

Me: I'm being grateful.

Xavier: let's put an end to it now. I know you're grateful, no need to say it everyday.

me: okay. Well I have to go.

Xavier: cool. Talk to you later

Me: bye

Xavier: bye.

I smiled hanging up, then I sent him pictures of the sneakers I wanted. This week has been good, no Kayla drama, no Khanyi drama, my dad is healthy. And most of all my brothers are still okay and safe. The Omar case was still being investigated, I think. Because the last time I heard it was thrown out and ruled it as an accident. Who would want to kill Omar? He was always so nice and sweet whoever did it. I will never forgive them, ever! His parents hired a

Lawyer to bring evidence his car was made that way that day but there wasn't any. The judge dismissed the case after they just brought the case up on assumption. I know a lot can happened in one week. Dr Zwide's sessions help me a lot. I see her 2 times a week, the journal is also a good thing for me because no one knows about it but me and Dr Zwide. It's like I'm talking to someone who won't judge me. I can say whatever I want and not be scared of being judged because of the opinions I have. I rushed downstairs because I needed to rush to the campus. Muller was there, King was not though. He was with X. I just waved at them and rushed out. I walked to the campus and went on Mr Maybank's office.

Me: sir, you emailed me wanting to see me.

Was it even allowed for Lecturers to email

students? I didn't want him to notice I was uncomfortable with this so I forced a smile while my heart started beating fast.

Mr Maybank: yes, how are the sessions with Ricardo Damon?

Me: pardon?

Mr Maybank: he told me how he achieved such a high mark in my exam. You were tutoring him.

Me: yes, on certain days, sir.

Mr Maybank: how much do you charge him?

Me: he's kind of my friend so I don't charge him sir.

Mr Maybank: I want you to tutor 3 of my struggling students. They're willing pay R50 an hour .

Me: really! ? Yes I'll do it sir.

~~

I walked from UCT campus to Sportscene and it was a bit long and I was tired as hell. And the sun wasn't helping either. After a while of walking, Xavier called me.

Me: I'm arriving in the store now.

Xavier: already bought them. Come to Spur .

Me: what!?

Xavier: I already bought them for you.

Me: you can't do that. I don't want you spending money on me.

I know guys, especially guys like Xavier. One minute they're buying you expensive gifts, the next minute they think they own you because of the expensive gifts.

Xavier: already did.

Me: mxm.

I dropped the call, he doesn't listen to me and I hate that. When I say no I wish people would listen to me. I'm not comfortable with guys buying me expensive gifts and he did it, but I told him no already. He called again, and I just turned off my phone. The sun was burning me and it was way far to get home. I switched on my phone, called up an Uber. Then switched it off ignoring Xavier's texts and missed calls. Once the Uber arrived I went home, I was tired and heating up. I'll need a cold shower. Once the Uber parked next to my house, I saw Xavier black Lamborghini. I was shocked he was here already. But why am I surprised this guy's is a speed racer he does this more often.

Xavier: Lelona

Me: I don't think we have anything to talk about



until you start listening to me.

Xavier: I'm all ears.

Me: I do not need your money. I can buy my own stuff and I like buying my own stuff. It's a part of who I am. I understand your girlfriend or girlfriends love you spoiling them but I'm not them. I like spending my own money and not depending on anyone else besides myself and my brothers. Please understand what I'm saying and take it seriously.

Xavier: I do. And I promise this is the last time I do it.

Me: thank you. Now I have to go all the way to the bank to withdraw your R1 100 but I just would've swiped at the store.

Xavier: I'm not going to take the money.

Me: why do I even bother with you? Anyway thank you.

He nodded, I hugged him goodbye. He kissed my forehead then I went inside the yard. Once I was in the house that's when he drove off. The house was empty, I guess my brothers were out. I studied for the exam I was going to write tomorrow.

~~

I checked the time it was 6:00pm I guess I studied till late. I took a picture of my books and posted it on my WhatsApp status with the caption "it's dedication not luck" then I checked other people's statuses and I saw Kayla was partying but she's in the module with me. We're both writing the test tomorrow. I saw her status that was posted just now. It was written "bitches have no life whatsoever" something in me told me it was about me because why would she post that after I posted a picture of my books? She really loves breaking me down and I don't understand why. She has it all, I should be the one jealous of her

yet she's jealous of me. She's got the perfect body, she has a lot of guys that like her, and she has a lot of friends. I'm fat and all the friends I have are like 2 excluding her. Well she's not even my friend anymore. She's too caught up with Khanyi and Zikhona to even see that's she's losing the person that cared about her the most, and that's me. I didn't even reply to her petty drama. If I have no life why is she wasting hers stalking me? I'll never understand Kayla yaz, she bullied me in high-school and she's trying to do it again in varsity, and I can't believe myself! I'm letting her bully me. I'm letting her petty drama affect me. I should just have positive vibes and let karma deal with her. Because clearly she's not on my level. I'll pray for her to get better from all the bitterness and jealousy because those two things are what can kill a person or make them go on the wrong track of life then they'll regret it after it is too late to fix anything. I hope she doesn't

experience that. Although she hates me I don't hate her, I feel sorry for her. She needs love in order to give love and even though she wishes me bad things. I sorta don't want her to experience bad things. I went downstairs to eat, I saw my brothers. They were eating pizza. I just rolled my eyes, they eat so much yet they always stay fit!

Muller: you drank my coke?

I froze and cleared my throat.

Me: yeah. Just one glass.

How was I going to Muller tha Xavier organised someone to guard over the yard? because he didn't feel like it's safe for me to be here alone. I'd rather not because they both have huge egos

so it'll only cause too many fights. He won't understand that Xavier is only my friend and nothing more and nothing less.

Muller: I thought you were off acid.

Me: I am, just craved it for yesterday only.

Muller: you're lying.

Me: uh? What? I. I am not.

Muller: Lelona; I know you like the back of my hand. Who was here?

Me: no one-

Muller: Lelona!!! \*shouting\*

I was scared for my life. When Muller is too angry, he can not control his anger. Last time he beat up Omar. I'm scared he'll beat me up. Even though he promised he would never do that.

Me: it was just Cardo. We were studying here in the house.

I replied with glossy eyes. I hate being shouted. And he knows how vulnerable I am. He sighed once he saw I wanted to cry.

King: someone would swear you two are twins. You both can't control your emotions. You really act the same \*shakes his head chuckling\*

Me: mxm. He knows I hate being shouted.

King: wena uxokela ntoni? (Why did you lie? )

Me: I thought you guys were going to be angry about Cardo being here.

Muller: I talked to him a long time ago. He's harmless.

Me: talked to him? That's why he ditched his friends and came to study with me. Not

because he cared about the test, you guys really told him to look out for me and I was alone that day.

Muller: I told you I would do it. We said it at the party.

Me: i didn't think you were that extreme to force a varsity guy to not enjoy his varsity life because of me.

Muller: not to say he shouldn't enjoy it. Just watch over and hang with you so you don't feel lonely.

Me: so you're paying someone to be my friend? Wow my life is lame. I really have no life \*sighs\*

King: don't say that.

Me: it's true. My brothers have to pay someone to hang out with me. I feel like I am a failure.

Muller: by not having any friends? That's an fucked up failure then.

Me: you're not helping.

Muller: look, your goals should be about getting an education not friends. Why do you even need friends when you have us? Friends come and go but-

Me: family stays forever. \*sighs\* I want girl friends and friends that won't go around fighting everyone when I tell them how my day went. Nor fight my boyfriend in Waterworld.

Muller: I get your point.

Me: and please stop paying Cardo to hang out with me. I want a genuine friendship.

I texted Cardo. I am so disappointed in him.

Me: your payments are over. You didn't have to fake being my friend for money.

Cardo : sorry, Lona. I needed the cash but right now I enjoy your company kid. You not that bad.



Me: mxm.

Cardo: I'll make it up to you.

Me: Let's go to that vegan restaurant. You owe me.

Cardo: I'm not about to pay R100 to eat leaves. Let's go to this spot I know, they sell the best braai.

Me: I can't eat braai meat.

Cardo: come on. It's just for one day. Let loose. I'll pick you up in 30 minutes.

I looked at my brothers who were busy being idiots and throwing popcorn in the air and trying to land them in their mouth and laughing at each other when the other misses.

Me: I'm going to Debonairs with Cardo.

Muller: Debonairs? \*confused\*

Me: yeah, he's trying to apologize. Can I go?

King: as long as you get back before midnight.

Me: okay, thanks.

I rushed upstairs to wear something casual. I wore my light blue jeans with a light blue Jean jacket then a white poloneck underneath. I left my phone so I don't attract thieves I wore my white sneakers again. And right after I was done, Cardo was in the kitchen. It hasn't even been a minute and he's eating in the house. He loves food. I know many of you are thinking Cardo and me have feelings for each other. It's a no, because I would never date a gangster and Cardo sees me as his little sister just because he's a year older than me. I see him as my brother. Nothing more!

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

I took out all my frustrations in fucking the hell out of Nandi. She texted me earlier and I couldn't resist. I'm still single even though I want Lelona, and I want her so bad.

Nandi: yes! Yes! Ah ha! Rellikkkkk \*moans\*

I was slamming my dick in her doggy style. She came and I followed right after her. I pulled out and went to flush the condom down the toilet. I heard my phone ring in the room while I was peeing in there. Nandi bought it to me, she was still naked. I bit my lip and slapped her ass. She smiled and winked.

Nandi: hurry and come back to bed.

I answered the call, it was Cardo.

Cardo: we're going to the Mzoli's Place. Where the gang usually hangs.

Me: why the fuck would you take her to a place full of gangsters!?

Cardo: they don't even know her. They just think she's a friend of mine.

me: Cardo get her the fuck out of there before there is a shootout.

I heard air noises, then I heard my baby talking.

Lona: let me talk to him. He is too much...

Xavier I came here for a good time. I'm letting loose. You said it yourself.

Me: okay.

Lona: okay? Thank God you decided not to be stubborn today.

Me: \*chuckles\* I'll be there in 15 minutes.

Lona: what? Why? \*laughs\* we'll be fine.

Me: you know I'm not going to listen to you. And I never will when it comes to your safety

Why the fuck would Cardo take Lelona to the Mzoli's Place in Gugulethu!? Sometimes I wonder how that kid got in my gang. I quickly dressed up.

Nandi: where are you going? Rellik.

She tried to touch me so I quickly pushed her

back and she fell on the bed roughly.

Me: get dressed and get the fuck out of my house. You're done with what you were here for. I'll deposit money for those shoes you wanted.

She nodded wiping her tears and getting dressed. I took my black Range Rover. Then I dropped Nandi off and drove off to the Mzoli's Place.

LONA

[02/17, 16:42] Wdz: ~I CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 12

.

.

-- LONA'S POV--

- .
- .
- .

We went inside the place and placed an order for the meat, then went to the place where they braai for us the consumers. It was packed, there were a lot of people. People I was even scared of. Some stared at us, I blame Cardo. He was wearing these American flags clothes and drawing attention to us. I breathed slowly to contain my panic attack. There were a lot of people! I closed my eyes and counted to 10 then I was okay. I smiled at Cardo, but he was looking at me confused.

Me: I was trying to contain my panic attack.

Cardo: I thought you were about to have a seizure or something.

We laughed together and I playfully punched him. While we waited for the meat, we talked. The meat finally arrived. He told me about his baby mama drama. I was shocked that he had a child. He loves his baby mother so much, even though he lies about it I see the smile he had on his face when he talks about her. We were eating and talking.

Me: why don't you just send items then?

Cardo: I want to take care of her too, because she might find another lightie (guy) to take care of her.

Me: and you don't want that.

Cardo: \*annoyed\* if I wanted that then I wouldn't care.

Me: don't get grumpy with me. \*chuckles\* just tell her you're low on cash and I'm sure she'll support you.



Cardo: \*chuckles\* you watch way too many TV shows. This is the real world where when you can't take care your girl, someone else will do it for you

Me: you'll never know unless you try.

Cardo: Lelona-

Me: t.r.y

Cardo: has anyone ever told you how annoying you are?

?: how can a beautiful face like this be annoying?

I looked back, and I didn't know this guy at all. He looked scary to me. He wasn't cute nor ugly just average. He had tattoos all over, even on his neck just like Xavier. He looked older and bigger than Cardo

Cardo: Kenny...

Kenny: hou jou bek, Ricardo! Ek praat met die mooi meisie. (Shut up, Ricardo! I'm talking with the beautiful girl )

He lifted up his vest and I could see a gun. My heart started beating up in 1000 beats. I was afraid Cardo would be stubborn and get us killed by not shutting up. And he did, Cardo got up, and displayed his gun.

Cardo: ek wil nie met jou hierdie te doen nie. Maar jy is uit van die lyn. (I don't want to do this with you but you're out of line)

Kenny: hoekom huil jy? Is sy jou meisie!? Sy is my meisie nou! \*roughly pulls Lona's arm\* (why are you crying? Is she your girlfriend? She's my girlfriend now!)

People were minding their own business, they couldn't even see what was happening. And it was too loud, there was no point for me to scream. As I tried to scream it's like no screams were coming out. He had a tight grip on my arm, now we were both standing up and I could feel his dick on my ass. He was too close to me, and it made me very uncomfortable. I literally just froze there scared of what might happen next. I can't die today, and I can't get raped today! Not ever! I know I don't appreciate life a lot but I just can't die! Not in a gangster spot where my murder case would lead no where because no one will snitch.

Cardo: sy is Rellik se meisie. Moenie speel met haar nie. (She is Relklik's girlfriend. Don't play with her)

Kenny: baby girl, tell me your name.

Me: uh, uhm i-

Kenny: Ricardo, haar naam? (Her name?)

Xavier: it's none of your business.

We both turned looked behind us, and boy was I lucky to see him!

Xavier: Lelona, come here.

I was scared to even walk over to him because the facial expression he had was very threatening and very serious. If looks could kill Kenny would be 6 feet under right now. Kenny had a tight grip on my arm. I tried to go to him but Kenny pulled me back.

Xavier: Kenny, you don't want to mess with me. May this be my final warning. I'm not a talker, so if I say something once. I want it to happen

quickly. When I tell Lelona she should come to me, she'll walk to me safely without me seeing any type of bruises on her. Or, Mzoli's will be a crime scene very soon.

He let go of my arm and I walked over to Xavier. I was scared to even hug him, when he's angry it's like he's angry at everyone. So I was scared to even touch him. To my surprise he was the one who hugged me.

Xavier: you're okay?

I nodded, I couldn't even say a word out.

Xavier: you're hurt?

I shook my head no. I'm just still scared, my arm

just hurts but I couldn't tell him that. I don't want this place being all messed up because of me.

Xavier: how's your arm?

I shrugged a bit. His jaw clenched I could see it through his hard cheeks. He was really mad.

Me: can you please just take me home?

Xavier: Cardo will take you home. I'll follow right after you guys.

Me: I want you to take me home.

I looked him into his eyes. His right hand ran through his face. He was trying to calm himself down.

Xavier: I'll follow right after you guys. I'll call you later on.

Me: Xavier-

Xavier: please listen to me for once and I promise you I'll call you later.

I looked down defeated because what if Xavier gets shot today and I will be the reason for that. I know he's a grown man and he's a gangster but I can't help but worry because he lets his anger get the best of him sometimes and that will lead him in darker paths.

Xavier: come on, don't do that. I'll be okay.

I nodded and he kissed my forehead. He motioned for Cardo to come with us, Xavier held my hand. We walked out the place. I didn't like the stares we received from people there. I

think they knew Xavier. He made sure I got near the car, safely. He stood with us near Cardo's car. I saw his Range Rover from a far. Why is he driving a Range Rover to a shisa nyama.  
Heeeeh lomfana (this guy)

Xavier: drive her home, no quick stops. Call Scrappy to call OG and JR they should come here nou nou (now now)

I cried silent tears to get him worried and not go in back there.

Xavier: don't do that. \*wipes her tears\* I promised you I'll call you. You love worrying yourself.

Me: I don't want you to go back in here. You're gonna get hurt.



Xavier is the only best friend I don't have in the moment. He always calls at night and I don't sleep with a bad mood. And I don't to lose him too just like I lost Kayla.

Xavier: I need to teach him a lesson. He's disrespectful and I don't like him disrespecting me and the people I care about. He shouldn't even have talked to Cardo like that nor grab you like that but he did it because he likes seeing a reaction out of me well he's gonna see one tonight.

Him talking so angrily was worrying me because from where I look at it. People may die from that, gosh why did I even come to this place when I have a test tomorrow. More cars pulled up. I saw JR, Scrappy and some other guy that had a huge scar on his face.

Xavier: okay, now I have to go. No quick stops, Cardo.

I was about to cry and he looked at me in a firm, stern and serious way to stop what I was trying to do. I folded my arms and looked the way. Cardo was holding in a laugh. Death and beating people up is not a joke. Xavier kissed my forehead then he opened the door for me, I got in the car.

Me: don't forget to call me when you're at your house.

Xavier: and get some rest. You're writing exams. Don't stress about me, jy hoor my? (you hear me?)

Me: yeah.

He closed the door, then Cardo drove off.

Speeding off to be quite correct. I glared at him.  
This is not at racing show, it's real life.

Me: why are you speeding?

Cardo: just want to go home quickly. Uligwala  
kanene (you're coward) \*laughs\*

Me: we left the meat there! A total waste of  
money.

Cardo: \*laughs\* I didn't even realise that we left  
it there. I'll text Mzoli to keep it safe for me, I'll  
take it tomorrow .

Me: you know the owner of the place!?

Cardo: yeah. We all do, even your brothers.

Me: is he also apart of the big gang. ..?

Cardo: you could say that. \*laughs\* he uses the  
shisa nyama to wash his cash

Me: wash his cash like make it seen like the  
drug dirty money is made in the shisa nyama.

Cardo: yeah. We're going to stop at the garage I need a quick refill.

Me: Xavier said no quick stops.

Cardo: if we don't stop there. Izofadala ipetrol.  
(The petrol will end)

Me: okay, just a very quick stop.

We stopped at the garage close by to where we were. I waited in the car, while Cardo talked to the men outside. I could clearly hear their conversation about the petrol and then they went on to make small talk with each other about the rising price of petrol. After that Cardo drove off.

Cardo: told you nothing will happen.

Me: yeah yeah \*chuckles rolling eyes\*

I heard a car sound behind us so I looked back,  
Cardo sped up but the car also sped up.

Me: I think we're being followed.

Cardo: shit.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

I angrily looked at Kenny. I called Scrappy, JR  
and OG because I knew Kenny's crew was  
around here somewhere.

Kenny: finally, Rellik has a weakness \*laughs\*

Me: if you ever touch-

Kenny: you're not going to do anything.

Me: you bullying Cardo because you know he's alone in here and all your boys are here is really a weak move I didn't expect from you.

I aimed my gun at him, that's when eyes landed on us. Some people ran out crazily but I knew all those who were gangsters stayed behind.

Kenny: kill me. Kill me en skep 'n oorlog (and create a war) you will ever win!

Me: I'll figure something out.

Quickly Mzoli rushed in between us. I couldn't shoot Kenny because I respected Mzoli a lot. And if I shoot Mzoli, I will be in deep shit.

Mzoli: Kenny, uit! (Out)

Kenny: see you around, Rellik. I hope I get to see her too. \*smirks\*

I wanted to beat him up so bad, but Mzoli held me back.

Mzoli: hey! Why is my business a fighting area for you?

Me: you know how Kenny gets under my skin. Eendag ek sal dat seun doodmaak. (One day I will kill that boy)

Mzoli: not in my shisa nyama. I am losing business because of this.

Me: askies. (Sorry)

Mzoli: you're lucky I'm very close with your uncle and you \*chuckles\*

Me: thanks Mzo man!

Mzoli: and don't go hunting for Kenny. It's been

an while since there has been a war, don't go around looking for it.

Me: I hear you.

My guys and I left. I told them what happened and they said they'll think of ways of getting back around at Kenny without killing him and creating a war. Kenny's father runs the streets in Eastern Cape, but Kenny came here just to live and enjoy life before he goes back to Eastern Cape to take over. He knows I can't kill him because it'll only create war that would never end. Ghost, who is my uncle, always warns me not to kill Kenny but his life is like a ticking bomb and it's soon about to explode because I won't take shit from him. I sped off home, and I didn't see any funny things along the road so I guess Cardo and Lona arrived home safely. I called Lona to make sure. Her phone rang till it was unanswered. For her sake



I hope she's not ignoring my calls because I'll go to her home looking for her. I called again and still it rang unanswered. Before my anger could rise up I called Cardo. It rang and it was answered after a long time.

Me: did you drop her off safely?

Cardo: uh...

I could hear that he was still on the road speeding. In my head I thought maybe he's racing today.

Me: what the fuck do you mean by "uh" Cardo?

Lona: we're being followed.

I was fucking so fucking angry she was in the car when I specifically told Cardo no quick

stops.

Me: what!? Where are you!?

Lona: I don't know.

Me: Cardo!?

Cardo: uh, we're uhm...

Me: you better fucking know where you are, I swear I'll-

Lona: Xavier! He's driving and I don't want him stressed while he's driving. This is my life here. He's not alone in the car

Cardo told me where they were and I was more angry that they didn't listen to me when I said no quick stops. I quickly got in my car.

Me: circle around the same 2 streets. They're following you for information. They want

Lona's address.

Lona: my address? Why?

Me: Kenny's orders. I'll be there quickly keep circling the 2 streets. Do not take her home Cardo!

Cardo: yes, boss

Me: don't hang up either. I need to make sure Lona is safe.

~~

I parked next to her home. I took care of the guy following them. in Lona's mind she thinks Cardo ditched him but me and Cardo know I killed him, so he can drive Lona home, but I took her from a bit far, she didn't see the other guy's car or dead body. I told Cardo to go to the car and wait until OG comes and cleans the bloody mess.

Lona: thanks.

Me: no problem. Next time don't go to Mzoli's, or any shisa nyama. If you want braai meat, I'll braai meat for you.

Lona: that's a bit extreme don't you think?

Me: no. It's the most perfect idea I have heard the whole day

Lona: mxm. If you want me to listen to you and do what you want you also have to listen to me.

Me: Lona-

Lona: no. When i say let's leave. Please let's just leave and leave the fights behind.

Me: I can't just leave. People will look at me like I'm a bitch

Lona: why do you care about what people say? You could've been killed there today.

Me: but I'm still alive.

Lona: you're not listening to me-

Me: and I never will when it comes to your

safety. How much do I have to say that for you to understand?

Lona: mxm

She opened the door angrily. And I just chuckled, my wife can be dramatic sometimes. I got out the car and ran to her. I pulled her quickly before she could touch the gate.

Me: come on, don't be like that. \*laughs\*

Lona: bye Rellik

Me: hay hay hay uyazibona ke. (No no no, do you see yourself)

Lona: \*laughs\* don't try Xhosa again.

Me: it's worth seeing you smile.

Lona: bye.

Me: bye.

I hugged her and kissed her forehead. I watched her get in the yard and then in the house. That's when I went in my car, and drove off. I called Cardo to ask if the body was taken care of.

Cardo: Rellik

Me: is it taken care of?

Cardo: we're doing it right now.

Me: I'll be there to check everything out.

Cardo: cool.

I hung up the call. Then went to the road where I killed the guy that was following Lona and Cardo.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I woke up the next morning and did my morning routine. Then I went to the gym. After the gym I came back home and washed again, then wore my white short poloneck dress with a crop Jean jacket and white sandals. I tied my hair in a tight ponytail and made baby hair with some gel.

Then I walked downstairs to the kitchen to eat some cereal. Then after I was done I walked to the campus. I was early so I revised the studying I did last night before the crazy incident at Mzoli's Place. Eventually time was approaching so I went to class. There I sat in the front. I saw Kayla getting in the class, she looked like hell. It looked like she was hungover. She was wearing shades and her weave was messed up. She was wearing jean shorts with a

pink crop top and pink, white, and black colored sneakers. I looked away from her, she just went all the way to the back.

~~

the exam was easier than I thought it would be. I smiled because I knew I definitely passed it. I was walking with my earphones on and listening to Beyoncé the album, I was waiting for Muller to come get back he said he's taking me shopping. He came to fetch me at the campus and he drove off, on the ride he made small casual talk by asking how the exam was.

Me: it was great. I even see a 80% pass. Kayla on the other hand came in the class looking like a girl who didn't take a bath after a party.

Muller: \*laughs\* I never knew why you liked that



girl.

Me: I'm starting to question my mentality too. I am happy she is out of my life.

Muller: are you really?

Me: what does that even mean?

Muller: you talk about her all the time. She's out of your life now, she shouldn't be something you're obsessed with.

Me: let me delete her number and block her from my WhatsApp. You're right. That Kayla chapter is over.

XAVIER

.

.

.

.

.

please let us take time to appreciate Xavier  
being angry and sexy at the same time

[02/17, 16:42] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 13

.

.

.

× 2 WEEKS LATER ×

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I pouted in the airport. I was going home. The  
exams were done and now I had go back home  
for Easter's. My brothers couldn't come

because they're planning a heist for another bank. I didn't even want the full details. I was just upset that I was going home alone. I had a video call from Xavier and I just smiled on my own.

Xavier: I thought you landed already.

Me: flight got delayed. They said it should be ready in 30 minutes.

Xavier: you really have to go?

Me: yes otherwise if I had a choice I wouldn't go.

Xavier: look, let me know if you need anything. You know I'll always be there for you.

Me: it's just 2 weeks I'll survive.

Xavier: I know you can survive it. I just want you to call me if anything you don't like happens.

Me: and you'll be in Eastern Cape within a few hours.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* yes.

Me: you need to stop doing that.

Xavier: call me when you arrive so I know you have arrived safely.

Me: I will. Bye!

Xavier: bye.

I made a kissing face and hung up. No me and Xavier are not dating. The guy is too extreme if you ask me, and he's my friend. Imagine if we dated? I wouldn't be allowed to hang in certain places, he'll always ask where I am. He might even put tracking devices on me. I don't want that. I like my privacy, and he looks like the kind of guy to flash his money on his girlfriend a lot. I don't want that, I like spending my own money. That's why I'm just keeping Xavier as a friend because I won't lie, he really has been there for me through whatever obstacle I had in my life

these weeks, he fixed it for me and made sure I remained with a smile on my face. But I can't overlook the fact that he's older than me, way older. And Muller and King would go crazy if they learned I am dating a gangster. I don't want that "gangster wife" lifestyle it is too much for me to handle. It's been 2 weeks without panic attacks and I would like to keep it that way. My destination was called, so I stood up, did the process and went on the plane.

~~

I walked out with my bags and called my dad.

Me: tata uphi? (Dad where are you?)

Tata: ndiyeza! (I'm coming!)

Me: okay.

I hung up. My father is very strict towards me. Maybe it's because I am the only daughter he

has and he wants everything of mine to go perfectly. But sometimes I would just like it if he would just say "i'm proud of you." So I can know if I have done a good job or not. He arrived after an hour of me waiting. He came with my aunt, his sister, and my mom. I know I am going to hate this ride from East London to King Williams Town. I loaded my bags in the boot. Then I got in the car.

Me: molweni. (Greetings)

Mama: baphi abantwana bam? (Where are my children? )

Me: Khazimla noYanga bashiyekile, ma.  
(Khazimla and Yanga stayed behind, ma)

Mama: ngobakutheni? (Why?)

Me: andazi, ma. (I don't know, ma)

My mom is the only family member who doesn't

know what her beloved "children" are doing. The reason she's so cold towards is because after she had me she was diagnosed with Postdrum Depression and she felt no connection at all with me. So everything started believing I was a bewitched child and my mom was also bewitched because she was a perfect mom to Muller and King then after me it was like she was losing her mind. So my mom started thinking I was bewitched too and wanted nothing to do with me, in her eyes. I ruined her life and now she refers to King and Muller as her "favorite" children. I have learned to get over it and accept that she will never come around and I won't receive a mother's love. My whole family started hating me because my mom's depression would sometimes be extreme and she'd just shut the whole world out. She would not eat, not talk to anyone the whole day. Luckily King and Muller do not blame me for mom's depression. These things happen to

most mothers but in my family "sithakathiwe"  
(we're bewitched)

The car was filled with them talking about things i really didn't care about. I was sleepy so I slept through the the car ride from EL to King Williams Town. It wasn't long though so my nap was disturbed when the car stopped. I woke up and saw we were already in town. We stopped at the robots. Then the car drove off home in West Bank. Dad parked the car inside the yard, I got out and took my 2 luggage bags out. I went inside the house through the door that connects the garage to the house.

Mom: ukhawleze ke ntombi, singalambi ukhona.  
(Hury up girl, we shouldn't starve with you here)

Me: ewe ma. (Yes, ma)



These people I call my family are very old fashioned. They think a woman is supposed to do everything in the household while a man just provides for his family. I would never marry just to be a housewife. Never! I placed my bags in my room then went to start dinner for them. I wasn't going to eat dinner because I'm on a diet meaning if I eat meat it has to be in cheat days only. And I cheat by just one peice. I finished cooking and dished for them. I took mom & dad's food to them in their room. They thanked me and I walked out again. My aunt and her husband have a flat outside. I took the food to them in a tray. After all of that, I washed the dishes and cleaned the kitchen counters. Then I went to rest in my room. It was still 7pm and I'm already tired so hard. I received a call from King.

Me: please come back.

King: what's going on?

Me: they're slaving me around. Dad doesn't even stop them anymore. He's becoming more and more cold towards me.

King: lil sis, remember dad was sick. Him not involving himself if a good idea. We do not want him to stress too much. We'll be there to sort everything out.

Me: fine, when?

King: not sure yet, maybe next week.

Me: ugh, forget I ever said anything.

King: I'll call you later. And don't worry we'll be there sooner than you think. Love you.

Me: love you too.

We both hung up and threw myself on the bed. Some would say I'm dramatic at least I have a roof under my head and I'm not physically abused. But I would love some little love. I would really love it if my mom or dad would just

rock up in my room and ask me how are my exams going or just tell me they're proud of me for always keeping my academics before anything. But I guess some families are not the same and my family may not be too much involved on emotions and I'm being dramatic. I played music through my phone I made it changed to different songs without my having to press a button every time. After LaSauce featuring Amanda Black "I Do" ended another song played. My heart sank down to my stomach when I heard it was "Perfect" by Ed Sheeran. Tears feel down my eye, I miss Omar even though a month has passed since he has passed away. I'll never forget the pain I felt when I heard the news. I miss him everyday, I called his number just to hear his voice mail. I know this will never make me let go and I need to because Omar wouldn't want me to be depressed and calling his number just to listen to his voice mail. I played the song again and

cried and cried until I felt like the hurt was off a bit. I was sniffing and thinking about our memories. My phone rang and I looked at it. It was Xavier. I let it ring unanswered because I really didn't want to talk to anymore right. I just want to talk to Omar. And he's dead, so right now I don't want to talk to anyone. But Xavier didn't stop he kept calling and calling. I ended up being upset that he wouldn't just leave me alone! I really appreciate his support I really do but I just need a little break!

Me: Rellik what!?

Xavier: moenie fok met my nie. (Don't fuck with me)

Me: I need to be alone right now.

Xavier: I don't care. Tell me what's wrong or I'll be in there by tomorrow.

Me: \*sighs\* nothing. I am here safe. I'm just

going through my emotions.

Xavier: you're just crying for nothing.

Me: yeah.

Xavier: you're a crybaby.

Me: I know and you need to let me cry when I want to. At Mzoli's you looked at me, well glared at me when I wanted to cry.

Xavier: because I know you weren't really crying you just didn't want me in that environment.

Me: one day my tears will work on you.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* I'm not the easily influenced type.

Me: what? You almost went home, don't act tough because we both you're too sweet.

Xavier: I am not sweet. Stop lying

Me: yes you are. \*laughs\* why are you denying it? I think it's nothing to be ashamed of.

Xavier: Lelona, I am not sweet. Weak people

are sweet, I am not. Being sweet is a weakness that can get you killed hier. (here)

Me: speaking of getting killed. Who was following me and Cardo? We could've died because of him

Xavier: I took care of it.

Me: that's not what I'm asking.

Xavier: \*laughs\* why do you need to know because he'll never bother you again?

Me: please don't tell me you killed him....

The line went silent for a while, my heart started beating fast I was scared that I may be the reason behind someone else's death.

Xavier: no. Just roughened him up.

Me: you scared me there! I thought you did.

Xavier: if I did-

Me: I would have dropped my phone and never talk to you ever again. I would never have forgiven you because I'd have the conscience of a man is dead because of me

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

this is why I would never tell Lona what I do for her. She has a fragile heart and my baby can't take everything in. She cries a lot and always sees the good in someone and that's what I like and don't like about her. I dislike it because people will take that into their advantage because she's so sweet and sees the goodness in people they will use her and hurt her in the end. I like it because even though I kill people and do all types of wrong things she still sees the good in me and just smiles at me makes my dark life have brightness with just her smile.

That's why I don't want her to know the number of people I killed for her. We have known each other for like a month and I have already killed 3 people because of her. Because of what I feel for her. And because she's fragile, it's also a disadvantage I can't just ask her to be mine because she's still caught up with feelings for that weak boy Omar. She may not see it now, but she finds comfort in me. Her feelings will start to develop and I'll be all she wants. Then that's when I make my move, because I make my move now while she's still "in love" with Omar, she'll never fully commit to me. She will always feel guilty like she has moved on too fast. And she'll start comparing me to Omar, and that will piss me the fuck off. So I will rather wait then to lose her forever.

~~

I walked inside my uncle's house and I heard voices talking. I followed the voices and it was my uncle and aunt. They were all lovey dovey



watching TV, I came in while they were kissing.

Me: okay, I think I have seen enough.

Ghost: dis my tuis. (This is my home)

Fifi: your uncle tells me there's a special lady in your life.

Me: \*chuckles\* yes. And i need to speak to Ghost about something urgent.

Fifi: it's always business with you boys. I'll be in my room.

She kissed Ghost, and when she got up he grabbed her ass. I chuckled.

Fifi: stop. \*blushes\*

She kissed my cheek and walked upstairs once

I heard her door close, that's when I started talking.

Me: I want Kenny dead.

Ghost: woah. Not going to happen.

Me: since when have you ever been scared of war?

Ghost: you know I'm not scared at all. I'm thinking about the outcomes of the war. Plenty of people will get hurt and die because of a stupid gang war. No!

Me: I don't give a fuck. He has been disrespecting the fuck out of me and I want him dealt with.

Ghost: Xavier, you're not going to kill Kenneth. Think of all the family members that will die. The innocent people. And that special girl in your life

Me: I can protect Lelona. \*angry\*

Ghost: she will get hurt no matter what you try. Her family will get pulled into this what if you have business to take care of and she gets hurt when you're on business trips?

Me: I'll take her with me.

Ghost: I said no! \*yells\* and we're not talking about this again.

Then my aunt Fifi walked in again, that's when I knew she heard everything.

Fifi: You're about to run the gang. You have to learn that sometimes not doing anything is doing a lot. Murder does always solve every problem.

Me: so I should let him disrespect me? People will think I'm a pussy. I need to sort him out.

Fifi: there is no war that is going to happen! We had truce with them years ago and we're not

breaking it!

Me: we? Since when were you a part of the gang?

Ghost: hey! Ek sal jou bene breek! (I'll break your legs)

Fifi: no I'm not in the gang but all the bullshit you do costs us, the wives. We get kidnapped, we get attacked, all types of dangers happen to us just because we fell in love with "gangsters" the minute we fall in love with gangsters. We are in the gang because we get hurt too so you guys can feel the emotional pain from our physical pain. Don't start something your special gir, Lelona will play for. Be smart about your moves now Rellik. Think as a boss, not as a second in command where you want to kill everyone.

Me: isn't that why I'm Rellik? I am a Killer. It's who I am and I won't change myself because I'm about to be a boss.

Fifi: well you need to. No war, that's the final say.  
Right baby?

Ghost: yes.

They pecked each others lips. I was annoyed by their love so much I stood up and went for a smoke to calm my nerves down. While smoking I thought about how Kenny could find Lona since she's in Eastern Cape now and I can't protect her like I want to. I called Kurt to check where Kenny's whereabouts were if he was in Eastern Cape then I'll send JR to watch my wife like a hawk to ensure she's all safe and nothing happens to her while she's there.

Kurt: Rellik.

Me: find out if Kenny is still in town, I need an answer in less than a day.

Kurt: okay.

I hung up and went back to the house and Fifi was preparing lunch.

Fifi: sit down, I'll make you something too. I want you to tell me all about this girl that has you going crazy.

I just chuckled and sat down as she proceeded finishing the meal on the kitchen counter. Then I started telling her about Lelona

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

I woke up the following day feeling really sleepy. I didn't enjoy my sleep at all. And on top of that I have to wake up early to do my chores. This is why I hate returning home. They are training

me to be the "perfect wife" and I just want to sit down and text on my phone all day.

Mama: ukhawleze ke ntombi, funeka siye kwaShoprite pha eMall. (Hurry up girl, we have to go to Shoprite at the mall)

Me: it's Checkers .

Mama: heh? (What?)

Me: nguCheckers mama lowo.

Mama: bayafana wethu. (they're alike)

I wanted to disagree but I knew it would be a never ending lecture about how I think I'm better because it know more so I just chuckled and smiled.

Mama: ukhe unxibe ilokwe Lelona, kushushu. (wear dresses Lelona, it's hot)

Me: ewe mama. (Yes mom)

Mama: ikhona enye bendikuthengele yona uzoyithanda (there's one that I bought for you you'll love it)

~~

I was strolling through Checkers looking for the perfect sauces for my mother who is very picky! I was wearing the dress she bought it was a bit cream and yellow. It was not tight nor was it too baggy. It was short though. I let my hair loose. Finally after I found the the Spur sauce she wanted I ran to the tills and she was still in line. We paid then went to the car. After I loaded everything in the car we drove off.

Mama: ukhe ufike uclean'e eza'curtains kudala zimdaka kodwa ngoku! (When we arrive clean the curtains. They have been dirty for a long time)



I mumbled under my breath frustrated that I am a slave apha.

Me: hay nindicapukela kakubi apha ( you hate me badly here)

Mama: andiva? (Pardon?)

Me: andithethi, ma. (I'm not saying anything, ma)

Mama: Lelona sikufundisile, ezipahla uzinxibayo kungexayetu, utya ukutya kwendlu yam, zange walamba ebomini bakho bonke. Zange walala ugodola ngexayetu uphinde uthi siyakucapukela ngoba sikuthuma! ? Hay ukhe undibide. Ngoba sifuna nje ibreak ekusebenzeni uthi siyakucapukela? Sasi nganikwa neBreak'i ke thina mna ndiyakuyeka ukhe uphole ulala emini kodwa uyandixelela ba ndiyakucapukela. Inoba awulazi neligama capukela limele ntoni njeba ulisebenzisa nje. (Lelona we gave you an

education, those clothes you wear because of us, you eat the food in my house, you have never starved your entire life. You never felt cold because of us and you say we hate you because we order you around!? No, you confuse me sometimes. Because we only want a break from the work, and you say we hate you. We were never given breaks, and I let you sleep in midday but you tell me I hate you. Maybe you don't even know what the word hate means you're just using it.)

I regretted even saying that because I knew an lecture was on the way. I will never hear the end of this.

.

.

.

.

.

Please tag people to read the story, share it, like it, invite people. Do anything you can, I would really appreciate it

[02/17, 16:43] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 14

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

it was already 3pm and the load of the new girls was escorted out of the big truck and into the big ship. They were being shipped to Asia. I am involved in human trafficking dealings because it brings in a lot of money as well

especially when you convert it. The girls were all chained and crying. Tears don't work on me at all.

Me: that's all of them?

OG: yeah.

Me: they are 50 girls, meaning 2 are missing

OG: Rellik-

Me: find them quickly or you'll lose your hands since you can't use them properly.

OG: they escaped and-

Me: don't we put trackers on all girls?

OG: we do but-

Me: don't fuck with my money, OG. Call Kurt to track them. Those girls are worth a lot of money.

OG: yes, boss.

He hurried to make a phone call. I don't like it when people play with money. I am a rich man because I learned not to play with money. If I lose R150 000 because of OG. I'll kill him.

~~

Finally the girls were found and bought back to the ship. They were screaming, shouting and kicking but OG knocked them out and they were put in the ship.

Me: the ship needs to hurry up, we're already late in the deadline and the police could come in any minute.

Just 30 minutes after, the ship was gone. I drove back home. The time was now 5:04pm so I ate some food and watched some soccer. After the match, I texted Lona. I was missing her a bit.

Me: how are things in the EC?

wifey: great, just great.

Me: want to talk about it?

wifey: well my mom heard me say they hate me and she's been shouting in her room ever since.

Me: what happened?

wifey: they're slaving me around and I just said they hate me, she was offended and starting giving me a lecture all angry. Now she locked herself in her room, and she has been shouting.

Me: now I see why you're so fragile.

wifey: yes, because she's always shouting and ordering me around like I'm forced to do everything here. It's like she's not my mom, we are nothing alike. She's too bossy and judgemental. Way too different from me.

Me: but she still loves you. It's tough love

wifey: she has a funny way of showing it. She hates me. You wouldn't understand.

Me: yeah, I wouldn't.

She blueticked me. I hate it when she does that. I wanted to call her but Kurt sent a message.

Kurt: he's still in here, but my source says he's leaving town tomorrow.

Me: where is he going?

Kurt: the source didn't mention it. I think to his home.

Fuck! Now I need to go send one of my guys there to keep Lona safe. and make sure Kenny doesn't even get close to her. I'll send about 5 guys with JR incase Kenny and his gang want to start something then I'll really show him what

I'm made of. He clearly underestimates me, just because of a fucking truce. I smoked weed to calm myself down after 3 joints that's when I knew I was high. I missed my wife's face and voice so I video called her. She didn't answer at all. I tried her 5 times and she didn't answer at all. I called JR.

JR: bozza (boss)

Me: round the boys up, we're going to the Eastern Cape.

JR: fede fede, boss. (Sharp sharp, boss)

I dropped the phone call and went to the my room to pack. I only took needed clothes so the packing only took me 1 hour. After packing I tried video calling Lona again. She picked up and I was angry that she didn't the first time.



Me: why the fuck didn't you answer the phone, Lelona!?

Lona: \*sniffs\* Xavier I'm really not in the mood to get shouted because I have just been shouted right now.

Me: I am coming to that town.

Lona: what!?! No!

Me: why not?

Lona: why are you coming over here?

Me: because you have been crying for 2 days straight. And it seems like Muller and King aren't going to be back soon.

Lona: but don't you have stuff to do? \*sniffs\*

I chuckled she says she doesn't want me there, but her pouting and crying tells me she wants me there.

Me: are you crying because you want me there, or are you crying because you got shouted?

Lona: don't flatter yourself. \*smiles\*

Me: finally a smile.

Lona: I'm serious though, do not come here. I'm fine.

Me: you say you're fine, but you crying is not saying you're fine.

Lona: you know I'm a crybaby. I'm just going through my emotions.

Me: \*chuckles\* you are one of the strangest females I know. Crying just for crying?

Lona: mxm, I have to go. I have to start finish cooking. I'll call you later.

Me: sharp

Lona: and don't come here.

Me: not promising

Lona: Xavier-

Me: bye Lona.

Lona: mxm, bye.

I chuckled then we both hung up. I'm still going to Eastern Cape because I need to make sure Kenny doesn't try anything to her. Because he also lives in King Williams Town

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I smiled after the video call because no matter how much he says tears don't affect him, as soon I cry he's willingly to fly and come see what's bothering me. He cares for me just as much as I care for him. I went to the kitchen

and finished cooking the mincemeat. The rice and veggies were already done, now all I had to do was dish up for everyone and wash the dishes. I did just that, then after the dishes. I went to my room, tomorrow I have to get myself some vegan food to eat because I might die in hunger here. I couldn't stand my hunger so I made myself some boiled eggs and took some bread.

Mama: wenza ntoni? (What are you doing?)

Me: ndenza amaqanda a'boil'iweyo mama. (I'm making boiled eggs mama)

Mama: ukutya oku ukuphekileyo kutheni? (what is wrong with the food you made?)

Me: I'm on a diet.

Mama: i'diet \*laughs\*

She was making in these noises while she was

laughing. She really laughed like I told a good joke, it made me feel so offended. But I faked little laughs.

mama: kawutsho ke uyiqalenini le'diet  
\*chuckles\* (so tell me when did you start this diet)

Me: ngoJanuary. (In January )

Mama: yilonto uhlile eWeightin bendizixelela ba inoba utshaya intsango nala Kayla ndini (that's why you have lost weight I was telling myself maybe you're smoking weed with that Kayla)

Me: akayotshomi yam ngoku (she's not my friend now)

Mama: waze wabona ilight lomntana. Jonga ke ntombi, apha endlini yam kutyiwa lento iphekiweyo for wonke umntu. (finally this child sees the light. Look girl, here in my house we eat food that was cooked for everyone)

Me: kodwa mama- (but mom-)

Mama: hey! Sundiphambanela Lelona!

Uzokwenza ezonto zakho zokuziphakamisa pheKapa! (Don't go crazy on me Lelona! You'll do your stuck up things in Western Cape!

Me: okay.

Mama: okay, ba? (Okay, who?)

Me: okay, mama.

Mama: cima esostove'u nale ketile (turn off that stove and this kettle)

I did as I was told with my heart broken into a million pieces. I was not trying to make myself look like I'm better than them I don't eat their food, but I'm on a diet. But I guess to my mom, I'm lying and I am being stuck up. I was about to go to my room when she pulled me back.

Mama: itya okukutya (eat this food.)

Me: mama-

Mama: hey! Itya okukutya uyeke lento uyenzayo!  
(Eat this food and stop you are doing!)

She roughly pulled me towards the kitchen counter. She took my plate and opened it with so much force I was shocked that she was this angry because I wouldn't eat the food.

Tata: kwenzaka ntoni apha (what's happening here?)

Me: tata- (dad-)

Mama: lomntana uzenza umlungu apha akakutyi ukutya esikutyayo. (This child is acting like a white person she doesn't eat food we eat.)

Me: andizami ukuzenza betere mama, qha ndikwi'diet. (I'm not trying to make myself stuck

up but I'm on a diet)

Mama: uyaoka man! \*yelling\* (you're lying!)

Tata: Lelona, iya eroomin yakho. Ndizothetha nomama wakho. (Lelona, go to your room. I will talk to your mother.)

I went to my room with tears, I quickly wiped them. I could hear their argument in my room.

Mama: umoshwe nini lomntana! Niyamtefisa! (you are ruining the child! You're baby'ing her)

Tata: usengumtana uLelona! Una18 (Lelona is still a baby. She's 18!)

Mama: uzotyala lento siyityayo okanye ubuyela apha avela khona! (She'll eat what we're eating or she'll go back to where she came from.)

I decided to put on earphones to zone them out,



I took out my journal and started writing about how my mother just hates me like I didn't come out of her womb. She says she doesn't hate me but her actions say the opposite of her words. I am hungry, and I am being treated like a slave in my own home. My brothers aren't even here to defend me. It's like the whole family is against me. I am sure dad will take her side and i will just starve for today. Then tomorrow I will wake up and eat cereal. I wish Xavier was here, he would've parked outside and took me somewhere where I could have bought food to actually eat. He would just make my day brighter with his rare smile and he always licks his lips first then looks at me with the most amazing eyes ever and gives me a look I can't describe then he just chuckles. But he rarely laughs a genuine laugh. If he does then he'll first shake his head looking down and laugh. It's such a good look on him. When he smiles, I don't think anyone notices but his lower teeth

also appear when he smiles. And his eyes lit up, that's why I want him to smile forever because I just love his smile. I closed my journal smiling after writing a full paragraph about Xavier. I don't know what is happening to me but I miss him. I'm used to him calling me. Cardo plus me meeting him in town "randomly" but I know Cardo always tells him about our whereabouts. I went on my WhatsApp and decided to post in my status. I blocked Muller and King first from seeing my statuses before I could even post that picture. It was a picture of me and Xavier when he took me out for some ice-cream after Omar's memorial funeral. I captioned it "I miss you " then I looked at my phone. It was boring. Now new messages at all from anyone. Then my phone vibrated and I was shocked to receive a WhatsApp message from Zikhona. My heart told me not to open it but my curiosity and mind told me to open it. So I did.

Zee : so you're one of Rellik's bitches now?

She was replying to the picture I posted. I knew right away that she must have sent a screenshot to her "friend" Kayla. I didn't want to reply but I was pissed off that she would in my business.

Me: how does that concern you?

Zee : awuzithandi ntombi emtwini womntu (you don't love yourself dating a taken man)

Me: I wouldn't stoop to your level. I know my worth.

Zee : know your worth? Hay lol! then why are you fucking Kayla's leftovers? Phof Kayla's man.

I just looked at my phone in shock. Kayla is dating Xavier? Isn't she dating Scrappy?

Me: they're not dating.

Zee : I bet he told you that lie. you'll always be his hoe nothing more. Accept that

Me: mxm.

Then I blocked her. I was more angry that Kayla and Xavier had sex. In my anger I took a lot of screenshots from our chats then sent them to Xavier.

Me: please tell me this isn't true.

He didn't reply. It was one tick meaning he's offline. I tried calling him but it went straight to voice-mail. I paced up and down my room. I

can't believe Kayla had sex with Xavier!

.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

I threw my phone on the couch. I was upset about the conversation Zikhona had with Lelona. More upset that she blocked me because I was about to give her a piece of my mind. Zikhona even sent me the picture and I looked at it. He was smiling, like actually smiling not a mean smile that he always has but a genuine happy smile. Time to get this bitch out of his life. There's no way she's going to play the wife role to my man. I texted Skylar the picture of Rellik and Lona.

Me: she really didn't care about Omar. It has only been like what? A month and she's already missing another man. She never posted a picture of Omar nor even said R.I.P to him. She's really wrong for this. I can't believe she's like this. Thank God I stopped being friends with her.

Within 30 minutes Skylar read the message, and she replied.

Skylar : I never knew Lona was a bitch like this! I am truly hurt by this. Omar loved her so much yet she goes and fucks with a dirty low life gangster. She's a fool, I hope he takes his anger out on her and kills her for being like this.

Me: she's really a bad person that loves playing victim to everything.

Skylar : she'll pay for this. I want her so

humiliated that she'll regret playing my friend like that even after his death.

Me: right! She couldn't wait a couple more months. Maybe she didn't even want Omar, he was just a toy to her. She needs to pay for this.

Skylar didn't reply, I waited for her then 10 minutes later she did.

Skylar: check Omar's facebook account.

I quickly went to Facebook and searched for Omar's account I was found a picture Skylar posted it was the picture i sent to her and she tagged Omar and Lona. With the caption "it hasn't even been 2 months and already she has moved on from my friend. What a hoe " I laughed super hard, and smiled. At this rate, Lona will probably not finish this year. I will not

be shocked if she kills herself. She's too fragile anyway.

Me: Skylar!            you're so good. I wonder how she'll feel if everyone on campus saw the pic of her and Xavier written HOE on it

Skylar: I'm going to do that       especially on our first day back. This bitch messed with the wrong one.

I smiled. Skylar was easy to manipulate, so easy. I tried calling Khanyi again because I missed her. But as always voice-mail. I haven't seen her after the club incident. I heard she was at her boyfriend's house and he is no where to be found and her too. I hope she returns next semester because I miss her. She would be giving me ideas right now. I hope she's fine wherever she is. I don't even know her grandmother's number because I would've



called to ask where she is...

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I got up with my stomach upsetting itself. I was hungry so much that I had a headache. I woke up and the time was 3am. I sneaked to the kitchen to take some bread and make juice then I sneaked to my room again. I ate the bread then drank juice. I frowned thinking about what I'm doing. I am sneaking around taking food in my own home. After I was done, I was silently crying. I couldn't take it anymore. I called Muller because I know he'll react and he'll do something out fast. While King would want me to talk with mom

Muller: lelona... \*tired\*

I could hear he was still tired from sleeping but I was said so I was sniffed to do show him I was crying.

Muller: kwenzeka ntoni? (What's going on?)

Me: she wouldn't allow me to make food because I am on a diet. She wanted to force me to eat. She literally pulled me roughly to eat. If it wasn't for Dad, she would have forcefully pushed the spoon with food in my mouth. I didn't eat at all and I had to wake up at this time to sneak to the kitchen and get food. \*cries\* I want to come back to Cape Town.

Muller: I'll talk to her. Don't worry, she won't do anything else again. Utheni na umama (what's wrong with mama?) I'll send you money and you can go to the shops to get anything you want to

eat. Okay? We'll talk better later on.

Me: okay. Love you.

Muller: love you too.

We both hung up and I tried sleeping but it was no use, I was not tired at all. I tried calling Xavier again luckily this time he answered.

Me: finally!

Xavier: sorry, I was busy.

Me: oh, I can call next time.

Xavier: was, past tense. What's up?

Me: what do you mean what's up?

Xavier: you never call me. I'm usually the one that calls you, so that means you need some serious cheering up or you're being a crybaby and you miss me.

Me: I'm still mad at you.

Xavier: I didn't fuck that hoe.

Me: well that's not what I heard-

Xavier: well you need to stop believing everyone. That's why you get hurt so easily because you let people control you by your emotions. Why would I lie about fucking Kayla? Everyone has had her, I don't want her. She tried to fuck me but I do curved her.

Me: I... I believe you. It's just that Kayla-

Xavier: Kayla nothing. I'm sure you called me for something more important rather than Kayla.

Me: I'm starving that's why I called.

Xavier: what? \*chuckles\*

Me: my mom went crazy on me and I'm not allowed to eat unless I eat food that is the same as everyone else's.

Xavier: give me your address and I'll come pick

you up tomorrow to get some food.

Me: my address? You'll pick me up tomorrow?  
What are you saying Xavier?

Xavier: I'm here. I must say, your town isn't all that great.

Heehh! I told him he shouldn't come and he just didn't listen to me.

[02/17, 16:43] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER  
~

INSERT 15

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

After my call with Xavier I decided to get some sleep, 2 hours later I woke up again because of my alarm. I rushed to do my morning routine

then wore a black sweats, with my new sneakers, that Xavier bought. I have to give him his R1 100 back forreal. I made myself cereal and quickly ate before my mom wakes up and wants to start drama again. I quickly cleaned the house, and after I was done. I went to sit under a tree, I received a notification saying someone sent me R1000 in my account, I knew it was Muller.

Mama: Lelona! \*shouts\*

Me: ma!

Mama: iza apha. (Come here)

I got up from my chair then went to her, she looked angry. When I was close to her, she slapped me hard. I was so shocked I held on my cheek. I have been beaten before by my mom. Because I have woken up too late and the

house is dirty, or I wasted groceries by burning the food I cook or making the kitchen dirty and leaving it dirty. but today I was shocked because I didn't do anything. At least I don't think I did anything.

Mama: bubuxoki bantoni obu ubuxelela umntana wam!? (What lies are you telling my child?!) )

I guess Muller called her, and if I'm right he shouted at her because she lets him do anything even shout at her but if I look at her funny she'll beat me up.

Me: mama-

Mama: hey! Sundinyela endlini yam, Lelona! Ungakhe ulinge! Into engasoze yenzeke kuphathwa nguwe mntanandini (don't shit on

me in my house, Lelona! Don't you dare!  
Something that will never happen is being  
controlled by you, you child!)

Me: ndiyakuva mama (I hear you mama)

Mama: khawsuke phambikwam tchin! Uzukhe  
uxoke kuKhazimla ubone ba andizokubethela  
into eyiyo na. (Get out of my sight! I dare you to  
tell Khazimla lies that I beat you up, and see if I  
won't really beat you up)

I nodded and walked away from her. I went  
back to sit in the chair, I had tears in my eyes.  
My father is gone and my aunt would never  
stand up to my mom they are best friends. My  
uncle is also gone to work. I looked at my cheek  
through my front camera and it look like pink  
and red bruise. I doubt it will be a permanent  
bruise. Maybe in a few hours it will go down. I  
didn't want to call Muller because I know my  
mom is serious she'll really beat me up. Worse



than this little bruise. My phone rang and it was Muller. I breathed so I don't show that I have been crying. I answered it after it was ringing for a long time.

Muller: you got the money?

Me: yes, thank you.

Muller: I talked to mom.

Me: I know...

Muller: how about you find a B&B then let me know which one I'll cover the costs. Just until I get there.

Me: she slapped me.

Muller: what!? Maybe I need to come back home and really sort this out.

Me: no. It's okay, I'll just find the B&B, she'll beat me up if you confront her now.

Muller: \*sighs\* okay, I'll pay for the place. And

don't do anything crazy.

Me: I won't try to kill myself. Don't worry.

Muller: okay kid, I love you.

Me: I love you too Bro.

We both hung up and I was so bored that I went on Instagram to check my feed. That got boring, I went on my Facebook. I saw I was tagged in a post by Skylar. My eyes popped out when I saw that it was also picture of me and Xavier. How did she even get it? I quickly removed it but it was no use, most people saw it. There were plenty of comments that were hurtful to me. I found myself crying and I deactivated my Facebook account. I didn't even want to see the rest of those comments. How did Skylar get the picture she doesn't even have my number! I see Zikhona behind this! I received a call from Xavier. I dropped his call upset that hanging out with him always brings me trouble! He called

again and I just dropped it. He didn't understand and he sent a message.

Xavier : answer the fucking the phone.  
I'm not playing with you.

I didn't reply to it, he sent me a message again. I just sighed wiping my tears.

Xavier : I'm going to track your phone, so if you know what's good for you you'll answer your fucking phone.

He called me again. if he comes here my mom will cause a big deal out of it. But then Xavier is just playing he wouldn't do that. I told him how crazy mom is he wouldn't do that. I went to my room to sleep because I was really tired. I slept with a heavy heart.

.  
-- RELLIK'S POV --

.  
.  
Pissed off, I threw the phone on the bed. I was currently staying at nearby B&B. She wasn't even replying to my texts. I had this app that tracks people's phones on my laptop. So I tracked her down. I found out where she is. I quickly got in my new rental white Audi than drove to the place. It wasn't that far, I knocked the lock on the gate. The dogs went crazy. I just looked at them. The kept barking and barking all angrily. I texted Lona again.

Me: come outside.

The door opened and it was this woman that looked like Lona, I assumed it was her mother.

She had this weird look on her. I didn't even smile at all because I don't agree with her slaving my wife around.

Me: I'm looking for Lona.

Her: why?

Me: she knows

Her: she went out.

Me: I know she's here.

She went inside the house without closing the door. I waited for her to call Lona then Lona appeared. She had red eyes, and her eyes were puffy. I knew she must have slept crying. She came closer and opened the gate then stepped outside.

Lona: are you trying to get me killed?

Me: why weren't you answering my calls and texts?

Lona: so every time I don't do what you want you're going to come to my house angry.

Me: yes.

Lona: my mom won't like that.

Me: then I guess you have to stop pissing me off.

Lona: what do you want Xavier?

Me: what did I do now?

Lona: nothing. I just want to sleep then look for B&Bs when I wake up.

Me: B&Bs?

Lona: I'm moving out until Muller and King return.

Me: why?

Lona: my mom is being a bit crazy.

Me: how?

Lona: she slapped me this morning.

Me: what!?! \*angry\*

Lona: chill.

She touched my chest, I looked at her hand then at her. She removed her hand and looked at me.

Lona: I don't want to cause drama. I'll just pack and I'll find a B&B.

Me: I know a place.

Lona: really?

Me: yeah. I could even pay for you. I-

Lona: hell no. Muller will pay.

She chuckled holding her stomach. Then I

remembered I was going to take her out to get her some food.

Me: let's go.

Lona: go where?

Me: to get you some food.

Lona: I have to tell mom I'm going first.

Me: okay, I'll be waiting next to the car.

She went inside the yard, and I walked to my car. This street was very quiet maybe because it's next to the town? I waited for Lona and I received a text from Scrappy.

Scrappy : how's the EC?

Me: nothing major.

Scrappy : well it's about to get major. I



need you here by next week. Kingston wants 30 girls. And you know he won't deal with anyone besides you.

Me: fuck! I'll be back next week then.

Scrappy : fede fede.

I looked at the time and Lona was not getting out the house. I didn't know if I should go in there and check on her especially when her mom might try something on her. At the same time there are dogs here. I brushed my face with my right hand in anger. She later came out, she had changed her outfit. It was a Jean with white sneakers and a "madness" t-shirt. Her hair was in a curly ponytail that was on her front like a bang and she was wearing these white shades. She had on this little bag with her. She looked great, I was just in awe. My wife never ceases to amaze me. Every time I look at her, she gets more and more beautiful. I opened the

door for her and she mumbled a cute "thank you". I got in the car and we drove off. She directed me towards Pick 'n Pay. There she went inside, I held her hand. She chuckled and browsed through the store with me.

Lona: I don't want your hoes beating me up.

Me: \*chuckles\* don't worry, they're all the way in Cape Town.

Lona: \*rolls eyes\* mxm.... Oh this is cute.

She said at this ugly black teddy. I picked it up, and she looked at me more like glare at me.

Me: stop that shit.

I chuckled and pulled her close, into a side hug. She just smiled up at me. She picked her food, it

was just something that looked like oats and some yoghurt. Then she took some peanuts, and we went to pay. And of course we argued on who will pay, and I ended up paying. I kept laughing at her pouting. I took the plastic and held her hand. We walked to the parking and I opened the door for her when we got to my car.

Lona: I'm still getting used to you being a gentleman.

Me: don't push it.

She laughed. I gave her the plastic then closed the door. I went to my side and got in.

Lona: aren't you going to eat?

Me: nah.

Lona: nigga-

Me: didn't you say you're hungry? Eat your food.

She laughed at my serious expression. She started mixing the oats thingy with the yogurt. I looked at her food, then at her. I don't understand why she wants to lose weight when she is this perfect. She took off her white shades and place them on the dashboard then started eating. She looked so adorable eating, and she had this cute little smile.

Lona: want some?

Me: fuck no.

Lona: come on, please try it.

Me: Lelona no. Why don't you eat proper food?

Lona: you sound just like my mom. \*rolls eyes\* please try this.

She gave me a spoon full of the food she was eating, she pouted and I just shook my head. I ate the food in the spoon, it wasn't bad but it wasn't nice at all. I don't know how she survives on this. She took the black teddy and I chuckled at how I'm changing for this girl and she might not even feel the same way.

Lona: what? \*smiles\*

Me: nothing, that teddy is ugly as hell.

Lona: don't diss my child.

I smiled and took out my phone. I went on WhatsApp, Lona was eating so I went to my statuses. I took a video of her eating.

Lona: this is good... wait, why are you taking a video of me?

She blushed hiding her face. I smiled and turned off the camera. I just put a caption of a black heart. I turned on some music and the song that played first was Post Malone ft Quavo- Congratulations. I didn't think she liked the song until she took out her phone and made of video of her singing it. I also rapped along, and she made of video of us singing the song together.

Us: "They was never friendly, yeah  
Now I'm jumping out the Bentley, yeah  
And I know I sound dramatic, yeah  
But I know I had to have it, yeah  
For the money, I'm a savage, yeah  
I be itching like a addict, yeah"

She stopped the video quickly and pressed sent.

Me: I didn't even know you listen to these type of songs

Lona: King always plays them in the house. I just listen to them.

Me: \*chuckles\* will you pack everything at your parents house?

Lona: no, just a few stuff because I won't be staying at the B&B for long.

Me: what's something interesting to do here?

Lona: nothing at all. It's a boring town.

Me: it can't be that boring.

Lona: trust me it is. \*chuckles\* all the interesting things are in East London.

Me: damn, no wonder you don't want to come back here.

Lona: yeah ans the other thing too.

me: your mom can't be that bad.

Lona: trust me she is.

~~

Me and Lelona talked a lot to a point where it got dark. She was worried that I wouldn't take her home, earlier. But I wanted to piss off her mom. If she does something to Lona and I'm in town. She'll fucking kiss Lona's ass when I'm done with her. Since Muller and King don't do anything I will do something. I'm not going to sit around and let her abuse Lona.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I was very scared that my mom will turn everyone in that house against me and say that I went against her and went out with my boyfriend. And Xavier isn't even my boyfriend. She almost strangled me when I went out the



house to go to town with him. I didn't even want to tell Xavier about Skylar's post because he told me that I shouldn't let people's actions control my emotions. And people shouldn't control me by my emotions. So I just cried at home and tried to get over it. Now I'm learning to just deal it. Not everyone will like me. And Skylar is just stupid to let people control her because Zikhona is too much of a coward to do anything she's always fighting for her friend Kayla. But I wonder if Kayla will ever fight for her.

Xavier: she's not going to do anything to you, you'll just take your clothes and leave.

Me: she'll have my dad beat me up for bringing a guy over. I'm surprised she hasn't even called Muller or King to confront me.

Xavier: this lady will end up annoying me.

Me: she already annoys me.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* it's only 2 weeks.

Me: I want them to hurry up.

Xavier: to cheer you up, how about tomorrow we do something fun?

Me: let's go the Aquarium! \*excited\*

Xavier: what? \*laughs\*

Me: I have always wanted to go there. But it's in East London. You don't mind a long ride right?

Xavier: nah \*smirks\*

Me: umdaka \*laughs\* (you're nasty)

Xavier: you're the one that said it.

Me: well I meant literally not figuratively. I should've said excuse the pun.

Xavier: \*laughs\* yes you should have.

Me: excuse the pun, Xavier. \*chuckles\*

He looked at me with the look he always does,

it's like I'm the only person he sees, I doubt I'll get over this look.

Me: stop that. \*blushes\*

Xavier: stop what? \*smirks\*

Me: looking at me like that .

Xavier: I always look at you like this.

Me: no you don't. This is a different look. And it needs to stop \*laughs\* so what's the real reason you're in King Williams Town?

Xavier: for you.

Me: liar.

Xavier: I'm serious.

Me: you came all the way from Western Cape to me because I was crying. Yeah right.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* if you don't want to believe me than that's fine.

Me: wow. I thought you came for your shady businesses

Xavier: \*chuckles\* shady businesses.

Me: well you don't want to tell me what you do exactly I only know that you're a gangster

Xavier: and you don't need to know.

Me: you sound just like Muller and King. Why shouldn't I know? I can keep a secret .

Xavier: so we don't get you into a lot of trouble when the police get involved. So they can see you really didn't know anything and you can go off easily.

Me: okay, now I finally understand.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* took you long enough.

Me: shut up. Are you even ready to take over the whole drug empire?

Xavier: what?

Me: I heard you're going to take over.

Xavier: who said that?

Me: somebody.

Xavier: who?

Me: just answer the stupid question. \*laughs\*

Xavier: yeah only a few months left. You need to tell me who told you about that anyway?

Me: the answer is so obvious.

Xavier: Cardo.

Me: we were just talking about it. I feel bad for your girlfriends.

Xavier: they are my hoes.

Me: whatever .

Xavier: why are you even worried about them?

Me: since you'll be taking over. Just means that they will be in more danger.

Xavier: well they wanted that life, now they have it.

Me: don't say that, they're still humans.

Xavier: they are hoes who are willing to sell themselves to the highest bidder vir geld. (for money)

Me: you don't know their situation.

Xavier: \*sighs\* stop seeing the good in people. That's what gives fucked up people the advantage to bully people. You need to be more rude

Me: mxm I'm not going to change just because a person. I can't treat everyone badly because I was bullied, that will make me be just like them.

~~

After talking Xavier finally agreed to taking me home to get my stuff so I can move to the B&B he lives in but we'll have separate rooms. I was scared to even go in the house. Dad's car was not there, maybe he's working late. I went inside and Xavier waited outside for me.

Aunt: heeeh! Libuyile ihule \*laughs\* (the hoe is back)

I didn't reply, I just walked in my room. I was shocked to see my mom on top of my bed with my journal in her hands. I felt angry. How could she invade my privacy like that? She picked up her sjambok .

Mama: kutheni ndixakwa nguwe Lelona? (why are you giving me a hard time. Lelona?)

## LONA'S OUTFIT

[02/17, 16:43] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 16

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I backed away from her, and going towards my door. Xavier was the only one I knew that could save me right now. I was so scared, tears were falling like waterfalls in my eyes. And I couldn't even get a word out.

Mama: kungona uzofumana isizathu sofownela uKhazimla kengoku (now you'll have a reason to call Khazimla)

Me: mama, uxolo. (mama, I'm sorry)

Mama: xolo for ntoni? Ukundiqhela endlini yam?  
Tchin Lelona. Unezinza ngoku. Ubhala ngekwenkwe apha kodwa awukagqibi neVarsity



le! Ufuna ubuya eCertificate seSisu? (Sorry for what? Disrespecting me in my house? You have grown. You're writing about a boy but you are not even done with university! Do you want to come back pregnant? )

Me: hayi mama. (No, mama)

She stood up, and I just ran out of my room, she whipped me once when I was running in my back. I felt the pain, I tripped and fell outside in the front. The dogs kept barking. She whipped me and whipped me as I cried covering myself up. I just hoped I didn't have bad bruises on me. I screamed in pain. She wasn't hitting me in much force but it was painful. I was crying begging her to stop. I doubt she even cared. That's when I heard the gate open. And Xavier pushed my mom so hard, she fell on the stoep dropping the sjambok. The dogs tried biting him but he took the sjambok and started

beating them up with it and they ran. He looked like he was ready to strangle my mom. I was still in pain on the stoep.

Aunt: hey! Kwenzeka ntoni apha!? (What's going on here!?)

Xavier took out his gun and he was about to shoot my mother. My aunt screamed and ran inside the house.

Me: Xavier no! \*shouts\*

My mom looked so scared. She was crying and she even pissed herself. I gained the courage to get up, and I stood in front of Xavier and his gun. He was very angry, and it scared me a bit. His gun was now aimed to my chest because I was in front of him and my mother .

Me: no. Don't do this, please. She's still my mother no matter what happens. Please.

I got closer and hugged him, he calmed down a bit. Once I broke off the hug, he placed his gun back in the back of his jean. I winced because my body was painful

Xavier: you're in pain?

I nodded crying. I really don't understand why she hates me so much. He picked me up bridal style and went out the gate and to his car. I helped him by opening the door of the car and he placed me in it. Then he closed the door. Once he went to his side, he sped off down the road.

Xavier: are there any doctors at this time that are still accepting patients?

Me: no. But there's a public hospital.

Xavier: direct me to it. I'll accept anything at this moment so you can be okay.

He sped off to the hospital. There it took a long time for me to attend to and he was very annoyed, and very angry.

Xavier: why the fuck are you standing there and talking when she's in pain!? \*shouts\*

Me: Xavier please calm down

Nurse: sir, she's not the only patient in this hospital and she doesn't even look like she has injuries. You have to wait. You do not own this hospital.

Xavier: what the fuck did you just say to me!?

\*angry\*

He was about to take out his gun, I quickly stood up from the place I was sitting in and stopped him from doing something he'll get arrested for. What is up with him and guns!?

Me: calm down.

Xavier: this bitch really doesn't know me.

Nurse: tchin batheni na ababhuti bacinga sizogala ngabo ngexaba bene'mali.

Baphambene. (These men think we'll attend to them first because they have money. They are delusional)

Xavier was about to go to her, and really beat her up. I quickly pulled him back, it was no use because he was stronger so I stood in front of him and hugged him holding his arms and

hands, to prevent him from beating up the nurse.

Me: please. Don't do this, not here.

Xavier: I can't let her disrespect me like that.

Me: let's just go home. I'll drink painkillers then we'll go to the doctor tomorrow.

He took his hand, and we were about to walk out. I heard the nurse mumble something.

Nurse: ezinto ziphathwa ngabafazi babo bagulela thina. (These things are controlled by their wives, they go crazy on us)

I held Xavier's hand tightly to let him know he shouldn't pay any attention to them. He opened the door for me and he drove off to the B&B he was staying in. The rooms were fully booked so

I had to share a room with Xavier.

Xavier: let me call JR, maybe he has some meds. I didn't bring any.

I just nodded and just looked around. There was only one bed here. And I don't feel comfortable sharing a bed with Xavier because he's my friend, who happens to be so hot, and I don't want to develop feelings for him.

Xavier: come to my room... fede fede.

Then he hung up. He looked at me, I was still analysing the room. It was really good. EL Shaddai is really a good B&B. I heard a lot of politicians and important people come here when they have business trips in King Williams Town.

Xavier: get on the bed.

Me: what!?

Xavier: not like that. \*chuckles\* I know you're in pain and standing up won't help.

He opened his suitcase and took out another t-shirt.

Xavier: you can wear this

It was a military printed t-shirt. I went to the bathroom, even though I struggled putting it on because of the pain I was in. Finally I wore it, it's wasn't long, kinda too short. I think he would be able to see my ass and I was wearing a thong. I didn't even want to get out of the bathroom.



Xavier: JR is here with the meds, Lona.

I quickly took the towel and wrapped it around my lower body, then walked out. JR gave me the medication and the water then he walked out after the gang handshake with Xavier. After 30 minutes of me and Xavier talking and also us watching the "Smurfs The lost village" on his laptop, he downloaded it for me. I was tired. And I had removed the towel a long time ago because I was inside the bed.

Xavier: I can't believe an 18 year old is watching Cartoons.

Me: \*yawns\* cartoons make the best movies.

I smiled, and i felt drowsy and slept. Even though my curly hair was annoying me because it was all in my face. But I managed to sleep.

~~

After my morning routine, Xavier got me a new toothbrush and all the toiletries I needed. I still wore the same clothes from yesterday. Xavier went out to get me food. He was angry when he saw the bruises on my arms and legs. After he came back. We ate then he wanted to take me to the doctor. So we were on the road again

Xavier: direct me to a good doctor.

Me: my family doctor is Dr Fredricks.

Xavier: direct me to him.

I did as he said, he looked really angry as he sped off to Fredricks. While his hand was on the gear, I held it to calm him down.

Me: it's nothing major. I'm going to be fine.

Xavier: don't fucking tell me that! She was ready to kill you. Every time I think about it, It angers me more. I should do what she planned on you with her.

Me: don't touch her.

Xavier: what!?

Me: I'm serious. Khazimla and Yanga love their mom so much that they'll do stupid shit.

Xavier: I don't give a fuck about those two.

Me: I do because they're my brothers and that's my mom no matter what. And King plus Muller will put a stop to our friendship. Please don't act irrationally. I'll be fine, it's just a few bruises.

~~

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

She was told to wear a gown, the gown was dirty and I was pissed off that they would give her a gown like that.

Xavier: don't you have cleaner gowns?

Lona: Xavier! I'm so sorry, he's not always like this. He is under a lot of stress these days.

She glared at me, the nurse walked away.

Lona: what is wrong with you! ?

Me: this is dirty.

Lona: I know but we're not here for clothes but for the medical attention. Now please stop being rude. Please.

She looked at me with a pout, and she hugged me not tight at all. I could see she was still in pain but she was trying not to piss me off.

Lona: you have to wait here, I'm going to be naked there.

Me: so?

Lona: don't start.

Me: wait, the doctor will see you naked?

Lona: duh.

Me: is it a female?

Lona: no.

Me: fuck no.

Lona: he has been my doctor ever since I was a child

She chuckled and quickly stopped. She was in

real pain. I swear her mom is going to pay for this. After the doctor check, she came out. She went to change her clothes

Lona: we need to go to the chemist to get some of the medicine and ointment the doctor said I should use for the bruises. They're not that deep. Luckily the clothes I had on helped, and she didn't get my face. So there are no bruises on it.

Me: she still needs to learn her lesson.

Lona: Xavier we talked about this.

Me: why are you protecting her!?

Everyone looked at us because I was loud. She pulled me outside with my hand, I smiled at how tough she thinks she is. She had this serious cute facial expression on her. Then she folded her arms.

Lona: I'm protecting you, if Khazimla and Yanga'inkosi find out that you have touched or offended their mom. I'm even scared she'll tell them about the incident earlier and turn them against me.

Me: I'm not scared of your brothers.

Lona: i know you're not. But please respect what I just decided on. You're going to leave my mom alone. I don't want my brothers hating me.

Me: why don't they do anything?

Lona: she never listens to them when they are not in town. But when they are, she becomes more nice to me and all of that motherly stuff

Me: are you sure she's your mom?

Lona: positive. She's just too strict. Because if I were to get into a street fight, that's totally never going to happen, I know she would defend me.

Me: and how do you know that?

Lona: when...

She stopped and looked down. I lifted her hand up with my index finger. She had glossy eyes.

Lona: when I tried to kill myself because of the bullying, she went to the school and started beating up my bullies with a hard stick. I used to tell them about the bullying but they always thought it was just kids playing, until I tried to kill myself. She got angry, and went to the school. And she beat them all up looking all crazy. Kayla still has that scar \*chuckles\* I know she loves me it's just that she can't express her love properly that it comes off as abuse. She doesn't feel any connection with me because of the depression she got after giving birth to me. She's a strong woman and me being weak made her believe I was a demon



child aka we both have been bewitched.

Me: well now I'm here and she has to follow some rules

Lona: \*laughs\* you're crazy.

Me: I'm serious. She can't touch you. Or else I might have to do something.

She stopped laughed, and her phone rang. I didn't even think she had it with her.

Lona: hello?... she tried to beat me up with a sjambok... I'm serious... she got aimed with a gun? What? She lying. I couldn't even take my clothes because she was so angry. I didn't go there with any guy. She's trying to make you guys hate me, and maybe it's working because clearly you are taking her side.

I smiled at how fluent she was at lying. I didn't even think she had it in her. In between the call, she would take silent breathing practices.

Lona: you're coming back when? Next week!?  
\*excited\* thank God! I am staying at the El Shaddai B&B. No I'll pay with the remaining money i have in my account. Please don't worry.... okay love you too Bro.

She smiled and closed her eyes. I chuckled and opened the door for her. She got in and smiled. After I closed the door for her, I went to my side of the car and got in.

Lona: they're coming back next week. I am so happy.

Me: I see. I have to go back to Cape Town next week. So you'll be safe.

Lona: you are going because of King & Muller?

Me: no \* chuckles\* I have to get back to the businesses.

Lona: what if my brothers weren't returning next week?

Me: then you would've returned to Cape Town with me. \*shrugs\*

Lona: \*laughs\* you're crazier than I thought.

Me: you need to direct me to the chemist

Lona: what would you do without me? \*smiles\*

I chuckled then she directed me to the chemist and I got out and opened the door for her. Their chemist was in a mall. When we were walking in the mall I made sure to hold her hand so these niggas know she's taken. And they won't try anything crazy because I'll kill them now in a split second. Once we went inside Clicks. I followed her around when she was getting the

medication and other stuff she needs. After all of that, I paid for the things

Me: why are you always upset when I pay?  
\*chuckles\*

I help her hand and took the plastic and we walked out.

Lona: because I know guys. They want to get you all the things and expect something like sex in return. I do not want that.

Me: am I like the other guys?

Lona: yes. You have like 3 or 4 girlfriends and they are all okay with you having other girlfriends. It's weird.

Me: that's because I haven't found the one yet. Well I have found her. I'm just walking on eggs

around her

Lona: you? Found the one? Yeah right \*laughs\*

Me: why is it hard to believe I would find the one?

Lona: because you don't look like the type that believes in soul mates or even in relationships.

Me: got that one right \*laughs\*

Lona: see! You would just sleep with the girl and be annoyed afterwards because she was just fresh meat you thought you couldn't have. Now you have it, you'll get annoyed by it.

Me: are we still talking about me?

Lona: yes!

Me: this seems personal. \*laughs\*

Lona: mxm. Your fuckboy tendencies are arising again. Let's just drop this conversation.

She let go of my hand and walked fast, I pulled her back by the belt string of her jean. When she

turned around, I held her waist.

Me: come on. Don't be like that, I like that you're not afraid to speak the truth about me. I won't take it as a joke again.

Lona: yes. You shouldn't.

She pouted and I laughed. On other people, I would be annoyed by their pouting but Lona's pout was just too cute and her chubby face was cute as fuck.

Me: let's get you food in Checkers .

Lona: yeah.

We walked there and she picked the food and some dry fruit.

Lona: ugh, we should've come to this chemist. I forgot about it.

Me: it's fine by me. At least you have the medication now.

Lona: but I'm tired. The bruises are becoming painful. I want to sleep on something soft, the bed. I want to sleep \*sighs\*

Me: we're almost done. Stop complaining we're getting your food.

Lona: what will the B&B say when we are not eating their food?

Me: I don't give a fuck.

Lona: too much anger. \*laughs\*

She walked us over to the tills and I paid, we left. At the B&B, she ate and watched the cartoon movie she was watching last night. She was continuing with it. After making plenty of calls to Scrappy to get girls for the human trafficking

dealings. He told me he has 5 girls right now. I will finish up when I get there. I sat on the bed, she was inside the bed. Her medication was starting to kick in because I could see she was tired. Once I laid on the bed, I took the laptop and she stared at me. Time to test her trust on me.

Me: why are you so far? Come closer. I'm not gonna try anything.

She chuckled and moved closer to me. I placed the laptop on my thighs and pulled her closer to my chest. She laid her head on my chest and continued watching the movie. I smiled looking at her. I know she's developing feelings for me because if she wasn't she would've frozen at the thought of us cuddling. But now she's doing it. Her arm was wrapped on my lower stomach. Her actions show me she's now comfortable



with me. She continued watching the movie, she laughed at another Smurf being clumsy. I was glad to see her this happy. Now after all of these cartoons and she's asleep. I will have to pay her mom a visit. She can get keep treating my wife like this and keep thinking I'm going to let it slide. She has to pay.

[02/17, 16:43] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER  
~

INSERT 17

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

after I heard her light snores. I gently removed her, then wore some black sweats. I made sure to take my gun with. I won't kill her mom, just talk to her. And if she becomes disrespectful

then I will have to really do something to her. I called JR to watch over Lona since she's familiar with him and she won't have any panic attacks.

Me: watch over Lona for a while. I'm going out I'll be back in about an hour.

JR: ba uyabuza uphi? Zendithi uphi? (If she's asks where you are? Where should I say you are? )

Me: tell her I went out to check out the town.

JR: fede fede (sharp sharp)

Me: and do not let her out of the room without me returning.

I hung up the call, then I drove to her house. I never forget directions, so I didn't have trouble along the way. Once I parked near the house. There wasn't a car in the yard still. So I thought

maybe they didn't have a car. I walked over and knocked the lock on the gate. I knocked and knocked. It was no use, I climbed over the fence since it wasn't that long. I didn't see the dogs, so I went inside the house. It wasn't locked. When I opened the door, there she was standing from a bit far in the passage. She looked scared of me, and I did not care one bit.

Me: i am here to lay down some rules.

Mrs D: endlini kabani? Tchin unoluyolo andizokwenza lonto mna. (In whose house? You're overexcited I won't do that.)

Me: then we are going to do this the hard way.

I took out my gun and aimed it at her, she screamed and I'm sure the neighbours heard her. She looked like she pee'd herself.

Me: go get the sjambok.

Mrs D: intoni? (What?)

Me: I won't repeat myself. I did not stutter.

She cried going to her room to get the sjambok. My gun was still aimed at her. She threw it over to me because she was scared to get closer.

Me: no wonder you are so bitter towards Lona, because your husband is never home.

Mrs D: uyasebenza. Sumxeka. Ibetere nakulento uyenzayo. Uku'rob'ba abantu ayondlela yophila. (he works. Do not judge him. It is better than what you're doing. Robbing people for a living is not the way to live.)

Me: here are the rules... one, you won't even lay a hand on her or else your life will end. Two, all this bullshit you keep talking to bring her down will stop today. Three, if you tell Khazimla and

Yanga about this, you'll regret ever blabbling your big mouth. Do we understand each other?

She nodded very scared. I chuckled, she's just a scared bitch.

Me: now after all of this, you are going to pack up her things and I'll pick them up tomorrow.

She nodded quickly with no hesitations.

Me: just to assure we understand each other with the rules.

I picked up the sjambok, she started crying hysterically. I shook my head, and started beating her up with it so she can learn her lesson.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I woke up and the other side was empty. Maybe Xavier went out. I looked at the time and it was still 1pm, so it's still early. Well to me. I looked over to Xavier's side board and he left his cross chain and his laptop. I smile looked at the cross chain. I decided to wear it. He's my friend, i hope he won't mind. I wish he won't mind because this chain is too cute. I went to brush my teeth and wash my face. Then I went back to the bed. I took my phone, and the battery was 23% and I don't even have a charger. When Xavier returns I'll have to ask him to charge my phone with his laptop. I went on WhatsApp with the remaining battery percentage. I wanted to send Xavier a message and ask him where he is,

but than I don't want to seem like a needy person. So I just looked at statues Cardo posted because he was the only one who posted a lot. After that, I went out of WhatsApp and went to Snapchat. I took a selfie with Snapchat and edited " itme" in it. I was still wearing Xavier's shirt and chain. Then after saving the picture. I went on WhatsApp and posted it with you caption " ", after all of that I unblocked my brothers. But they still won't see the picture. I started getting hungry so I ate the dry fruit just to tone down my hunger. Boredom started striking in so I took selfies on his laptop. A lot of selfies. Then after a while I wanted to get some fresh air, so I wore my jeans. I looked for my shoes and finally found them then wore them. When I opened the door I was shocked by JR standing outside the door like a bodyguard. What is going on? Am I in danger?

Me: JR! \*shocked\*

JR: afternoon ma'am.

Me: really now?

JR: sorry. Afternoon, Lona.

Me: what are you doing here? Is everything okay?  
Where is Xavier? Is he ok?

JR: \*chuckles\* yonke into igrand (everything is okay.)

Me: sorry, it's just that I was not expecting this. You do not need to watch over me. I am not a child. I know how overprotective Xavier is.

JR: harde, Lona. Uzohlanya ba ndinohamba, ingabekwanga leplek (I'm sorry, Lona. He'll go crazy if I leave this place unwatched.)

Me: \*sighs\* but I want to go for a walk. Just to exercise my legs.

JR: kuzofuneka sim'fownele (we will have to call him.)

Me: I will do that. Don't worry.



I went back inside the room and called Xavier.  
He answered the call very fast.

Xavier: you can't leave the room

Me: what!?! \*laughs\* why not?

Xavier: I'll tell you when I get there.

Me: where are you?

Xavier: I will be there.

Me: you can't control whether I leave or not.

Xavier: Lelona stop being stubborn. You are injured.

Me: seriously? It's just whip bruises and it is not that deep.

Xavier: you are not leaving.

Me: I just want to go for a walk.

Xavier: I'll take you for a walk when I return.

Me: can you please just tell me where you are right now?

Xavier: I'm turning by Shoprite right now, I will be there in a few minutes.

Me: okay, Xavier.

He chuckled and we both hung up. He can't just say I should not leave the room. That is so bossy and controlling. I am thankful that he wants me protected but I am not a child that has to be locked up and watched whenever he leaves. After a few minutes he walked inside the room. I folded my arms. I was sitting on the bed. My back was against the dashboard and my legs were straight on the bed. I had a serious facial expression so he can know I did not like what he did one bit.

Xavier: are you really that upset?

I didn't reply and just stared at him. He smiled, I tried to hide mine because he was so cute and it was hard not to blush and smile. He came to my side of the side board then he sat on the bed he was really close to me

Xavier: come on I was trying to protect you here.

Me: from what!? Am I in danger?

Xavier: no. But I just want to be careful and take safety precautions.

Me: liar, you just don't want me to wonder around town without you.

Xavier: that too. \* chuckles\*

Me: well that is pretty unfair because you just went to town without me. But I can't go without you.

Xavier: fine, I'll take you with next time.

Me: what if I want some alone time?

Xavier: that's fine i will let you get some alone time.

Me: I thought you were going to say no. I was going to be so angry. I do not like being controlled.

Xavier: now I know \* laughs\* you still want to go to the aquarium?

Me: no. Let's just do it tomorrow. I think today we have to go to Street Fever. Check out some new sneakers.

Xavier: you love sneakers more than me  
\*chuckles\*

Me: that is not a bad thing at all. \*laughs\*

He looked at me, again with that look that is so sexy I find myself thinking about things that I shouldn't. He noticed the chain, and held it. He smiled at it, and just chuckled.

Me: I could take it off. It just looked too cute to be laying on a side board.

Xavier: I didn't say take it off. It looks more good on you anyway.

Me: thank you.

He nodded, and leaned closer quickly. I was shocked that he was about to kiss me. I didn't stop him, but then he kissed my cheek. I smiled because his lips were so soft, I wanted to taste them. Fuck! The worst is happening. I think I am developing feelings for Xavier. He got up and went to his laptop on the other side of the side board. He opened it and luckily he didn't see the pictures I took, yet. I smiled, because once he sees them he'll just smile at me with his cute smile.

Xavier: I am just going over some emails then we will leave. Okay?

Me: okay. I don't mind. I'll go change this t-shirt.

He nodded and continued checking his emails. I went to change back into my "madness" t-shirt. I was still wearing the chain. But it was inside the t-shirt. Once I walked out, he was also done with the business stuff.

Me: I need my phone charged please.

He reached his hand out for it. And I gave it to him. He noticed that the chain was inside the t-shirt. He smiles and placed his hand on my neck making me shiver from his cold hands. He smiled, then pulled the chain out.

Xavier: now you're good.

He charged my phone then he came close to me

Xavier: Let's go.

I smiled and blushed that he wants me to wear his chain.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

I smiled counting up my rent money and it finally reached where I want it to be.

Tomorrow it is settled I will pay my rent. Then

the remaining money I will get some groceries. After fucking Patrick, he finally gave me R20 000 because I lied and said I wanted to do some lingerie shopping and he was more than happy to sponsor me for that. I will have to get a new sugar daddy so I can have more money. I am the lazy type that does not want to work. So I would rather fuck men that are really willing to give a lot of money than to work shifts that will only reward me a lousy R500 per week. I like my lifestyle and some may say it's prostitution but I do not care as long as it pays the bills. I am ok with it. I did not go home this holiday because I do not want to go back to my drunk father and his misbehaving son. My little brother gets on my nerves and with my dad being a single parent, he had to take care of both of us, I had to be a mother to my little brother. I did not like that so I promised myself if I leave Eastern Cape, I am never going back to that hell hole. There was a knock on the door, I



groaned getting up to go answer it. I was shocked to see a detective in my doorstep.

Detective: afternoon, Mi-

Kayla: what do you want? \*annoyed\*

Detective: can I come in?

I opened the door further and he walked in. I was confused why the police was here. I did not do anything illegal.

Detective: I am just here to question you about the disappearance of Khan-

Me: wait, who reported this? Khanyi is probably with the guy she left with the other night.

Detective: her grandmother is very worried about her. She filed a missing persons case.

Me: what?

Detective: I need you to tell me everything that happened that night.

Me: we just went to a club, had fun and she said she was going home with her ex, I don't remember his name, Thando or Thabo I think.

Detective: which club was it?

I told him the name and he wrote it down, he was writing everything down. After that he stood up from my sofa, and shook my head.

Detective: thank you for your cooperation.

I just nodded and I let him out. I was very scared because what if she was dead or something and it would all be my fault. I really did not think Rellik would hurt her but now it believe that he really likes that fat bitch Lona. I received a call from Zikhona. I rolled my eyes,

ever since Khanyi has been no where to be found, Zikhona has been annoying me and thinking we should be best friends. To be honest, I liked Khanyi more than her.

Me: Zee

Zee: check Khanyi's Facebook. \*sniffs\* kuthiwa ulahlekile (they are saying she's missing)  
\*cries\*

My heart stopped and immediately started beating very fast. I quickly took my laptop and logged in on Facebook. It's already all over. People can not know what happened in that toilet. I do not want them blaming me. I will act shocked that she's missing so I don't have people thinking I knew about this. This is all Lona's fault if she didn't cry, and Rellik wouldn't have noticed and she would've made us all happy by killing herself.

Me: please don't prank me, Zikhona. Khanyi can not be missing! We were at the club together, and she went home with some guy, her ex Thando or Thabo I think, and they were both nowhere to be found. They're probably still having fun elsewhere together.

Zee: he was found dead in his flat. And it looked like it was broken in there, Khanyi wasn't there

Me: what!? When did all of this happen? And why am I just finding out!?

Zee: apparently her grandmother tried calling her and she didn't answer so she knew something was wrong and filed a missing person's case.

Me: I was never questioned by the police.

Zee: maybe they still don't know you were there.

Me: yeah. I hope she is okay wherever she is.

Zee: me too. This can not be happening in her

first year.

Me: yeah. Look Zee, I have to go. I'll call you later on.

Zee: okay, bye chommie.

I hung up. If my suspicions are right then that means Khanyi was killed by Rellik, and that means that Zikhona and Skylar are in danger. I hope those stupid bitches do not mention my name, because Rellik will also kill me. And he did warn me about hurting Lona. But I will do anything to get him to be mine. And I'm not stopping now, Khanyi's death can not be in vain. There no going back now. I already have started and I will get Rellik in the end.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

We went to Street Fever and looked at the sneakers. I kept looking until I found the one I really wanted.

Me: I am so getting these. They look dope.

Xavier: they look alright.

Me: liar, they look dope. I'll buy you some too, I got cash. \*chuckles\*

I was joking, but he glared at me making me laugh more.

Me: why can't I buy you these sneakers but you buy me a lot of things?

Xavier: because that's not how it's supposed to work.

Me: this is not 1980 where males had to take

care of their females. This is 2017 and women can buy things for men too.

Xavier: well my mind is still in 1980 and it is still going to remain there.

Me: mxm, I'll go pay for these.

Xavier: don't test me, Lelona.

Me: \*rolls eyes\* anger for what? \*chuckles\*

Xavier: I will buy the sneakers for the both of us, just not let you buy them for me.

Me: next time i am going shopping, I won't tell you because you are buy a lot of things for me. It is annoying.

Xavier: me being a man is annoying? \*chuckles\*

Me: no, you disrespecting my decision to not let you buy me stuff is annoying because I like being independent and buying my own things. It makes me feel good.

Xavier: well you will feel even better knowing

you won't use a cent when you are with me.

Me: with you?

Xavier: yes, when you are going to places with me. What did you think I was saying? \*smirks\*

Xavier thinks he is smart. He is saying something else but it actually means something else to make me feel confused. I don't even know what to think. I don't know if he means when I am with him as in dating or as in us shopping around and hanging out. He just loves confusing me.

Me: nevermind.

He just smiled at me and we look for someone to look for our sizes. When the person finally came back, we went to pay. Well he paid, I did not even want trouble so I just kept quiet. He is



a guy with an ego and he likes knowing people around him are well taken care of, that's what I noticed with him. He likes controlling things and he will get angry when things do not go his way. But that's not a bad thing, it shows he is a perfectionist he likes everything to be perfect and I am sure he plans everything he does. I like that, it means he is very sure about his future. He took the bag and we walked out holding hands. He looked at me, I think he was shocked that I was the one who took his hand and held it. He usually does it. He smiled and I smiled too. When we were out, I frowned when I saw trouble. Kenny smirked when he saw Xavier. Xavier glared at him. Gosh, why did we have to bump into him today!?

- .
- .
- .
- .

.

## LONA'S SELFIE

[02/17, 16:44] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 18

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I held Xavier's hand tighter to tell him to control his anger because I know him. He'll want to fight for no reason at all. He could just avoid this by ignoring Kenny.

Kenny: en ons ontmoet weer (and we meet

again. Now in my territory.)

Me: Xavier, please let's just go. \*whispers\*

Kenny: you should listen to your bitch, Rellik.

Xavier: I dare you to call her a bitch one more time. \*angry\*

I pulled Xavier, so he can just calm down. But that only fueled his anger. He really wanted to fight and I just wanted to leave.

Kenny: she's a bitch.

Next thing I know, Xavier was on top of Kenny throwing punches. He got up and started kicking him. I was now on the verge of tears. I have never seen Xavier this angry and he was scaring me. Everyone started forming a circle around them, the fight was quickly broken off. I

was worried that the police would come here and arrest Xavier. Xavier was angry as fuck, I could see his mouth was bleeding so Kenny did end up throwing some punches too. But Kenny looked messed up, because of the rings Rellik was wearing on his fingers. I picked up the plastic with sneakers. Thank God, they weren't taken. I pulled Xavier away from people because I did not want this drama at all. I held his hand and tried pulling him towards his car.

Me: can you please control your anger? They are about to call the police. Let us just go.

And then I screamed when I felt a punch on my side cheek out of nowhere. I held my cheek in pain, I looked back and Kenny was trying to punch Xavier but it landed on me. Xavier threw a punch at him and Kenny ducked, then when he got up, Xavier quickly sneaked a punch and

it landed straight to his nose. The fight was broken up again. People were hyping this up. I was still in pain because of my cheek. This holiday just won't let me have me relax. First my mother whoops my ass. Now I have been punched, unintentionally I know, but still I have been punched. Some random guys helped me get Xavier in the car because he was so angry. He did not want to leave. He wanted to continue beating Kenny up. After getting him in the passenger seat.

Me: give me the keys.

Xavier: fuck no.

He touched my chin and checked my cheek. Then he slightly brushed it, I winced. His jaw clenched in anger.

Me: I am fine.

Xavier: he fucking touched you!

Me: Give me the keys, Xavier.

Xavier: I swear I am going to kill that motherfucker!

He will not kill anyone. I will talk to him but when he's calmed down. Because there is no use talking to him when he is like this.

Me: Xavier. I am not playing. Give me the fucking keys before I take them myself!

I was upset, if he had just ignored Kenny then I would have not been touched in the fucking face. He took them out of his sweatpants and gave them to me. I placed the plastic underneath the seat he was sitting in.

Me: and you better not move when I close this door and I will drive this car to the B&B. Let this petty bullshit go!

I went to the other side. I pray there isn't any traffic today because I don't have a learner's. And I'm already driving cars. Normally I drove to the B&B and luckily for me, there wasn't any traffic along the way. On the ride, I did not even utter one word. And Xavier understood, so he didn't even talk to. After parking, we both got out. He got out with the plastic. I walked to our room.

Xavier: Lelona.

Me: do not even talk to me right now!

Once we arrived in our room. I went to check

my cheek and it was pink. It was a bit swollen too. But it wasn't too much damage as I thought it would be. I drank some painkillers to take away the pain.

Xavier: what the fuck did I do? I was defending you! \*angry\* you want me to let people disrespect you?!

Me: you do not to react with violence every single time people talk shit!

Xavier: he called you a bitch and he fucking threw a punch at you. I can not let him do shit like that.

Me: just stay here I'll be back.

Xavier: where are you going?

Me: I said stay here

Xavier: do not fucking test me, Lelona. Now is not a good time.



Me: i am just going to the main reception. Do you want to hold my hand through that!?

I angrily walked to the reception and asked for a first aid kit for Xavier because he was bleeding in his mouth. But he acts so tough as if he doesn't feel shit. Gosh, I sometimes hate how manly he is. I just wish he could control his fucking anger and stop entertaining bullshit and reacting with violence. I was given the first aid kit. I rushed to the room, and when I was there, I was shocked to see JR and 4 other guys there. Xavier was still angry, and walking up and down while they were just standing still.

Xavier: I want him gone! I don't give a fuck about a stupid war.

I shook my head, and pulled him to sit down on

the bed. Then I opened the first aid kit

Me: don't listen to him guys. That's just the anger talking.

Xavier: Lelona, he fucking touched you. I can not let that slide.

Me: you are not. You are being mature about it.

I started by cleaning the blood off with a wet cloth.

JR: ndinqinela noLona kule. Imfazwe ayonto uyifunayo okanye oyidingayo (I am with Lona on this one. War is not something you want nor need.)

Xavier: who the fuck asked you about your opinion?

I slapped Xavier on his arm. He looked up at me since I was standing up and he was sitting on the bed. Then I put the colorless spirit on his little cut that was near his mouth which was why he was bleeding. He winced once the colorless spirit touched his wound.

Xavier: and why the fuck are you calling her Lon-  
me: I said so. Stop being rude.

Xavier: Lelona-

Me: no. These are humans too. And you are not killing Kenny, a war is too much. I am sure you do not want to die. Now stop feeding into your ego, and calm down.

The guys smiled at me, Xavier just chuckled shaking his head. I went to get him some painkillers and water. Then I gave them to him.

Me: drink up.

He drank the medication and gave me back the bottle of water. The little fridge had plenty of still water.

Me: guys, can you please come back when he is calm and refreshed? I am going to make sure he sleeps and thinks carefully.

I almost fell when Xavier pulled me to his lap, because I didn't expect it. The guys were cheeing at us, and I just started getting butterflies in my stomach, because Xavier kissed my shoulder. It's the little things he does that make my develop more feelings for him. The guys left and I looked at Xavier. His wound was little but still it was a cut. I tried to touch it but he winced.

Me: it is painful?

Xavier: a little bit.

He touched my bruised cheek. I could sense that he was becoming angry again.

Me: it is fine really.

Xavier: I feel like killing him with my own hands for even calling you a bitch and he made it worse by touching you. He keeps fucking provoking me.

Me: because he knows you will react in anger. Next time just let him talk his bullshit and not respond. Everyone will see how dumb he is.

Xavier: not in the streets. I let him walk all over me, then I'm a pussy. I need time teach him a lesson.

Me: what you need to do is rest.

I got up from his lap, and opened the bed covers for him. He smiled and took off his sweater then his shoes he was now shirtless because he also took off his tank top. He also took off his sweatpants and wore black shorts. I quietly cleared my throat, he is really getting too comfortable. He got in the bed.

Xavier: am I a child now?

Me: when you are behaving like one. Yes you are.

Xavier: I see you like controlling things too.

Me: it feels a tad bit good.

Xavier: but next time. Let me address my boys. I do not want you involved in any gang shit. And when you're too nice they will walk all over you.

Me: they are humans, they have feelings. You belittling JR like that was not cool at all. And I have to tell you the truth if I do not like something and I did not like that.

Xavier: fine. Just talk to me privately not in front of them.

I smiled then went to the other side of the bed. I took off my shoes and took his military shirt then rushed to the bathroom to change. I was scared again to leave the bathroom with only this short t-shirt. I finally quickly went out and got in the bed. He looked at me and just chuckled at my childish actions. He was watching rugby on the TV.

Me: can you please pass my phone?

Xavier: get it yourself \*smirks\*

Me: Xavier it is next to you.

Xavier: get it yourself, Lelona.

I groaned. This was his excuse to see my ass because clearly the shirt is too short and my ass will be exposed. I decided to sacrifice my phone. He chuckled when I folded my arms and leaned against the dashboard. Then he took my phone out of his laptop and gave it to me. I smiled and checked my WhatsApp messages and they were none that's how my life was boring. Xavier shocked me when he pulled me closer to him.

Me: what are you doing? \*blushes\*

He wrapped his hand around my waist. He held my waist and laid his head on my chest, well my breasts. My heart started beating fast, I quickly contained myself before he feels my heartbeat



beating fast. He was doing this while continuing watching TV.

Xavier: getting comfortable.

Me: on me?

Xavier: yes now, quiet down. The game is getting interesting.

I just smiled at him and let him be comfortable. I wanted to brush his little curly hair but then I did not want to make it seem awkward. But I went with my first instinct and brushed his little wavy hair. I could see he was enjoying this. He was even smiling. I have never been this close to any guy that isn't my family. It's like I am moving way too fast with Xavier. Even practically live with him without my clothes. He lays on my breasts and I let him. He kisses my cheek and I let him, earlier today I slept way too

close to him before I woke up with him nowhere to be found. I feel like I am even forgetting Omar, and I do not like that feeling because Omar meant so much to me, and I do not want to seem like I never cared about him because I really did. Xavier and Omar are really different people yet they both make me feel special, what am I saying? Omar is dead and he is not coming back. He made me feel special. Past tense, now he is gone. And I can not keep comparing Xavier to a dead person. I want to move on from what me and Omar shared because clearly it is not coming back. But then Xavier seems like the type to have plenty of girls begging for him. Am I willing to let his play with my feelings because I am sure he has done it with plenty of girls. What is different about me? I am a nobody, just a nerd. He probably sees me as a kid or he is doing all of this to just to get in my panties and say he had sex with me. If he is real then I can not date someone with anger

issues. So this crush, it's just a crush that I do not see going anywhere. It will fade over at least I hope it does. After a while, I heard him breathe heavily like he was sleeping. I smiled and just continued brushing his hair because he needs the rest. This gave me a chance to admire out his tattoos and whole body. His tattoos were a lot and very intriguing. I frowned when I saw the bruises he had on his hands. I could see he took off his rings. I do not want Xavier involved in fights because of me. He could get really hurt or get jail time because of him not controlling his anger. I carefully took the remote to change the channel but accidentally woke him.

Me: sorry, you can go back to sleep.

He just nodded and held me tighter and I brushed his head again to make him sleep. I

think they painkillers were making him sleepy. He slept again as I was watching Keeping Up With The Kardashians. I was in love with reality shows even though some are just fixed.

~~

He woke up at 6pm well his phone rang, and I had to wake him up because I did not want to invade his privacy and answer the call. He groaned waking up and snatched his phone from the sideboard.

Xavier: what?

I shook my head at his rudeness. He cuddled on my chest again. I just smiled, because he is acting like a baby. He loves attention.

Xavier: I told you I will be back there next week...  
Scrappy I am sure it is not that fucking bad, I

will handle it when I come back... just handle it for now and I will fix everything when I return.

Then he hung up. He got up, and checked my cheek. I just smiled at him caring so much for me. After that he continued cuddling with me, and just watched the TV.

Me: look who's the baby now.

Xavier: hoe jou bek (hold your mouth)

Me: \*chuckles\* you just love attention.

Xavier: this is a comfortable spot for me.  
\*chuckles\*

Me: yeah whatever.

Xavier: and what the fuck are you watching?

Me: do not judge. \*laughs\*

Xavier: things you girls watch. \*shakes head\*

Just 5 minutes later, food was served for him. I made my own little supper with the food I got from Checkers. It didn't require me to cook it so I was happy. After we ate our food, I decided that I needed to talk to Xavier about this whole war thing. I do not want to die.

Me: we need to talk.

Xavier: sounds serious.

Me: it is.

Xavier: okay, I am listening.

Me: you can not kill Kenny.

Xavier: Lona-

Me: no, listen. An unnecessary war will get created and people will get killed. I do not want to die. I am only 18

Xavier: while I am still alive, no one will touch

you.

Me: what about your family? My family? The innocent people that will be hurt through all of this. Please Xavier. Please don't start something you won't be able to finish. I heard a lot about gang wars. They never end well.

Xavier: next time he does fucked up shit. I will have to kill me.

Me: so that means you won't kill him?

Xavier: I'm letting this one slide.

I squealed and hugged him. He chuckled as he hugged me as well.

Xavier: tomorrow I will go get your clothes from your house.

Me: you can not go alone my mom will flip

Xavier: I can handle her.

Me: Xavier....

Xavier: trust me. I am just going to take the suitcase and leave.

Me: I will be there.

Xavier: no. You will be here.

Me: am I a prisoner here?

Xavier: no, but I am keeping you saf-

Me: then I am coming with. I have to see my mom after that incident. She must be worried about where I am.

Xavier: \*sighs\* why is it that you never listen to me?

Me: because you also never listen to me.

Xavier: \*laughs\* you are something else.

Me: I know right!? Such an amazing person I am \*smirks\*

Xavier: okay, you hang around me too much. Now my swag is rubbing off on you.



Me: your cockiness is rubbing off on me, you mean.

He chuckled then we watched some TV but he kept annoying me by working so much on his laptop.

~~

Tomorrow I woke up and after my morning hygiene routine. He borrowed me his oversized t-shirt. I wore it with my jeans and white sneakers.

Me: when we return I will changed and we will go to the aquarium.

Xavier: okay.

We drove to my house, and I won't lie. I was very scared of what will happen. Once he

parked, I was even scared to walk out. I mean I left my home to share a room with Xavier. My dad will very so disappointed. Mom must have already twisted the story of what happened that day. I don't even want to think of the words she will say to me.

Xavier: you are ready?

Me: yeah. Let's go.

We both walked out, and I knocked the lock on the gate. After a long time. My aunt opened the door. She was about to say something, but then she looked at Xavier and didn't say anything. She opened the gate, and walked back in the house. We walked in the house and as soon as I entered. I saw my mom, she stared at me. My heart started beating fast.

[02/17, 16:44] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 19

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

Lona's looked at her, there were just staring at each other.

Mrs D: your clothes are in your room.

Lona nodded with teary eyes. I glared at Lona's mother, if she mentions anything about me beating her up. I swear I will kill her and be happy about it. I won't lose Lona because of her.

Especially when Lona is starting to trust me.  
Lona went to her room, and took her suitcase  
from her room. I followed after her. She started  
sniffing.

Me: are you okay?

Lona: she is not even apologising for hurting  
me. I return home thinking she is worried but  
she just tells me my clothes are in my room.  
What type of mother does that!? Gosh,  
sometimes I hate her so much for making me  
feel like I don't matter.

Me: hey! You do matter. A lot, especially to me.  
... and your brothers.

Lona: thanks. \*smiles\*

I could see that she was smiling painfully  
because she just wanted to cry all her pain  
away. And I did not like seeing her cry at all. It's

like a knife is being twisted in my heart seeing tears on her face. She picked up a small book that looked like a diary and I helped her with her big suitcase. Once we went outside, her mom rushed to lock the gate without even saying goodbye to Lona. The suitcase was a challenge putting it in the car because of the pain in my hands, but I managed. I opened the door for Lona and she got in. I rushed to my side and I sped to the B&B. I opened the door for her again and took out her suitcase. When we arrived in my room, she threw herself on the bed and closed her eyes looking up at the ceiling.

Me: you still want to go to the aquarium?

Lona: yes please.

Me: let's both change and we'll go.

She nodded and got up. She opened her

suitcase and took out the clothes she needed, she walked to the bathroom to change. I also changed into my white Gucci hoodie. And a black bomber jacket. Then wore my red Gucci headband. I was wearing my black knee ripped jeans with white sneakers. After a long time, she came out wearing a black supreme hoodie and tight blue knee ripped jeans then had on black knee high boots that were like high heels. Her hair was in a messy bun. I love that she never wears makeup. It makes her look more beautiful than she already is.

Me: all done?

Lona: yes.

I walked closer to her and held her waist. She looked up at me.

Me: this is why I did not want you to go there.  
She ruins your spirit.

Lona: I am sorry.

Me: don't be. She should be. Now forget about her for a little bit and try to have fun.

Lona: I will. \*smiles\*

I kissed her forehead and she wrapped her hands around my body hugging me.

Lona: thank you for everything. Really. Without you, I probably wouldn't have survived any of these things. I really appreciate what you have done for me.

Me: dit is 'n plesier. (It is a pleasure)

She smiled and then broke off the hug. When we return from the aquarium I will ask Lona to

be my girlfriend I am tired of beating around the bush about how I feel. I want her to be mine and only mine. When we walked out I decided to send JR a quick message to do romantic shit for Lona when I return from East London.

Me: doen iets romantiese soos in die films vir Lona (do somethings romantic like in the movies for Lona) in the room, I want to surprise her when I get back.

JR : sure thing, bozza.

I opened the door for Lona and she thanked me getting in. I rushed to the other side. My phone rang when I started the car. It was Scrappy.

Me: Scrap.

Scrappy: you need to return ASAP.



Me: I told you, nigga. Ek will jou sien in die volgende week. (I will see you next week)

Scrappy: Kenny is planning to do something to you. Our spy called me yesterday. You are in his territory, you know Ghost can not protect you there.

Me: I hear you.

Scrappy: even though he can't kill you because of the war. It doesn't mean he won't hurt you. Keep Lona safe.

Me: fede (sharp)

I hung up the call. I did not Lona to worry, so I didn't cancel the aquarium trip. I drove off to East London. She didn't know East London that well so I had Google where the aquarium was. Once I found the destination, I used a GPS app on my phone to lead us to the place. When we finally arrived, she had this big smile. I think

she was really excited.

Me: and we're finally here.

I got out and opened the door for her. She walked out, and held my hand. I smiled because clearly she had feelings for me now. My plan worked. I eliminated Omar, became her comforter and finally she developed feelings for me. I paid the money to get in and we went inside. I could see how her eyes lit up every time she would see a fish.

Lona: wow.

She gasped when she saw a shark. I smiled at her because she looked so fucking beautiful. I don't understand how a girl like this doesn't see how beautiful she is? She has the most perfect

body. The jeans were so fucking tight, it made her ass pop out. Lona is so amazing, and the thing that makes her more beautiful is that she doesn't brag about her beauty. She is just chilled, and what she did with the first aid kit showed me that she really cares and she is willing to do whatever for me. She keeps me calm and away from making irrational decisions. If it wasn't for her I would've killed Kenny and a big war would've been created, because Kenny's father is very powerful. And a war with him could mean that I am digging my own grave. I can not just put Lona's life in danger like that. She is still in her first year. She loves her academics and I want to let her finish her studies so I won't jeopardise that for her. She means a lot to me. I don't even believe that I actually am falling for her. I never planned to feel this way, falling in love and being a gangster is a bad thing. Because your lover becomes your weakness.

Lona: are you okay?

Me: ja

Lona: you have been quiet.

Me: ek dink oor iets. (I'm thinking of something)

Lona: what is it?

Me: where did you learn afrikaans? \*chuckles\*

Lona: that's what you are thinking about?

\*laughs\*

Me: no, but it's a question I always want to ask you.

Lona: I took Afrikaans as a subject in high-school.

Me: so you can speak it \*smiles\*

Lona: no \*chuckles\* but I understand it.

Me: you should surprise me and speak in it.

Lona: yeah, no \*laughs\* now tell me what you

were thinking about that you can not enjoy this beautiful place.

Me: just about light stuff. It is not important.

Lona: just tell me and stop being dramatic.

\*smiles\*

Me: I will tell you when we get back to the B&B.

Lona: why can't you just tell me now?

Me: because andifuni (I don't want to.)

She laughed at me speaking Xhosa I don't know why she keeps laughing at me speaking Xhosa because I speak it well. I wrapped my arm around her shoulder and we walked around the place with her talking non-stop about how cool this shit is. I am not the romantic type, that's why I commanded JR to do that shit in the room. I don't even know what he will do as long as Lona loves it then it is okay with me. After the aquarium we went to get something to eat.

But she said she wasn't hungry so I had to park at Spar and force her out the car to get her food.

Lona: I really am not hungry \*chuckles\*

Me: just get something to eat.

She took dry fruit and some yoghurt then juice. I shook my head. I have to convince her to eat proper food when we get back home. It was a bit late so I didn't want it cause a stupid fight in Spar.

Me: you want to go home immediately? Or is there something else you want to do?

Lona: I am tired, so, home please.

Me: okay.

I paid for her things and we went to the car. I

went to a drive by McDonald's to get something for me to eat. Then we drove off back home. We were the only ones in the freeway, and it didn't feel quite bad until... I saw cars blocking the way. I was pissed because Kenny may have something to do with this. I quickly took out my phone and gave it to Lona.

Me: immediately call JR and tell them to come here fast.

Lona: why don't you do it yourself?

Me: I have to handle something first.

She looked at the cars, and started breathing heavy.

Lona: Xavier no! You can not go out there. What if-

Me: not questions. Call JR. And do not get out of this car.

She nodded scared, I sighed and held her face.

Me: I am serious Lona. No matter what happens do not leave this car.

She looked scared and just nodded because they were a lot of cars. Probably like 6 cars and I was only one. Scrappy was right, it is dangerous for me being in their territory.

Me: once you get out. They will think you are involving yourself in it and they will do something crazy.

She looked at me with teary eyes.



Me: I will be okay.

I made sure my gun was secured in the back of my jeans and I got out the car. Once I locked the doors with a touch of a button in my keys. She quickly called JR. I walked closer to the cars that were busy also blasting Trap music. Kenny walked out of a Mercedes Benz AMG. Then the rest started walking out.

Me: a sneak attack? \*chuckles\* you are getting weaker by the day.

Kenny: sweet Lona won't think that when I am done with you \*smirks\*

Me: a war isn't something you want, Kenny boy.

Just as much as I can't kill him, he can't kill me.

Ghost will get pissed and a war will happen. But Kenny loves provoking me because unlike him, I can not control my anger that much. If someone messes with me or someone I love. I want them dead, and I want to be the one that kills them. That's why I was named Rellik because when I get angry I become a Killer.

Kenny: \*chuckles\* no, but beating you up just to scare your girl will make me a very happy nigga.

I was now more angry, but I need to calm down and stall them by talking, so JR and the others can make it here.

Me: jy dink sy will praat met jou? \*chuckles\* jy droom groot. (You think she will talk with you? You dream big.)

Kenny: sy is 'n meisie. Een dag sy wil gee in

(she is a girl. One day she will give in) she gave in to you.

Me: I am warning you.

Kenny: you will do what? \*chuckles\* look at this nigga thinking he is still tough.

All his stupid lapdogs laughed. In my mind I was hoping Lona will listen to me and remain in that car. But knowing my baby. She is stubborn, she probably will never listen to me.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

When Xavier walked out, I quickly called JR . He answered very fast.

Me: you need to come to the freeway, just after Mdatsane. We were coming back from East London. Kenny has ambushed Xavier. You need to hurry up.

JR: okay, get in the car and stay in the car.

Me: okay. I am already in the car.

Why do they keep telling me to stay in the car? I looked at them, they were talking for a long time. At even one moment they both looked at me and continued talking. I could see Kenny was being angrier by the minute. Out of nowhere he threw a punch at Xavier. And that's where Xavier went crazy and started beating the fuck out of him. The other guys started attacking Xavier too I could even see them taking out his gun. I was screaming so scared they might actually kill him. I can not just sit here and watch them beat him up like that I quickly unlocked my door and got out the car

and ran to remove them from him. One guy held me back roughly. I was crying and calling Xavier. He was on the tar road bleeding a lot and I could see her was badly hurt.

Kenny: isn't she beautiful?

He walked closer to me and I kept sniffing. I wish JR could get here faster.

Xavier: I swear if you fucking touch her again.

Kenny: never have I ever thought you would have a weakness, Rellik. You always gambled with people's weaknesses now it is your turn.

I was crying like crazy, Xavier looked at me worried. I was so scared because in times like this people get kidnapped or raped. Why in the

hell did I choose to hang out with a gangster!?  
Now I can't just let him get hurt because in the process I get hurt too. What I feel for him I can't describe because I can not say it is love, we met like a month away. It is too soon to say it is love. I tried toning down my cries. I didn't want them to hurt Xavier more because I was loud. I did not want them to hurt me either.

Kenny: maybe a night with her won't be too much. Don't you gents think?

My eyes popped out in fear. Xavier tried getting up but he was kicked down by another big guy. The one holding me tried dragging me towards a car. I screamed and resisted. The heels were no help though and the guy was very tough. I screamed and screamed. I was shoved in the car. I tried getting out but the guy got in and held me still. Another guy got in on the other

right side.

Me: Xavier! Xavier!

I saw cars approaching. they were speeding off very fast.

Kenny: get her out of her fast! \*shouting\*

I tried poking the other guy in the eye, it worked and I also did it on the driver so he can not drive. I can not be kidnapped today! Not ever, the other guy who was sitting in the right side slapped me so hard, I saw some tiny colourful stars.

?: drive, you idiot!

The car started moving slowly and my heart started moving fast, my breathing got abnormal and I was struggling to breathe.

?: itheni na lemedi kaRellik? (What's wrong with Rellik's girl)

I felt the need to vomit so bad, before I knew it I was vomiting on the guy on the right. Who was the one talking a lot. I felt a bit better at breathing. The guy screamed and shouted at me then the most scariest thing happened. The car was hit, making it spin and spin until it stopped. My head was so sore from the spinning and from hitting the chair in front. The guys opened the door, I was pulled out of the car. I saw JR.

JR: let her go.



He tried to come closer, but I was aimed with a gun. I gasped thinking about how I am going to die. I used to pray for death to come to me, now I am so scared. I was going to have a second panic attack. I screamed when one guy was shot, and I don't even know where the bullet came from. I stared at his lifeless body with tears following repeatedly.

JR: should I repeat myself?

I was praying so hard, even promising God I will go to church the next Sunday. I just cannot lose my life at only 18, my brothers still need me. I heard another shot fire off, I was just crying and asking myself why this happened in my life? I miss my boring life with only just books and family. What is happening today is so scary I don't ever want to talk about it again. The guy

pushed me towards JR and tried to run. But he got shot by JR. I have never seen so many dead bodies in my life and so much blood

JR: sukhalo umoja (don't cry, you're okay.)

Me: w-where is Xavier? Is he o-okay? Can we just go home please please.

JR: ndizoku hambisa khona (I will take you there)

Me: no.! No! I am going with Xavier. Where is he? Please take me to him.

Another guy came closer to us, I noticed it was one of Xavier's guys. He was behind the car

Me: he was the one shooting?

JR: yeah, this is Shooter.

I nodded, we got in the car, and I was still shaking scared from what happened.

JR: bozza uthe ndikubeke straight kwiB&B  
(boss said I should take you straight to the B&B.)

Me: no. Take me to him, please. \*sniffs\*

He turned the car around and sped off to where we left Xavier. I could see from afar he was not good. Another guy of his crew was examining him like a doctor. Once the car stopped, I got out quickly ran to him. I didn't care about the guy examining him. I just hugged him crying he hugged me back even when he was in pain, I still love his hugs, because he never gives them a lot.

Xavier: I told JR to take you home.

Me: I want to go home with you.

Xavier: Lona, please stop being stubborn. It is not safe.

Me: I don't care. You're hurt, I don't want to leave you.

Xavier: Kenny got away, he could be anywhere near East London and he will come for you.

Me: which is why I need to be closer to you.

He touched my cheek where I had a redish bruise from the slap. He looked at JR, but I answered the question he wanted to ask

Me: they are dead. \*sniffs\*

I saw people die right in front of my eyes. Will I ever get over that?

OUTFITS THEY WORE

[02/17, 16:44] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 20

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I was still worried about Xavier. His white Gucci hoodie was covered in blood. And he had bruises on his all over his face. His left eye was a bit swollen. And he had a black eye on it. He looked angry speeding the car off to King Williams Town. I didn't want to tell him to slow down because I would've made the situation worse. When we arrived at the B&B. We both got of the car in the same time. I didn't even want him to use his energy opening the door for me because I knew he was in pain. He was

really badly beaten up. I held his hand and we walked to his room. When he opened the door, I got the shock of my life. There were red rose petals everywhere in the room. It was also lit up with candles that were almost going to be finished. The bed had rose petals that spelt "be mine?". I smiled covering my mouth, and got in the room smiling.

Me: Xavier, what is going on?

Xavier: I was planning on surprising you.

Me: wow, this is. This is beautiful. Thank you so much.

I hugged him but later regretted it when he winced in pain. I avoided answering the question because do I really want to date Xavier? He comes with a lot of baggage and problems. Today I was almost kidnapped and raped. Do I

want to live my life in fear all the time?

Xavier: you haven't answered the question.

Me: Xavier. We can't date. My brothers will get very angry.

Xavier: so all your life you are going to live behind your brothers?

Me: they will go crazy and do something stupid.

Xavier: I am not scared of Muller and King.

Me: I am. I can not disappoint them. They want me to finish school.

Xavier: who said you won't finish school when you're with me?

Me: Xavier... what happened today showed me that you live a very dangerous life. I can not survive tha-

Xavier: look, I am tired of hiding my feelings for you. I want you and clearly you want me, so

why do we have to drag it?

Me: do you have to be rude about it?

Xavier: Lelona. I know I am not perfect, but having you by my side is the only perfect thing that would complete my life. I know I come with a lot of disadvantages but baby, I promise you. I will never involve you in my businesses that are dangerous.

Me: I don't want to ruin our friendship.

Xavier: we are sharing the same bed. Cuddling together and we hold hands in public. Lelona, it's clear we have something more than friendship.

Me: they are already calling me your weakness. I am not safe

Xavier: you are, because what I feel for you I can not even explain it. But I will make sure to keep you safe at all times even if I die doing that. Now stop being scared and be mine?



I looked down, and looked into his eyes. I don't know what happened but I thought all the times we have ever seen each other. From the kitchen at my brother's house party to today. I trust Xavier with my life, and I would be lying if I said these feelings will go away. He lives in Cape Town for crying sake! We will see each other often. And he is in the same gang with my brothers, well he is about to control my brothers. He looked disappointed that I wasn't responding to him. I smiled and nodded, then he chuckled and tried to hug me, but it was hard for him because he was still in pain.

Xavier: I promise you, this shit that happened today. It will never happen again. I will protect you from anything.

Me: don't worry about that now. Worry about your health.

Xavier: You really mean a lot to me Lona.

Me: \*smiles\* you mean a lot to me too

I made him sit in the bed even when the roses were there. I fixed the pillows against the dashboard and helped him inside the bed. Thank God the roses didn't make him uncomfortable. The little dinner that was organised on the floor really made me smile. This is so cute, and the candles make it more adorable.

Me: you need to sit down and rest.

Xavier: give me a few days and I will be okay.

Me: you should've went to the hospital.

Xavier: the same hospital that gave me shit for wanting quicker services.

Me: I will get you painkillers and you can rest.

Xavier: wait first take off my hoodie. I can't move my body properly.

I frowned and help him out of his clothes. He was now shirtless and I saw a lot of bruises. I tried touching his one of his bruises which was on his left side. He touched my hand, and kissed the back of my fingers because when he picked my hand it formed into a fist. He did this in the most cutest way, my heart started beating fast and butterflies were going crazy.

Xavier: I promise I will be okay. I don't want you to worry so much.

Me: maybe you do need to return to Cape Town, there you weren't getting hurt like this.

Xavier: I am not leaving you behind. Not in a million years.

Me: you could die here!

Xavier: ek sal nie gaan nie. (I will not go)

Me: what will you do then?

Xavier: I am taking you with me to Cape Town.

Me: what? My brothers will get very angry. I can not tell them about us yet, we have been dating for like 30 minutes? It is too soon.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* calm down. You will have to tell them you got tired of your mom.

Me: won't Kenny kill them?

Xavier: he respects them. Trust me, your brothers are not weak at all. They can handle themselves. It is you I am worried about.

Me: okay, when do we leave?

I could see she wasn't that much happy with us leaving.

Xavier: finally, you listen to me without being

stubborn.

Me: because I do not want Kenny to sneak an attack on you again.

I gave him painkillers and some water. But looking at his bruises I was worried he might have broken a rib when he was being attacked by plenty of men.

Me: who was the guy examining you?

Xavier: K9.

Me: is he a doctor?

Xavier: you could say that.

Me: it's either yes or no. Not "you could say that.

Xavier: he studied medicine but he is having a difficult time with financial issues.

Me: which room is he staying in? I need to call him to check you out again. What if you broke a

rib?

Xavier: Lona, please sit down I will be okay. Are you not hearing me?

Me: just to be sure, please.

Xavier: check the second room on the right.

Me: I will be right back, stay put.

He got out, struggling so hard. I rushed to him to help him get up.

Me: why are you getting up?

Xavier: I am going with you.

Me: no! You are hurt. Stop being manly about it, please. I will be back right now.

I sat him down again, and quickly checked the room he told me to check. I knocked and he

answered quickly, he was on his phone talking to his girlfriend because I heard the word "baby."

me: Xavier needs help.

He nodded and quickly got in the room and took this little bag that looked like a doctor's bag. Then he went out the room then he followed me and we both went to the room me and Xavier share. He was still talking on his phone with his girlfriend. He kept assuring he he was fine and he will be back next week. That is so cute, I wonder if I will be like that when Xavier leaves for his trips?

Xavier: K9 assure my worried girlfriend that I am fine.

I smiled at him calling me his girlfriend. I could get used to this. His voice when he says baby and girlfriend really send me over the edge.

K9: \*chuckles\* she's doing what any worried girlfriend would do.

He opened the bag, I switched on the lights and examined him again. He checked to see if he had any broken ribs by touching his body. I turned off all the candles.

K9: lucky motherfucker. No broken ribs. Just body bruises and face bruises.

Xavier: painful bruises.

He was about to give him some painkillers.



Me: I already gave him some painkillers.

K9: then I am done here.

Me: I am taking him to a doctor tomorrow.

K9: \*chuckles\* try to convince him.

Me: oh sorry, I am not saying you are a bad doctor or anything. I- ... I am sorry. \*sighs\*

He just looked at me with no smiles or anything I was scared. I didn't mean to offend him, but Xavier needs proper care.

K9: kumoja (it's okay)

Xavier: stop stressing my girl.

K9: I said it's fine. \*chuckles\*

He smiled at me and picked up his bag and I walked him out. I looked at Xavier who was

becoming sleepy.

Me: we are going to a doctor. You need to see one.

Xavier: K9 is one.

Me: don't make me feel bad because I already feel bad.

Xavier: he didn't take it to the heart.

me: but you still need to go to a doctor.

Xavier: come to the bed Lona, it is late.

I fixed his pillows and made him sleep properly. I changed into my shorts and baggy top pyjamas. Luckily he didn't see me. Then I got inside the bed, I looked at the remaining roses just smiling at them.

Me: what about the little dinner set on the floor?

Xavier: don't worry about that.

Me: okay.

He pulled me closer to him and I laid on his shirtless chest. I swear I could hear his heartbeat. I blushed because in a weird way this was so romantic. I heard his light snores and I knew he was sleeping. I wrapped my eyes around his waist but not in a painful way. After a long time, of me just staring at his tattoos and bruises, I eventually fell asleep. I woke up to things shuffling, I groaned waking up. Xavier was up and looking for something.

Xavier: damn, I woke you up?

Me: yes. It's okay. What are you looking for?

Xavier: painkillers. My body hurts like kak (shit)

Me: they are on my side drawer. Don't take a lot okay?

Xavier: okay.

I tried going back to sleep but it was useless because my sleep did not even come back, so I woke up to go brush my teeth. After I was done, I washed my face. When I returned to him, he was sitting on the edge of the bed. He looked at me, and motioned for me to come to him.

Xavier: come here.

I walked to him confused. He sat me on his lap. This dude is hurt and he wants me on his lap.

Me: Xavier you are hurt. I shouldn't be sitting on yo-

He cut me off with a kiss. Like a full blown kiss.

I was shocked he licked my lips for entrance and I gave in and the kiss was amazing! Even the little brushes he did on my waist sent me to heaven! Guys I never had a kiss like this. It was so passionate and sexy at the same time. His hand travelled inside my top and still brushed my waist. His hands were making me feel a way I know I haven't felt in all my years of living. I broke the kiss off because I didn't want to move too fast with him. He pecked my lips, and sucked my bottom lip then he pulled it. He pecked my lips repeatedly. I started giggling. And he chuckled looking at my eyes

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I have always wanted to kiss her, and it was the

best for her being pure. I chuckled at her being horny because her eyes became so small. I let her break the kiss off for because I know she doesn't want to move too fast. She's still an unexperienced 18 year old. Her being bullied in her high school life, I know I will have a hard time with her. But I think she is worth the challenge.

Me: you should start packing.

Lona: why?

Me: we are going back to Cape Town remember.

Lona: Xavier I can not just leave. Muller will flip because I haven't even told them I am staying with you.

Me: Lona we talked about this, you will tell them that you do not want to stay with your mom and you hate this place.

Lona: what?

Me: it is the truth.

Xavier: yes but what if mom tells them that I went with you?

Me: trust me, she won't.

Lona: what if Kenny hurts mom and the others? I can not just leave.

Me: Lelona I am not leaving you here. It's not safe.

Lona: \*sighs\* are you not hearing me? He could hurt my family.

Me: I do not care about that, your life is important to me more than them.

Lona: well I care about them.

Me: why? They treat you like shit.

Lona: that doesn't mean I should treat them like shit.

Me: Lelona, listen to me for once! \*shouts\*

She got quiet and looked at me with fear in her eyes. I regretted shouting at her because I do not want her fearing me. She stood up from my lap, and I sighed.

Me: I can not just leave you in danger. You are coming with me. I am sure Kenny will do nothing to your family he respects your brothers. he is messing with you because he knows how I feel about you.

I stood up even in pain, and slowly kissed her. She smiled in the kiss and I knew she was going to say yes.

Me: I only want to protect you.

Lona: fine. Let me pack.



She chuckled. I smiled at her giving in to my charms. I went over to my bag, and she stopped me.

Lona: what are you doing?

Me: trying to pack.

Lona: I will, do not do that. You are injured. Sit on the bed.

Me: you are exaggerating my injuries.

Lona: just sit on the bed and hush.

I smiled and slowly sat down while I was in pain. She packed my things then packed hers. It was taking a long time, and I was getting sleepy. The medicine was working.

Lona: I will book a late flight. You need to sleep.

Me: no. We need to go now. The quicker we are

out of here the safer you will be.

Lona: and you. Your safety is important too.

me: yeah.

She took her phone and started booking flights.

Me: I will pay.

Lona: you will rest. Now do that.

Me: lelona.

Lona: mhm...

Me: use my phone to book flights and put in my bank account details. I will tell you what they are.

Lona: I have already booked yours and I have paid now I will book mine.

I glares at her angry that she would pay but I

told her I would pay. I have the most stubborn girlfriend ever. She never listens to me at all, that's what I like about her because she challenges me. But I also hate it when it puts her life in danger. Like yesterday I told her not to get out of the car, but she did. That almost had her kidnapped and raped but as soon as I find where Kenny is. I am killing him, I do not care about any war. He touched Lona twice so he digged his own grave. And I will help him get into it.

Me: that's not how it is supposed to go.

Lona: look, I like paying for stuff and you always buy me stuff so I will buy stuff for you now.

Me: that is never going to happen.

Lona: stop fussing over petty things and sleep.

I chuckled at her being bossy. After a few

minutes she was still packing and I slept.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I watched him sleep again. Thank God because he talks and I can't concentrate on the packing I am doing. After I was finally done with my packing. I found my diary, well it didn't feel like a diary anymore because my mom has read everything. I wanted to burn it and forget about the things I wrote in there. It surprises me how she would read all the hurt I wrote in there but she would not reply to that by hugging me and telling me everything will be okay, she only replied to the "Xavier's smile" confession, and she reacted with a whooping of my life. What a disaster my life actually is. And I can not believe

I am saying this but Xavier and my brothers are the only ones that makes my life better.

Gangsters make my life better! Heee if someone told me I would be dating a gangster at only 18 I would scream saying they're lying. I always told myself I will never date a gangster because they come with trouble. My brothers do heists so they have a less dangerous life their only obstacle is being caught and going to jail. Gangsters like Xavier have enemies who want you to feel pain. They never find true love because everyone around them is killed. Do I really want that for myself at 18? I mean I was almost kidnapped yesterday! He was brutally attacked if it weren't for JR and Shooter. I would probably have died because of Kenny.

~~

We finally arrive late at night in the airport. The rental cars were taken, and we were waiting for our flight. I kept playing with Xavier's rough hands as he talked to his crew. I knew their

names now, it was JR, Shooter, K9 and Wiz. My phone rang and Xavier looked at me. I looked at the called ID. It was my aunt.

Me: I have to take this.

I walked a bit further away from them.

Me: dabawo. (Auntie)

Dabs: uphi? (Where are you? )

Me: ndibuyela eKapa (I am returning back to Cape Town)

Dabs: he!?! Ngexaye ndoda? (What!?! Because of a man? )

Me: dabaw-

Dabs: buyela kulendlu wena ndingekaxeleli uKhazimla noYanga ngalama nyala uwenzayo. (Come back to this house before I tell Khazimla

and Yanga about the disgrace you are doing)

[02/17, 16:44] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 21

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

My heart started beating fast, she sounded so angry and I knew she would do it. But if I stay here, Xavier is not going to be happy. Hell he won't even agree for me to stay. Kenny could be roaming around King Williams Town right now, and I am sure he is looking for me.

Me: dabawo andizokwazi. (auntie I can not)

Dabs: uhlalisana nomfana kungaphumanga neCent for wena. Inoba sowutyiwe notyiwa. Kodwa Lelona awuzithandi. Inoba waziyela nakulama ntombazana pha eskolweni sakho njemba waxoka kuthi wathi bafuna ukudlengula. (You're staying with a boy that didn't even pay a cent for you. Maybe he even had sex with you. Lelona, you do not love yourself. Maybe you even went to the girls at your school by yourself then lied to us and said they wanted to rape you)

Me: \*silently crying\* dabawo. Ndicela ungandenzi Lento. Uyayazi ibuhlungu kangakanani lameko kum. (Auntie. Please do not do this to me. You know how painful that subject is to me.)

Auntie: into endiyithethayo ndithi buya qha. Utata wakho une'worry apha. Hamba uzonatya kulamadoda for uhlala kwiB&B. (All I am saying is come back. Your father is worried here. You



go around opening your legs for men to stay in B&Bs)

I was so offended I even had hiccups while crying. I do not even know why I answered her call. She is my mother's best friend and my dad's sister what did I expect!?! They all hate me like I did something to them. I would say I am a bastard child and I remind them of my father's mistress, but I look so much like my mother it is like I am her younger version. Especially in pictures. I know I am her daughter she can not deny me, then why is she treating me like this? I felt hands on my shoulder, when I turned around. Xavier looked at me, he was confused as to why I was crying.

Xavier: what's wrong?

Dabs: uxelele lotsotsi wakho angaboyikisa bonke not mna. Makaye kwintanga zakhe.

Inoba zimxakile yilonto esiza kwabantu abalula njengawe. Uyayazi ba angathi umhle and akubize baby wena sowuthatheka umthande. Umuncu, ntombi yam (Tell that thug of yours they may all fear him but I do not. He should go to the people in his age group. Maybe they are too much for him and that is why he went for easy people like you. He knows he can call you beautiful and baby, and already you are in love. You're dumb, my niece. )

Xavier: give me that phone. \*angry\*

I just gave it to him. He was so angry and he doesn't even know why am I crying. He put the phone in his ear, and I looked down. My head was so down, tears fell on the floor. That's how hard I was crying. They do not realise them trying to make me strong only breaks me more and more. I am not being bullied by my school mates or Kayla anymore. Now I am being

bullied by my own aunt and mother.

Xavier: do I need to come over there so we can have that talk again?...oh you're her aunt?

\*chuckles angrily\* I know her mom told you we had a talk. Give her the phone.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

I wanted to curse the mother so bad, but I was shocked that it was the aunt. What the fuck is up with this family and hurting Lona?

Me: one thing I do not do is repeat myself.

Her: mxm inoba ucinga unguChuck Norris wena. Baninzi abantu endibaziyo nam abanoku susa kulomhlaba ngemini nje! (You think you're

Chuck Norris. There are a lot of people I know that can erase you from this world in just a few days!)

She wasn't saying all of that when I was there. She ran out when she saw the gun. She was making me angrier by the moment. I dropped the call and gave Lona the phone. I am in so much pain, dealing with this right now will only make me react badly towards everything.

Me: call your mother.

Lona: what?

Me: just do it, Lelona. No questions asked!

She dialed on her phone. She was shaking, whatever her aunt said really made her upset. After dialling she gave me the phone. Her mom answered after a long time.

Lona's mom: yintoni Lelona? (What is it, Lelona?)

Me: fix your bitch ass sister in law or I will fix her for you. You know I do not make empty promises.

Lona's mom: a-a. .. kodwa andikwazi uphatha izinto azenzayo. Ungumfazi omdala. Akasoze andimamele( i-i... but I can not control what she does. She is a grown woman. She will not listen to me.)

Me: hey hey! I do not give one single fuck. Make a plan. Whatever she has in her chicken head, I will remove in the most unpleasant way. Moenie speel met my nie ek is nie 'n spel nie. (Don't play with me I am not a game)

Lona's mom: he? (What?)

I dropped the call on her dumbass. I swear if those bitches jeopardize my relationship with

Lona, they will pay. It has been a long time since I killed someone probably like 1 or 2 weeks. And my ego is craving for someone's miserable cries for help. Lona was still looking down, I picked her head up, and hugged her. That only made her cry worse. It confused me, hugs are supposed to help but it looks like mine triggered her more. I even thought my black plain t-shirt was going to be soaked in her tears but eventually she stopped.

Lona: I am so sorry.

Me: it is okay. You know I will always be here for you.

Lona: maybe I should really go back. She- she will te-tell my bro- brothers...

She was having these hiccups she was struggling to speak. I hated seeing her like this.

Her face was so red, I wanted to forget about my injuries, go back to King Williams Town and kill that bitch for making my wife feel like this.

Me: you are not going back there. Your mom will sort it out.

Lona: but she also ha- hates me.

She cried hugging me again. I looked at the gents who were looking at me in smirks. They were surprised I actually have feelings for a crybaby. Trust me, I am also surprised I am not annoyed yet. I brushed her back, and whispered in her ear

Me: baby don't let them get you down like this. I promise everything will be okay.

Lona: I know her, she will tell them.

Me: fine, I will tell them myself if I have too!

Lona: no! That's a even bigger disaster.

Me: I am trying everything to make you stop crying my lief (love) but it seems like it's not working. Tell me what I should do, and I will do it. Please just stop crying.

I wiped her tears away frustrated that she is still crying. She sniffed and remained with hiccups.

Lona: I am done now. I just nee- need a nap.

Like clockwise our destination was called and I held her hand and walked to the boarding planes. After everything, we were finally in the planes. She looked out the window all sad and I did not like it one bit. She was so sad, I could feel it even in myself. I wish she could see how wonderful she is in my eyes, maybe then she



will stop listening to other people's opinions of her. I held her hand and kissed it, she smiled painfully and laid her head on my shoulder.

Me: I don't like seeing you like this.

Lona: I am sorry.

Me: she should be sorry, not you. What did she say anyway?

Lona: I do not want to talk about it please.

Me: it is okay. You should take your nap. You might wake up refreshed.

She nodded, after she pecked my lips she tried to sleep. Wiz looked at me and mouthed if she is okay. I nodded. But I want her aunt dead, I do not care how. But I do want it to happen.

~~

We arrived in Cape Town and I told Lona she

will stay with me until her brothers know she is in Cape Town. When we went inside my house, she was looking at everything in awe. My interior design was mostly black and white. Black was my favourite color.

Lona: wow, you live in this big house alone?

Me: no one to share it with.

Lona: yeah right.

Me: \*chuckles\* why are you so sure I have hoes?

Lona: it's the woman instinct in me.

I chuckled and just walked to my bedroom. The house was clean because my maid cleans it every 4 days a week. My room had a huge closet and I wish that none of my hoes left anything that will make Lona angry. I will have to drop all the hoes I had, damn. But I guess my baby is worth the sacrifice.

Lona: Xavier. ..?

I looked at her from the door of the closet. She was holding a g-string.

Lona: so, let's talk about the hoes.

Me: \*sighs\* they are all going to be gone.

Lona: I am not mad because it was before we dated, so now we are dating. I would love a little bit of respect. Dirty lingerie is not what I like seeing in my hubby's drawer \*chuckles\*

Me: you won't see it again babe.

Lona: I am serious, one wrong hoe move and we are done, Xavier.

She wasn't smiling at all anymore. I nodded because I really am going to drop my hoes for

her, but also needs to know I am a man, I have needs. But I won't tell her that right now because she will feel pressured to have sex with me, and I don't want to pressure her because I might end up losing her. I don't even know who put that dirty lingerie there.

Me: baby, trust me. They are gone, you are the only one now.

Lona: mhm.

I walked closer to her and kissed her cheek. I took the g-string from her and threw in the bin that was in the bathroom. When I went back to the room, she was sitting on the bed and looking into her hands.

Me: fede? (Sharp?)

Lona: ndimoja ntwana. (I am okay, dude.)

I looked at her confused as fuck. I like how different she is from the girls that are always ready to jump on my dick. She laughed at my facial expression.

Me: I think I like you being all princess like and being a crybaby.

Lona: of course you do \*rolls eyes laughing\*

Me: anything you want to do before we had off to sleep?

Lona: you sleep a lot.

Me: medicine makes me sleep. You aren't hungry?

Lona: no. I will just watch TV.

I drank the painkillers and went downstairs to order some pizza from the television I had in

the lounge, I asked them for some vegan pizza shit, standard size for her then I brought myself large but i didn't buy that vegan shit . I brought the triple decker with extra cheese. I went back upstairs. She was watching Bad Girls Club on Vuzu Amp, she was so intrigued by the show, I could see it in her facial expressions.

Me: got pizzas for us.

Lona: pizza? I can't eat pizza.

Me: do not worry, I asked the worker if there were vegan pizzas and he said yes. So you can eat pizzas.

Lona: \*laughs\* what if I do not want pizza?

Me: then I will forcefully shove the pizza down your throat. \*chuckles\*

Lona: so much anger. \*laughs\* you should be on the bad girls club.

Me: hell no.

She chuckled, I went to change into some basketball shorts so I can sleep. I was shirtless and I went inside the bed. She looked at me, more like stare at me. I grinned at her always interested in my tattoos. I moved closer to her

Me: your show is back on. \*smirks\*

Lona: mxm.

She laid on her stomach and she was next to me. She touched my neck, more like brush it softly looking at my rose tattoo on my neck.

Lona: didn't this hurt?

Me: a little bit.

Lona: liar! It did a lot. \*smiles\*

Me: I was high and very drunk that day. So it

didn't hurt that much.

Lona: why a rose on your Adam's apple?

Me: \*shrugs\* just to fill up the space.

Lona: you're crazy. Do you know how painful tattoos are? And you did this one just to fill up the space? Wow \*laughs\*

Me: I told you it wasn't that painful.

I heard the house phone ring indicating someone wanted to be let in the yard. It must be the pizza, I went downstairs with my wallet. I let the scooter driver in the yard with the pizzas. When I opened the door, the dude was smiling at me. I just took out the money, gave it to him and took the pizzas. He noticed I wasn't the smiling type, and just left. I closed my door, and walked upstairs with the pizzas. My wife was still caught up on the television show. I gave her, her pizza and placed mine on the bed. I was



about to walk back downstairs but I was tired as fuck from the injuries.

Lona: sit down. I will get the drinks myself.

Me: I am fin-

Lona: Xavier, do not make me drag you to this bed. Now sit down, I will be right back.

She quickly went downstairs and I sat down in pain. I was even sweating, I wiped my sweat and drank some painkillers again. After that, I ate a few slices, then she finally came back.

Lona: sorry, I couldn't find cups \*laughs\*

She gave me a cup full of coke, I placed it on my side board. I felt her looking at me, and I knew why but I just wanted to mess with her. She

cleared her throat because I didn't look at her. I finally looked at her licking my lips, with a charming smile.

Lona: you are forgetting something.

Me: a kiss? \*smirks\*

I made my face into a kissing face, she laughed so hard I thought she was going to fall on the floor.

Lona: you look so cute.

Me: I never been ugly. \*chuckles\*

Lona: so cocky \*shakes head smiling\* I was going to say you are forget to say thank you.

Me: thank you, baby.

I smiled, and she leaned closer to me a quick kiss. I could still get used to her lips being so soft. She smiled, and started eating her food. I admired her when she ate her food. She had this cute facial expression on her.

Lona: please stop staring I am trying to eat.  
\*blushes\*

Me: can't I admire what is mine?

Lona: stop. \*blushes\*

Me: come here. \*licks lips\*

She blushed and I decided to lean in and kissed her slowly. She smiled into the kiss, she broke the kiss off by pulling my bottom lip. That surprised the fuck out of me, I held her neck not wanting the kiss to end. She giggled and continued with the kiss. Damn, what is this girl doing to me?

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

after the kiss, he stared at me. Like stare at me from my hair to my lips again. I blushed because I could never get tired at how he looks at me. Then his eyes looked up and he looked into my eyes.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* your eyes are small.

Me: what's wrong with them being small?

Xavier: \*smiles\* you will understand later.

I rolled my eyes smiling, and continued eating.

The way he kisses me always makes my panties wet. Should I be feeling like this? We just started dating and it gets so hard to resist him.

~~

I woke up to the bed empty, I frowned and looked around. When I got out of the bed, I shook my head because I slept in my clothes I blame Xavier because we were talking so much last night I slept late . After brushing my teeth and doing my morning routine I changed my outfit into denim jeans with a black bodysuit top and a denim crop jacket with my white Adidas sneakers. I let my hair loose. My phone rang and I saw it was Muller. My heart started beating up so fast, I was scared auntie called him and told him. I answered the call in fear.

Muller: uphi? (Where are you?)

Me: I... Cape Town.

Muller: \*sighs\* I thought I told you to stay in King Williams Town.

Me: I couldn't, if I stayed there I would've killed myself. They were really bullying me. I don't want to go back there.

Muller: \*sighs\* fine. Auntie called me last night saying you weren't sleeping at home because of your boyfriend but I told her you don't have a boyfriend.

I panicked for a bit, but I came up with the quickest lie.

Me: she's delusional. You know how they are. She must've mistaken the Uber driver helping me with the bags as my boyfriend.

Muller: yeah. I will let you know when I am back in King, I want you there too so we can solve all of this petty shit.

Me: okay.

Muller: talk to you later, I will send some money for groceries, we left the fridge empty. Bobby came with us so you will be alone. Love you, lil sis.

Me: thank you, love you too.

We both hung up and finally breathed. I lied to Muller and he thinks I am at home, he trusts me so much. He actually listens to my word over auntie's. Wow, this is actually an advantage for me. I walked downstairs. Xavier was watching some soccer shirtless with Scrappy. I could still see he had the bruises. I smiled and greeted them. Scrappy was surprised I was there.

Scrappy: wat gaan aan? (What is going on? )

Xavier: we're dating.

.

.  
-- RELLIK'S POPOV --

.  
.  
Scrappy looked at me and I already knew what he was thinking. Lona just smiled and walked to the kitchen.

Scrappy: Muller will kill you.

Me: let me worry about that. Not you.

~~

I parked at my uncle's yard, and there was a woman getting out of the house. When I got out my car. I was shocked to see Lona's mom, well I think that's her. But she had on a weave with makeup, she looked too different but looked exactly like her. She was wearing heels and she got in her white Mercedes G Wagon. She drove



past me while I stood there shocked. What the fuck did I just see?

[02/17, 16:45] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER  
~

INSERT 22

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I couldn't even go after the car because she was driving so fast. I quickly walked in the house and started looking for my uncle.

Me: Ghost! \*shouts\*

Fifi: he's not here. He went out an hour ago.

\*smiles\*

Me: tannie (auntie), who was that?

Fifi: what happened to your face!? \*worried\*

Me: who the fuck was that!? \*shouts\*

Fifi: who? \*confused\*

Me: the woman who just went out right now. She was driving the G Wagon. She is Lona's mother!

Fifi: no, Sisipho does not have any children. I think I would know if my best friend had children. \*chuckles\*

Me: she is Lona's mother! It is that fucking bitch! She was here to hire a hit on me. Are you fucking protecting her!? \*shouts\*

Fifi: okay, Xavier. Calm down. I will not have you speak to me in that tone. I am telling you Sisipho, my best friend, does not have any children. She can not have kids due to medical issues.

Me: I swear, tannie. She looks just like Lona's mother...

Fifi: or you are just paranoid. Sit down and I will get you something to drink. People look alike everyday.

Me: yeah, maybe my eyes are fooling me. I hate that bitch so much that I start seeing her  
\*chuckles\*

Fifi: now, tell me what happened to you.

Me: Kenny happened.

Fifi: what? When did this happen?

Me: he sneaked an attack on me in Eastern Cape.

Fifi: what were you even doing there, tell me again.

Me: had to go check on Lona

Fifi: does this Lona know the sacrifices you make for her?

Me: yes. And she appreciates every single one. \*chuckles\* she is different from the girls I used to have. She is a crybaby, but sometimes she loves thinking she is bossy and orders me around \*laughs\* and she has this cute expression on her when she eats. And when she sleeps she-

Fifi: oh my God. \*smiles\*

I looked at her and she was looking at me with tears in her eyes. I was confused what the hell she was crying for.

Me: what's wrong?

Fifi: you are in love.

Me: then why are you crying?

Fifi: I am just so excited! You are going to give me grandchildren. \*sniffs\* she needs to come over for dinner. Tonight, Xavier.

Me: too early. Ghost might scare her \*laughs\*

Fifi: do not diss my baby like that.

Me: \*laughs\* I want to chill with Lona first before her brothers get back and they might want her back in their hometown.

Fifi: where is her hometown?

Me: Eastern Cape.

Fifi: wait, isn't that wher-

Me: Kenny is. I know, but i trust her brothers. They would never let anything happen to her. Kenny respects them. It's me that he likes fucking with.

Fifi: he may respect her brothers but his hate for you is stronger than the respect he has for them. She can not go back there. You are sending her to her death. And I have not even had my grandchildren yet.

Me: you are going to wait a long time for that.  
\*laughs\*

Fifi: just bring her to dinner today.

The door opened, and I heard Ghost talking.

Ghost: I want the money cleaned in less than 24 hours or it is not going to be a great day for you laaitie. (kid)

He came inside the kitchen and immediately dropped the call, and looked at me. I knew he was upset over my face bruises.

Ghost: who did it?

Me: you dropped a business call for these tiny bruises? \*chuckles\* they are healing.

Ghost: who did it?

Fifi: Kenny. He was in Eastern Cape.

I looked at her, she smiled and shrugged her shoulders. I was going to tell him after I stressed him for a while so he can agree to help me with the war because I was going to kill Kenny after I find him.

Ghost: what the fuck were you doing in Eastern Cape!? \*annoyed\*

Me: I had to go protect Lona.

Ghost: this Lona will start to get on my nerves if she make you think irrational.

Me: trust me, she is the only reason a war hasn't started.

Ghost: he sneaked an attack?

Me: that is the only way he would ever lay a finger on me. That weak laaitie thinks he can do anything he wants. I want him dead.

Ghost: fuck a war, let us do this.

Me: fifi and Lona will go to the safe house for a while.

Fifi: wait! Why don't you guys just call his father and tell him to control his son otherwise, he might find him dead. Instead of killing him right away, send a warning first.

Me: I do not care about warnings. I want him dead.

Fifi: I hate the safe house. And I am sure Lona will hate it too.

Ghost: I will think of a plan.

Fifi: can you believe Zay thought Sisipho had a daughter and it is Lona \*laughs\*

Ghost: \*chuckles\* Sisipho and children?

Me: she looks exactly like her mom, it's just the weave and lifestyles that are different



They shook their heads laughing not believing a thing I said.

~~

I walked inside the house, and I saw everything was clean. I smiled that she cleaned the house because I was going to sort everything myself when I came back from my uncle's house.

Lona: you are back.

Me: yeah. Ghost was away so I had to wait for him.

Should I tell her about the lookalike situation? I decided not to because I might be the wrong one here. She came and reached over to give me a peck on my lips.

Lona: are you okay?

Me: yes.

Lona: your mind just seems like it is all over the place. You are too quiet .

Me: I am fine. Ghost gave me permission to kill Kenny but I have to wait a few days first.

Lona: murder is the last thing I want to talk about please.

Me: what's wrong?

Lona: I keep seeing the dead bodies I saw that night whenever I sleep. The event keeps replaying in my head like a broken CD.

Me: want sleeping pills?

Lona: no. I will be fine. I have a therapy session when I return back to school I will be fine.

Me: okay.

I wanted to ask her about the safe house, but I kissed her first so she can agree easily.

Me: how would you feel staying in a safe house?

Lona: what is that?

Me: it is a small house in the middle of nowhere. No one knows the location except Ghost, and there is no Internet connection or anything only food and books plus games for boredom. It is a safe house. No one can hurt you there.

Lona: I have school.

Me: I kno-

lona: then you know I can not go.

Me: let me finish.

Lona: sorry.

Me: it is for a little while until we sort things out after I kill Kenny because Kenny's father is very dangerous.

Lona: Muller wants me back home when he is done with the job.

Me: he will have to wait.

Lona: no, the safe house will wait.

Me: lona-

Lona: baby.

I just chuckled at her being stubborn. She smiled at me, I licked my lips shaking my head.

Me: you have to listen to me.

Lona: I am.

Me: when does Muller want you back in King?

Lona: after he is done with the mission.

Me: so next week.

Lona: yes.

Me: what if Kenny is there and he is waiting for you to get there an-

Lona: I will be with my brothers at all times. I

won't even go to town. So don't worry.

Me: maybe I should come with you.

Lona: no. You are going to stay here. Stop being paranoid. I will be okay.

Me: you will call me in case you have any problem.

Lona: yes. \*rolls eyes smiling\*

Me: I am serious

Lona: I know you are. Are you hungry?

Me: Lelona...

Lona: yes Xavier, I will call you if I have a problem. Stop worrying, you should be worried about your injuries.

Me: I am feeling better.

Lona: are you hungry?

Me: are you going to cook? \*smirks\*

Lona: no. \*laughs\*

I looked at her, she laughed even more. I don't mind not being able to cook but at least she should be able to do something besides clean.

Lona: I'm joking babe, I will cook. I thought you liked takeaways.

Me: not all the time. I want my baby to surprise me sometimes.

Lona: well you should buy groceries so I can surprise you.

me: I think Gladys bought some food.

Lona: Gladys...?

Me: my maid.

Lona: oh...

Me: don't worry, she's old enough to be my mother \*chuckles\*

Lona: I just said oh, nothing else \*laughs\*

Me: I know when girls say oh, it means something bad.

Lona: eshee \*laughs\* you think you know everything about females.

Me: I know I do. \*smirks\*

Lona: okay, Xavier.

She walked over to the kitchen. I followed closely behind her. The kitchen was spotless and that confused me because I remember Scrappy making a big mess when he wanted some food. That time Lona was in my room.

Me: you should've forced Scrappy to clean his mess.

Lona: I am not that mean.

Me: once you start doing things for him, he will take advantage. Trust me I know.

Lona: \*chuckles\* stop being mean, and sit down.

Me: fine, don't listen to me. \*smiles\*

Lona: have you taken your medicine?

Me: yup.

She started making a sandwich for me. Filled with cheese, tomatoes, lettuce and ham. Then she made some juice for me. And gave the plate to me and juice with a smile on her.

Me: I could get used to this.

Lona: here you go ruining a moment with your cocky comments. \*chuckles\*

Me: oh we were having a moment \*smiles\*

Lona: no, I am just imagining things. \*sarcastic\*



I laughed at her being sarcastic to me. I pulled her closer to me. And kissed her she blushed and grinned.

Lona: what was that for?

Me: can't I kiss my girl?

Lona: \*laughs\* I didn't say that.

Me: I just really admire you.

Lona: \*smiles\* who would've thought the tough Xavier would be this soft.

Me: I'm never going to be romantic with you again

Lona: I am not saying that baby.

She smiled, pecked my lips repeatedly until I smiled. She giggled.

Lona: I just didn't expect you to be this sweet. First time I saw it was very scared, you looked way too mean.

Me: and you were the biggest crybaby in that house. And you still are. You were dramatic too

Lona: I am not dramatic.

Me: baby, you pulled Kayla to another room just to talk to her.

Lona: I don't like talking around people I don't know.

Me: \*chuckles\* okay, if you say so.

Lona: \*smiles\* mxm.

Me: my aunt wants you to go at her house for dinner

Lona: no.

She looked scared and I just laughed out loud. She folded her arms and looked at me.

Me: she is really a ncaa lady.

Lona: it is way too soon.

Me: we were just talking about you, and she wanted to meet you.

Lona: talking about me? what about me?

Me: she was just asking why I was fighting with Kenny, and the reason for me being so happy.

Lona: and you said it was me? \*blushes\*

Me: yes \*chuckles\*

I placed her in between my legs, and held her waist. I wanted to touch her fat ass so bad but I had to control myself because I have to take baby steps with her even when I want to rush things so much.

Lona: I will go, but what if they don't like me?

Me: trust me they will.

Lona: but-

Me: no buts, let me enjoy my food and my woman.

I kissed her slowly, I made sure to kiss her so good because I wanted her to be horny. The small eyes on her look sexy as fuck. It is really cute she doesn't know when her eyes become small they mean something else. She pulled my lips, breaking the kiss off. I looked at her eyes and they were small. I licked my lips looking at her. She blushed and looked down.

Lona: stop looking at me like that.

me: like what?

Lona: just eat your food.

She walked away laughing. I shook my head and ate the sandwich with some juice.

~~

I looked at her wearing the simple tight blue dress. She had braided her hair in two braids. She looked very beautiful. The dress showed off her curves in the most sexy way ever. I wore my blue t-shirt with a black Jean, with blue cap and blue sneakers.

Lona: copying my style, I see.

Me: nice try \*smiles\*

She smiled with me and we went to my uncle's house. We got there and I remembered what I saw yesterday.

Me: what is your mom's name?

Lona: what?

Me: your mom's name.

Lona: why are you asking?

Me: there is no valid reason for it.

Lona: don't tell me your planning to research about her. I will be very annoyed.

Me: no, Lelona. Just tell me her name.

Lona: Isipho

Me: not Sisipho ?

Lona: no. Isipho.

Me: okay. ..

Lona: why are you asking?

I need to research on Lona's mom because her having someone who looks just like her still confuses me a lot. I need to get to to help bottom of this.

Me: I told you, I do not have a valid reason.

Lona: well what is that reason?

Me: just wanted to know for the sake of knowing

She didn't believe me so, she just rolled her eyes and walked towards the door. I shook my head because I didn't want us to have an argument right before we have dinner with my uncle and my aunt. I caught up with her and held her waist from the back and kissed her cheek.

Me: I I am not going to do anything to her. I promise.

She looked back at me and smiled. I can not

believe I am being controlled by a woman. Love is really the strangest thing ever. I don't want to admit it but if this girl said she wanted someone dead, I would do it in a heartbeat. She could tell me to jump in a river full of sharks. I would do it just for her. I chuckled in disbelief at how whipped I am. I opened the door, and walked in with her. I could see she was nervous so I held her hand to assure her everything will be okay.

Me: Ghost!

Ghost: dining room!

I knew we were a bit late because Lona had to braid her hair. That's why she was also nervous because she didn't want them to say she's rude.

Fifi: and we finally meet the famous Lona.



Lona smiled and looked nervous as hell.

Lona: good evening.

Fifi: hey, I am Refiloe and this is my husband Xander. He is Xavier's uncle.

Lona: it's very nice to meet you.

Fifi: likewise. \*smiles\*

They started talking and talking about so many different things, my uncle and I started getting annoyed.

Ghost: you will call her in time for dinner. We will be in the man cave.

Fifi just waved us off and started talking to

Lona again. I smiled and left them there and followed behind my uncle. We watched some rugby while drinking beers because the dinner was taking a lot of time.

Ghost: she's pretty. I will give you that.

Me: I know.

Ghost: what will her brothers say about this?

Me: we will cross that bridge when we get there.

Ghost: so you pushing her to a kitchen counter was your way of charming her? \*laughs\*

me: don't start.

Ghost: she is not your typical type but she's good for you. I see the way you look at her. She's good for you, but don't let her change you in the game.

Me: meaning?

Ghost: the first time I fell for Fifi I became weak,

everyone started challenging me and disrespecting me because when you're in love. You try everything not to disappoint your girl but remember the hustle never stops. She shouldn't interfere with your money or game.

Me: she won't.

He nodded. And I looked away upset that Ghost wants me to be more tough but he's soft as fuck with Fifi.

{NEXT WEEK}

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

Xavier: you will call as soon as you land.

Me: yes

Xavier: okay, be safe. And as soon as a problem

resurfaces. Call me quickly

Me: I will.

Xavier: I am serious, baby.

Me: I am too.

Xavier: when you will come back?

Me: I will talk with my brothers so I can come back early.

Xavier: okay. See you then.

Me: I will miss you.

I pouted looking at him. I really will miss him. This week has been amazing, we bonded over everything. And he lets me be me. The dinner with his family was also amazing. Fifi really likes me, and boy am I happy about that.

Xavier: I will call you everyday.

Me: bye.

Xavier: bye.

He let me go and I went to do everything so I can get in my flight. When I was done, I finally got on the flight. When I finally arrived. I saw Muller & King I ran to them with my bag and hugged them.

Me: I missed you guys so much!

Muller: missed you too lil sis.

King: what happened to your cheek?

He seen the remaining small bruise from where Kenny punched me. Words got stuck and I didn't even know how to reply.

.

.

.

Guys my battery is on 3% and I'm at my village that is why I am so busy . I will try to find a charger though there may be mistakes in the post

[02/17, 16:45] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 23

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

They both looked at me and I was utterly stuck with no lie in my mouth.

King: Lelona.

Me: please just drop it.

Muller touched my face and checked the bruise out. I know he was angry far more angry than he could explain.

Muller: I don't want to cause a scene here.  
Masambeni. (Let's go)

Muller took my bag and walked first. When we were inside the car. That's when he exploded.

Muller: who the fuck did this to you! ? \*angry\*

Me: can you please just drop this?

Muller: I will not fucking drop it!? You're our little sister and I swear if you dare to fucking tell me to drop it, I will lose it.

Me: mom.

I didn't know what to say so I lied. I can not tell my brothers I was with Xavier and Kenny accidentally punched me. That would cause a huge havoc situation. I didn't want trouble at all, and mom deserves what's coming to her for treating me so badly. I didn't even know if I should tell them about the whip situation. They both looked very angry shocked that our mother would "punch me". The guilt kept eating me alive when he drove off in anger. The car was moving so fast I was scared he would crash the car. As soon as we arrived home, he parked in the garage and jumped out of the car.

Me: Khazimla!

Muller: stay out of it.

Me: I am already in it. Please let it go. It will



make matters worse.

Muller: do you see your cheek!? Matters are already worse. I need to sort this out once and for all.

He stormed inside the house, and King helped me with my bag.

Me: can you tell him to not overreact.

King: mom needs to stop this madness. And Muller is the only one she listens to.

Me: I don't want to cause tension in the house. I will be the bad person.

King: no. That's not true at all, she is the one who keeps creating the tension and all of this will end today. Come on.

We walked inside the house, and I regretted

returning because when I stepped in my aunt glared at me, mom looked angry.

Mama: kutheni uxoka ngam nje wena? (Why are you lying about me?)

Me: ma?

Mama: uthi nya .

Me: mom, please don't do this. You know you're the only who did it. Don't make me look crazy.

Right now tears were falling, not because I was scared of her but because the guilt was eating me alive. She looked at me so sad, I wanted to come out with the truth but I just looked down.

Muller: here's what's going to happen. You will apologize and she's off the chores for a while

until I don't see the bruise on her.

Me: Khazimla it's oka-

Muller: quiet!

I shut my mouth up real quick and I felt really bad. I don't know why I am like this, maybe because I know she didn't take part in this bruise.

Mama: Khazimla awuzondi xelela mandenze ntoni endlini yam! (Khazimla you won't tell me what to do in my house!)

Muller: ndibhatala yonke ikaka elapha ndizokwazi. (While I'm still paying for everything shit that is here I will.)

Mama: bonanje masive utata wakho uzothini ngalento! (You know what let's hear what your father will say about this!)

Muller just shrugged carelessly. Mom got so angry she stood up and tried to come beat me up, but King stood in front of me.

King: yintoni na olady ingathi ungumntana ezway uzenzayo. (What is it Mom you're acting like a child)

Mama: Yanga, ungandixeleli ukholelwa lento! (Yanga don't tell me you believe this thing!)

King: unemibala elimnyama ngexayakho! (She has a dark bruise because of you!)

Mama: unenza nindijikele (she's making you turn against me.)

I walked to my room and just laid on my bed. I couldn't stay there for that fight because it was about me. I called my boo since I missed him so much. I wanted my mind to get distracted by

all the mess my family has. He answered very quickly.

Me: baby...

Xavier: my lief. (My love) wat gaan aan? (What's going on?)

Me: why would you say that? You said I should call you as soon as I get home. I am home.

I heard the door being knocked. I hid my phone under the pillow and ran to the door so the person doesn't suspect anything. I opened the door and it was Muller

Muller: ugrand? (You're okay?)

Me: yes.

Muller: ubuthetha. .. (you were speaking...)

Me: I was just giving myself a pep talk.

Muller: I don't want you to hate your home.  
That's why I was tough on mom because that's  
when she'll talk treating you differently.

Me: I hope so.

Muller: okay, I will be in my flat if you need me

I nodded and he walked away. I breathed, then I  
locked the door. When I sat on the bed, I took  
my phone and Xavier was still on the line.

Me: sorry about that.

Xavier: what's going on?

Me: Muller handled the mom situation. We will  
see tomorrow if she treats me differently.

Xavier: I knew I liked him better than the other  
brother.

Me: don't Diss King.

Xavier: jammer baba. (Sorry, baby.) \*laughs\*

Me: never say baba again because that sounded so weird. \*laughs\*

Xavier: I miss you.

Me: really now... \*smirks\*

Xavier: don't push it.

Me: I miss you too. More actually.

Xavier: right now I would be cuddling, watching soccer and kissing you then my day would be all made.

me: you're just trying to make me blush.  
\*smiles\*

Xavier: I am serious. I miss our cuddles. You need to hurry up and come back.

Me: it's 2 weeks left.

Xavier: feels like eternity.

Me: \*blushes\* and you said you weren't the romantic type.

Xavier: I am not. But I am just being honest.

Me: my brothers asked about the cheek bruise from the Kenny fight.

Xavier: what did you say?

Me: I pinned it on mom. I feel so guilty. It's eating me up

Xavier: why? She deserves it

Me: the way Muller spoke with her. It was like she wasn't his mom, it was so disrespectful. I felt really bad.

Xavier: every time you feel guilty you should remember the way she treated you and all that shit will fly off the window.

Me: \*chuckles\* okay, I will try that.

~~

After the call that lasted for hours. I was always laughing and I am sure those that heard me think I have lost my mind. I got on WhatsApp and posted a status saying "who knew I could be this happy. " I smiled just looking at my



phone. I can not believe I am actually falling in love. My phone vibrated because I received a message. I checked my WhatsApp and it was Cardo.

Cardo : Rellik is good for you, you even happy now

Me: mxm, if you're going to annoy me don't text me

Cardo : miss you too kiddo.

Me: I don't miss you

Cardo : hahaha very funny

Me: I'm only joking idiot I miss you too, you and Xavier are the only friends I have left.

Cardo : that's because you're too crazy to have more friends.

Me: that's because i dont want new friends. I am good with only 2 friends.

Cardo : yeah right

I know Cardo was joking but i was a bit offended that he was right. I can't even make friends. I am stuck with only 2 friends in my life. I was getting a bit thirsty so I unlocked my door and went to the kitchen. I saw my mother and aunt preparing food. I wanted to turn back so bad but I was really thirsty. When I opened the fridge that's when they stopped talking and both looked at me.

Dabs: nali'ihule lomzi (here's the hoe of the house)

Mama: Ndeshe myeke man. Inento eninzi into enalomntana. (Ndeshe leave her alone. This child brings a lot of trouble.)

They both kept quiet and I just drank my water

and walked back to my room. I was feeling sleepy so, I slept. I don't even want their greasy food! I don't even do anything to them but it's like their day is not okay without them tearing me down. The next day I woke up screaming. I had the dream of the dead people JR and Shooter shot. I was sweating and having a panic attack scared that I will die here in King Williams Town. I reached over my phone to call Xavier but I stopped because I couldn't call him. He would rush here very fast and that would place him in danger. I tried containing my panic attack then after it got better I breathed better and I just couldn't stop thinking of all the blood I saw. I rushed to take my small blanket then went to the lounge to watch some cartoons maybe they will make me feel better. I didn't want to bother my brothers because they have separate flats outside the house and I was scared of bothering them. After watching the cartoon movie that's when I felt sleepy and it

took everything away. I went to to my room and threw myself on the bed and just slept. I woke up to someone banging on my door. I groaned waking up. I walked to the door in a bad mood.

Muller: why didn't you turn the TV off at night?

Me: what? \*tired\*

Muller: Mom says you're not being cooperative with the agreement to not provoke her. You should turn the TV off at night and the lights off.

Me: sorry, I forgot. I was sleepy.

Muller: you guys are starting to irritate me I swear.

He walked away clearly annoyed with the childish behaviour me and my mom had. I wanted to sleep again so I started creating my sleep until it came up. I slept like a baby until I finally woke up shocked that I slept till noon.

The time was 4pm and i remembered I haven't eaten anything and I still wasn't hungry but I needed to eat. I walked to sleep the kitchen to boil water for my eggs. After my morning routine and changing into my grey sweatpants and black baggy t-shirt and black puffy slides. I went back to the kitchen. Right now my mom was preparing samp and beans. I boiled my eggs and eat them with bread after I was done I noticed my brothers weren't there.

Me: baphi ooYanga? (Where are Yanga and Khazimla?)

Mama: andibazi oko bebemke ekuseni. (I don't know, they left in the morning)

Me: okay.

She continued stirring the pot and adding some spices and oil. Dabs wasn't around and that

was quite shocking to me because she's usually wherever mom is.

Me: uDabawo umkile? (Auntie is gone?)

Mama: ewe, oko ebeyothenga iVeg etown. (Yes, she went a long time ago to go buy vegetables.)

Me: I'm sorry.

Mama: he? (What?)

Me: I am sorry.

Mama: ndiyayazi (I know)

Me: mama-

Mama: ba uyakubetha hamba ngoku usakwazi Lelona. (If he hits you leave while you can Lelona)

Me: he didn't beat me up. He would never do that. He loves me.

Mama: ucacisa njani lombala? ( how do you explain that bruise? )

Me: masiyiyeke. (Let's leave it.)

Mama: inyani izophuma and uzozisola ba utheni uyenza lento hule ndini rhaa uzokunya Lelona man! Uyandinyisa endlini yam ogqiba undixelele ndiyiyeke ingathi abantwana abandijikelanga wena! (The truth will come out and you will regret what your are doing you hoe damn you will see Lelona! You're making me live uncomfortable in my own house then you tell me to leave it alone like my sons didn't turn against me for you!)

Me: I. ...

I just walked to my room because I knew if I said another word I will land in more trouble. Maybe I need to just shut up and let this go.

~~

Next day I woke up did my morning routine and into my knee ripped light blue jeans with

superstar sneakers and my grey "yeezus tour" t-shirt. My hair was still in the two braids. My brothers were taking me out for shopping and I wanted new sneakers. My aunt was still not back and my uncle plus dad were on a business trip. They are truck drivers so that's why they're never home.

Muller: you are ready?

Me: yes.

We went to town, and I was a bit scared I might bump into Kenny and he'll reveal I am dating Xavier. We first went to Mr Price, and bought new clothes.

~~

After the whole shopping the time was now 3:30pm and I wanted something new.



Me: i want to have a new color weave.

King: what?

Me: I want to have a new weave and my weave should be blonde.

Muller: which salon?

King: blonde? \*laughs\* ndizoybona le! (We'll see about this)

I went to the hairport salon and I had to buy weave and do my hair. So I set an appointment for a week later because I wanted to buy a weave first.

~~

At home we walked inside with us laughing at me having at dumb moment in the car. When we got inside, mom saw my bags and shook her head. I went to my room and placed them on the bed. I called Xavier, and he replied after a long time.

Xavier: yes?

Me: sorry are you busy?

Xavier: a bit.

I heard a mumbled scream in the background and a loud smack.

Me: I will call you later. Bye.

Xavier: okay, bye.

I hung up and just tried to not freak out that he was in the process of hurting someone. I do not want to get involved so I will just keep quiet about it. I went to the lounge and there she was looking mean as ever. My mom could never look happy even if her life depended on it.

Mama: ndiyabona ugqiboba ncuva (I see you have just finished using them)

Me: not now.

Mama: ndithini ungathethi Lelona xa abantwana bam bebeziATM zakho!? (Why can I not talk Lelona when my children are your ATM? )

me: nam ndingumtana wakho! (I am your child also!) \*shouts\*

I was very angry because she always had to comment bullshit on any little thing I did it was starting to create anger inside me.

Mama: mxm.

She looked at the TV again. I was so heartbroken and angry at the same time, in my anger I screamed and she looked at me like I

was crazy.

Me: yintoni inxaki yakho!? Ndenza yonke ikaka uyifunayo kodwa uyandinyela qho zange ndenza nix kuwe kodwa undiphethe kakubi ingathi andingowakho. (What is your problem!? I do every shit you want but you shit on me every time I never did anything to you but you treat me badly like I am not yours.)

Mama: hewethu ungandinxoleli mna ndibukele uRhythm City (don't make noise for me I am watching Rhythm City)

I was so defeated because she was so calm and here I was raging with anger. I felt so dumb because clearly she will never listen to me. And I really don't know how and when our relationship got to this point.

mama: inxaki yakho uyibukela too much iTV.  
Uzotswina xa unomsindo \*laughs\* iraki zininzi  
kwaDaniel kodwa \*claps hands\* (your problem  
is you watch too much TV. Screaming when you  
are angry, mentally unstable people are too  
many in the Daniel family.

In my anger I went to the kitchen to grab a knife  
and when I was about to stab her, she  
screamed getting up quickly and running away  
from me.

Me: ndiyakucapukela! (I hate you!) \*cries\*

My brothers appeared in the process of me  
chasing her. King quickly took the knife from  
me.

King: uphambene !? (Are you crazy!?)

me: I hate her, I want her dead. Andizohlala apha mna ndifuna ubuyela eKapa. Ndiniwe nguye \*cries hysterically\* (I won't stay here I want to go back to Cape Town. I am tired of her)

Muller: mama kwenzeka ntoni apha? (Mom what's going on here?)

Mama: kutheni ubuza mna! ? Buza lento ibufuna undibulala. (Why are you asking me!? Ask this thing that wanted to kill me.)

King: stop calling her a thing. She's your daughter!

Mama: mxm, ungandixeleli ikaka Yanga'inkosi. (Don't tell shit, Yanga'inkosi.)

Muller: Lelona go to your room.

I walked to my room, but at the same time I wanted to hear what they will say to her. I called Xavier to take my mind off all of this. He answered quickly.

Xavier: baby.

Me: hey...

Xavier: you're okay?

Me: yes. Just thought I should call you since I miss you.

Xavier: I miss you too. The house is very quiet without you.

Me: \*laughs\* really now?

Xavier: can't you talk to your brothers and you come back early?

Me: the way things are going I might come back early.

Xavier: what's going on?

Shit! I forgot how crazy he is. He might even fly over here when he learns I went crazy and almost stabbed my mother. I never want to be

that angry again.

Xavier: lelona.

Me: nothing big...

Xavier: what happened?

Me: I almost stabbed my mom.

Xavier: what!?

Me: I was angry and I really regret it.

Xavier: you need me there? This is getting out of control.

Me: no! I will be fine, baby. I promise.

Xavier: you're sure?

Me: yes. Now stop worrying.

~~

After the call. I was getting hungry so I walked to the kitchen but I could still hear them lecturing mom. I didn't want to appear just yet,



so I listened to them speaking without them knowing I was there.

Muller: dad talked with you about this. You know her mother is dead, you agreed to not treat her any different.

Were they talking about me?

Me: what's going on?

[02/17, 16:46] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 24

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I looked at them hurt that a secret like this was being kept from me this whole time.

Me: akango'mama wam? (She's not my mother?)

King: Lelona, that's not what we're saying...

Me: do not lie to me! \*shouts\* that explains why she hates me so much.

Muller: she is your mother. She raised you, therefore she is your mother.

Me: I want the full story.

Muller: when dad gets back.

Me: I want it now! I already know the big secret, you might as well tell me the full details.

I wanted to cry but tears were just not coming

out. I was more angry than sad, all my life I was led to believe the woman who ill treated me was my mother but all along she wasn't.

King: let's go sit down.

Mama: hambani naye andinalo ixesha lezonto mna. (Go with her, I don't have time for those things)

I was breathing hard with anger because she still treats me badly she doesn't even care that I just found out something that could change my life forever. My brothers and I sat in the lounge. She, the devil mother, continued preparing supper for us.

Me: what is going on?

Muller: you're our half-sister.

Me: so i'm the bastard child?

King: no.

Me: I don't understand. I look so much like her.

She walked in the lounge looking sad as ever, I noticed she has tiny tears. She was holding back.

Mama: ufana naye, not mna (you look like her, not me)

Me: I don't understand.

Mama: utata wenu webongo wenza isiqibo sojola newele lam wena waba yimpumo yelonyala (your precious father decided to have an affair with my twin sister and you were the result of that betrayal)

Me: that's why we're alike.

Mama: asifani tuu, uthambile nje ngaye.

Ndazama ndlela zonke ubengowam ufane nam,  
kodwa inyan funeka ithethwa awusoze  
ubengowam- (we're nothing alike, you're soft  
just like her. I tried everything for you to be mine  
to be like me but the truth must be told you will  
never be mine)

Muller: mama!

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

.

I laid on the doctor's bed feeling defeated. I kept  
vomiting and not feeling good, at first I thought  
it was the alcohol but then it went on for days.  
So now I'm in the doctor's office.

Doc: well the results are in and it is what I expected it to be.

Me: what is that?

Doctor: you are pregnant. Congratulations  
\*smiles\*

Me: what?!

What he said next I could not even listen to. I kept replaying the words "you are pregnant" fuck! I am only doing my first year in varsity. Patrick needs to give me money for an abortion. I can't have a baby, I am still a baby.

Me: doctor! I don't care about anything else. I want to abort.

Doc: come back, next week. You need to rethink this. A baby is a blessing, it brings love back into a relationship and even if you do not have anyone you will always have your child's love.

~~

I arrived home with a sad face. No one will want me when I have a baby. I even wanted more sugar daddies but now they won't even look my way. I miss Khanyi, right now she would've told me what to do. I called Zee even though I don't like her, I need some girl advice right now.

Zee: chommie (friend)

Me: I have a big problem.

Zee: talk to me, babe.

Me: I am pregnant. \*cries\*

Zee: what!? How?

Me: I slept with someone, idiot.

Zee: I know how, but how could you be so stupid? You think Rellik will want someone with some baggage?

Me: I need to abort the baby fast. The only baby

I will keep is his.

Zee: that's right!

Me: duhh

Zee: I have a plan, fool.

Me: what is it?

Zee: I read babies bring couples closer.

Me: so what?

Zee: pin the baby on Rellik?

Me: I didn't even get a chance to sleep with him.  
This is a disaster.

Zee: he is going out tonight I think, I saw it on Cardo's status something about a spinning show. We will be there, drug him. Drive him to your place, get the job done.

Me: I can't sleep with him drugged, will his thing even stand?

Zee: wow, you're dumber than i thought. You will take pictures of you guys both naked. He



won't know you didn't sleep with him, you will pin the baby on him.

Me: he will kill me.

Zee: you will tell him if you get hurt the pictures will leak.

Me: I will be the one embarrassed! Being a pornstar for a man.

Zee: they won't leak, bitch! \*annoyed\* you think he would jeopardise his relationship with Lona like that? He will start treating you like a golden eye just for the news not to leak.

Me: that is a great idea! Let me look for an outfit.

Zee: and I will get a car for us. Let's hope this plan works.

Me: me too, thanks zee.

We both hung up. I am starting to think I will

like this Zee. I searched my drawers for an outfit and I found a black crop top with some short skirt that was high-waisted and some black heels. I tied my hair up and it was curly in my ponytail. I applied makeup and started preparing for the mess I am about to create. I looked around the house for the drugs I will need. I smiled when I finally found them. Lelona is not going to stay after this, I know how weak she is. And because of that, I will always have the upper hand than her.

.

.

-- ISIPHO'S POV --

.

.

I looked at them going to her room to comfort her like someone was dying. Lelona should be grateful I didn't kill her like I killed that bitch I

called a sister. Sisipho was always more popular than me even when we were identical twins, people preferred her than me because I was always so mean. I was happy when her crush approached in back when we were younger, but it seemed as though he was trying to get her through me. I felt betrayed and angry, that's when the hatred I felt for her started to get created. As time went by, in our varsity years I had a boyfriend whom is my husband now. My husband also took a liking to my twin, and I just lost it when he told me the baby she was carrying was his. I planned for her to get robbed and shot to death in her small house. I know I was wrong for killing her but the anger inside of me really did not care. I was heartbroken when I learned the baby survived the shot and murder in her mother's stomach. We just got a call saying my sister is dead and the baby was in the hospital. It was shocking to my husband but not to me. What was shocking

to me what that her body was said to be dead but I never saw her dead body. I never really cared about it because deep inside I did feel like she was dead. What my husband asked me to do 18 years ago was a hard challenge for me. To raise the child that came from your husband's infidelity with your sister! I couldn't treat Lona the same, I just couldn't because she had all the qualities she had. The smile and funny personality people loved so much.

King: mama.

Me: khandiyeke Yanga (leave me alone yanga )

King: umsulwa kuyoyonke lento (she's innocent in all of this)

Me: qho xa ndimjonga, ndikhumbula latlungu ndayiva ngoku uyihlo wayexoka ngobusuku ephuma kodwa ulala nodade wethu. (every time I look at her, I remember the pain I felt when your father lied about night outs only to be

sleeping with my sister )

King: okay, ndiyayiqonda utata eberongo ngokuthi khulisa umntana ingathi ngowakho abe eyazi intlungu ezayizisa. Kodwa wena umhlukumeza akuzolungisa nix. Ixsha alizobuyela. (okay, I understand dad was wrong for saying you should raise the child like your own knowing the pain that it might bring. But you abusing her like this won't fix anything. Time won't go back.)

Me: ndiyayazi, kodwa ndicela into ey1 (I know but I am only asking for one thing (

King: yintoni leyo? ( what is it?)

Me: andifuni abelapha ndiniwe kukhulisa umntana ka Sisipho mna. (I don't want her here I am tired of raising Sisipho's child.)

King: mama uyagula!? Uzoyaphi? ( mom are you crazy!? Where is she going to go?)

Mama: andikhathelelanga makahambe (I don't

care I want her gone)

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I was crying in my bed and Muller was just trying to comfort me. I wanted to get the hell out of here. I feel like everything is a big fat lie here. How could I not realize this! ? This is why she hated me so much because I remind her so much of her husband's betrayal. I feel a slight bad because she is a strong woman. To raise the child who will remind you each day of the times to your husband cheated on you will your sister. Not just any sister. A twin! I would go crazy too, but to my husband not the innocent

child who never asked for anything. Because I did not force my dad and her sister to have sex nor an affair.

Me: I want to go back to Cape Town.

Muller: I don't want you to go because she's forcing you to go. Don't let people control you like that.

Me: what should I do? Stay!?! Clearly she hates me, I can not believe you guys kept this from me.

Muller: you were too young to understand.

Me: you should've told me as soon as I was 16!

Muller: you are a vulnerable and weak child. You being sensitive, we were afraid a big secret like this would break you. You reacted better than we thought.

Me: next time, tell me. How I will react will be up to me!

That was the lamest excuse of not telling me, but I decided not to press on it too much.

~~

I could not sleep at all, the time was 8:43pm and I wanted to call Xavier, but he didn't answer his phone. I went ro WhatsApp and the status on Cardo's statuses told me Xavier was really busy. He looked like he was in a party holding a cup, it was a group photo but I was only concentrating on my boyfriend who isn't answering his phone but he is busy with parties. I can not be angry because he is a man, he deserves to have fun, but I wanted to talk to him about how crazy my life is, and he decides to not answer the phone!? That's fucked up.

.

.

.



-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

Scrappy: this laaitie has been whipped ever since he has been with her.

Me: hoe jou bek! (Shut up)

Cardo: they are both whipped. Lona is annoying the hell out of me with those love statues.

Me: loos my meisie alleen. (Leave my girl alone)

The gents started laughing. We were hanging out, in the spinning show. It was just me, Scrappy, Cardo, JR, OG, Shooter and Wiz. They were talking about me being whipped because of Lona. I don't even want to lie, but I don't want to admit it either. After a while the fun started

and I was getting very drunk. Me and the gents were really enjoying ourselves. I saw Kayla and her friend Zikhona and instantly I was annoyed.

Wiz: nasis'fijo sikaScrappy (here's Scrappy's hoe)

They came to us and I was too drunk to even pay attention to them. Zikhona smiled first while Kayla was eye-fucking me. I got annoyed and continued talking with OG.

OG: ingathi lemedi ibeke wena \*chuckles\*  
(looks like the girl is checking you out)

Me: I don't care about her.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

He looked so hot wearing a black t-shirt with blue & yellow sweatpants and some sneakers. He looked so sexy I wanted to fuck him right there! I wasn't even paying any attention to Scrappy because he said he didn't anything to do with me so I want nothing more to do with him. After greeting the guys, me and Zikhona walked a far away from them.

Me: I brought eye drops medicine, I heard it makes people sleepy. And it will work fast. He is already drunk.

Zee: okay, let's do this. I will mix up a drink with a dash of a shot then you will add the eye drops and give it to him.

Me: he will never take it.

Zee: I will ask to talk to him and you will come

asking for anything from me than make small talk and give him the drink!

Me: okay cool.

I saw her swaying her hips towards the guys' cars. They made their own circle with their cars. She stood next to him and whispered in his ear since the cars were too loud. He got up and she held his hand and walked with her. The boys started laughing and hyping him up. Lona will never be able to control him, he is a man whore. He did not even think about her he just held her hand. I quickly took plenty of pictures of them and I watched them talk then I slowly walked over to them. I made sure I had 3 cups so he doesn't suspect anything when just give him the drink

Me: Zee where's the phone? I need to call our transport.

She gave me the phone, I gave her the cup and I offered Rellik the drugged drink in a cup. He just looked at it and looked at me.

Me: look, I am not trying anything. I respect your relationships with other girl-

Rellik: one relationship with Lona. Only her.

I was shocked that they are already dating! I thought they were friends and not something more. My heart was broken that, that bitch has him before me. But I don't care, I can take him.

Me: I won't try anything, I respect your relationship with Lelona.

He nodded and took the cup, he couldn't even

stand properly that much but he still took the cup.

Zee: I got some weed in the car we came with. We can talk properly there.

Me: what are you guys talking about?

Zee: my fling is a gang member in jail and he might have and proposition for Rellik. It will make money for him.

Rellik: azishe (let's go.)

We went to the transport and he didn't even notice I didn't even call the transport. We went to the car, it was one of Zee's flings. Rellik was drinking his cup, and when we were inside, Zee started smoking the joint. I smiled looking at him drinking his drink getting very drunk and the weed will finish him off. She passed the joint to me, I puffed twice then passed it to him. He

couldn't even puff properly he was very tired. I smiled as he passed it to Zee, then it was lights out for him.

Zee: I will call Mzo. We will need him \*chuckles\*

Mzo was the transport guy, and I couldn't stop kissing Rellik even though he was sleeping and not kissing me back. His lips were soft, I just wish he would kiss me back. Mzo and Zee came back, and I had to cover Rellik's face with some shades because if Mzo saw who it was he wouldn't want to help us. Almost everyone is scared of Rellik he would've been shit scared.

Mzo: kuyini lokhu? (What is this?)

Me: just one of my flings I saw here. I am taking him back to my place.

Mzo: ungangifaki ekingeni (don't put me in

trouble)

Me: never. Let's just go.

He drove off to my apartment fast. When we got there, Zee helped me get Rellik in my apartment. It was very hard and Mzo drove off without even helping us. I rolled my eyes thinking about how much of a pussy he is. We laid him on my bed and I smiled at her. The plan actually worked.

Zee: let's get him naked I will charge my phone in the meantime.

I grinned nodding, I started by taking off his t-shirt, and damn was I in awe at how beautiful he looked. The tattoos and body just sent me over the edge. Zee came back and I removed his pants and boxers. I bit my lip looking at his dick.



Zee: damn. You're lucky bitch!

Me: I know \*smirks\*

I took off my clothes and I was naked too. Zee took off his sneakers and took a condom from my drawer. I looked at her weirdly.

Zee: I have some sperms in a bottle inside my purse, we will stretch the condom with his dick then pour the sperms in. After that, we take pictures. it will make him think you guys really slept together.

I laughed happily at how smart she is! Then we did what she said then she threw the dirty condom on the floor so it can be the first thing he sees when he wakes up. I got on top of him and made it look like I was riding him and she

took the pictures.

Zee: he looks drugged. Hide his face by kissing him.

Me: okay, and I need to take selfie pictures so it doesn't look planned.

Zee: here's the phone.

I took it and took pictures of us kissing, well me kissing him. And me cuddling with him. I laid on him and placed his hands on my ass then I took the pictures of it.

Zee: okay, now send the pictures and don't tell him you have sent them to me. Sleep, cuddling with him and the plan will work itself out.

I smiled and got up to hug her.

Me: thank you, Zee.

.

.

.

.

.

.

outfits they wore

[02/17, 16:46] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 25

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV--

.

.

I woke up with the most painful headache ever. Fuck! I hate hungover. I looked around and I didn't recognize the tiny room. I looked at the girl cuddling on my chest, and I was angry as fuck when I saw it was Kayla! I pushed her off so hard, she woke up almost falling off the bed.

Me: what the fuck is going on!?

Kayla: I think you're smarter than that. \*smirks\*

Me: I will fucking-

Kayla: kill me? \*chuckles\* and risk Lona seeing our beautiful pictures on the amazing sex we had.

Me: if she ever hears about this I will break your neck with my hands!

I rushed to strangle her, but she quickly ran out of the room. She locked the door quickly and she started shouting on the other side of the door.

Kayla: I sent the photos to a lot of people and if something happens to me. The pictures will reach Lona. So I would be careful if I were you.

In my anger I hit the door, I heard her squeal in fear. Why the fuck was I so stupid!? I looked at the used condom and I was a bit relieved we used a condom. I started wearing my clothes, disappointed that I would get sloppy drunk to a point where I would fuck Kayla, the person that hates me girlfriend so much. I have given her a reason to hurt Lona. Kayla walked in, she picked up the condom and smiled.

Kayla: one round with the condom then the rest was raw, I knew I liked you for a reason Rellik.

She tried to kiss me, I slapped her so hard she landed on the floor, I was about to kick her on her back.

Kayal: stop! Or else Lona won't ever talk to you again.

I searched for my phone and stormed out the house in anger. I looked at Lona's missed call and guilt ate me up. I called Scrappy to come get me.

Scrappy: nja ye game.

Me: come get me at your whore's apartment.

Scrappy : what?

Me: Kayla.

I hung up because I wasn't in the mood for questions. After 45 minutes of me impatiently waiting there, he finally came. I got in the car in anger.

Me: what the fuck took you so long!?

Scrappy: yo, I didn't tell you to fuck her.

Me: I fucked her raw after round 1 \*sighs\* fuck!

Scrappy: let's go get your car then we can think of a plan later.

We drove to the spot and my car was still there untouched. Maybe because the numberplate was written "RELLIK" and everyone knew not to mess with me, my car has a tracker anyway.

Me: let's meet in my house.

Scrappy: fede (sharp)

We raced to my house, and he won because he was in front of me. When we got in my driveway he got out first and I followed. Inside the house, there was no one and that made me miss Lona. Fuck I shouldn't have even went to that stupid spinning shit.

Scrappy: now explain to me what happened?

Me: I got sloppy drunk, started smoking weed with them and that's when lights were out I don't even remember anything else. Apparently we had sex and after one round I hit it raw, bro

Scrappy: shit. You're in deep shit.

Me: I know.

Scrappy: kill her.



Me: if something happens to her, the pictures will go to Lona.

Scrappy: she's smarter than she looks.

Me: I can't have her ruining my relationship with Lona.

Scrappy: I will try and manipulate her into telling me what she wants.

Me: thanks man.

I walked him out and I went to my bathroom to shower. Then I wore white t-shirt with light brown sweatpants. I wore my Gucci slides. I decided to man up and call Lona. She didn't answer at first, and my heart started beating fast because I was worried that she knows already and it took me a month to get her. I can't lose her that easily. I called her again worried that maybe something might have happened to her. She finally answered after my

3rd try

Lona: yes?

Me: wat gaan aan? Hoekom het jy nie jou phone beantwoord nie? (What's going on? Why weren't you answering your phone?)

Lona: I was busy. Where have you been?

Me: besig met wat? Is jy OK? (Busy with what? Are you okay?)

Lona: I am okay. I just found out something big though.

Me: what?

Lona: my mom isn't really my mom.

Me: wait what?

Lona: she has a twin and the twin is my real mother, but she is dead.

Me: what!?

That's when everything came back. I have to call Fifi to set up a meeting, I need to talk to this twin. Before I let Lona meet her I need to make sure her motives are okay.

Lona: yeah I know, it's crazy. But I am returning back home tomorrow. I don't even want to stay in this house .

Me: so you're coming back?

Lona: yes, isn't that what you wanted?

Me: it is, and i am very happy. Can't wait to see you beautiful.

Lona: see you then, I have to pack.

Me: okay, bye.

Lona: bye.

I smiled dropping the call. She sent me a selfie

of her looking ever so beautiful. I bit my lip wishing she was next to me so I can kiss the fuck out of her. I texted her replying to the selfie.

Me: damn! the things I would do if you were near.

It had one tick so I knew she was offline. I posted her selfie with the caption. "wife. " and I knew the hoes would start crying about who she is, so I turned off my mobile data. I looked for my Range Rover keys and drove to my uncle's house. When I was there, he answered the door shocking me because usually Fifi answers.

me: ek moet met tannie Fifi praat. (I need to talk to aunt Fifi)

Ghost: wat gaan aan? (What's going on?)

Me: niks groot nie. Ek wil meer weet oor Sisipho.  
(Nothing major. I want to know more about  
Sisipho)

Ghost: sy is in ons kamer (she is in our room)

we walked together there, and I saw aunt Fifi  
looking very sick on the bed. I was worried  
because she is never the sick type. She usually  
falls sick like once a year.

Me: are you okay? \*worried\*

Fifi: yes \*smiles\* I will be fine just a minor flu.

I could sense she was lying because she looked  
at Ghost and they both had sad faces on them.

Me: I know you're lying but it won't press on it. I  
need to know more about Sisipho.

Fifi: why?

Me: I just found out she is Lona's mother and everyone in that family thinks she's dead. But she's not dead, I saw her the other day in the yard.

Fifi: she's coming over for lunch tomorrow. That's the only time she has left in Cape Town.

Me: where does she live?

Fifi: she lives in London permanently.

Me: in London? What was she doing here then?

Fifi: she was here on a business trip. And she missed me so she came to visit me. Nothing spectacular.

Me: I will be there for the lunch tomorrow.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I packed my belongings because I wanted to get the hell out of here. I know she wants me out so I will grant her wish. I know my brothers will not want me to go but I am tired of fighting back and forth with their mother.

King: what are you doing?

Me: packing. I am leaving tomorrow. You can't stop me, I have already booked my flight.

King: we want you to stay though.

Me: I don't want to. Not after I heard that bitch isn't my mother.

King: but she is my mother and you should respect her.

Me: sorry.

King: maybe it is best you go to Cape Town to get some break then in June you will spend the

holidays over here to mend issues with her. All you need is time.

Me: yes. Thank you for understanding .

King: you leave at night or early in the morning?

Me: early in the morning tomorrow. You will drive me there right?

King: yes. Muller might be there as well or he will be busy comforting mom.

Me: is she still crying?

I am the weak one but she is still crying? OK.

King: this is a hard situation for her and the secret being exposed is opening old wounds for her.

Me: mhh.

King: \*chuckles\* when did you get this mean?



Me: ever since I started hanging out with Xav...  
Cardo.

I quickly changed my sentence because I forgot I haven't told them I am hanging out with Xavier. I haven't even told them I am dating Xavier.

King: what?

Me: ever since I started hanging out with Cardo.

He nodded but I felt like he knew I was lying and he wasn't going to say much about it. He left my room without saying a word and I was so scared I feel like I am busted! I packed my stuff quickly and paced up and down the room thinking of a lie to say when they ask me about it. My phone rang, and it was Xavier. He must miss me to call me twice a day and it hasn't even been 3pm yet.

Me: baby?

Xavier: you should answer the phone like that to me every time I call.

Me: \*chuckles\* someone misses me a lot.

Xavier: more than you can imagine.

Me: I will be there before you know it. My flight is in the morning.

Xavier: Fifi wants to have lunch with you.

Me: really? \*excited\* can't wait.

Xavier: I know you can't. Baby?

Me: mhh mhh?

Xavier: I love you.

Me: what?

I was very shocked. We haven't been dating for that long and already he says "I love you" maybe

it's because of the distance or maybe he was saying it to someone else? I sound so stupid because I can not believe a guy like Xavier really loves a girl like me.

Xavier: I want you to know I love you, and I would never hurt you, intentionally. Without you, I wouldn't survive. Trust me. You're the right in all my wrongs, losing you will be losing my heart. I wouldn't be the same. I would go back to the monster I was before you were the light in the darkness that consumed my life.

Right now I was getting emotional and worried that he was going to die. He never expresses his emotions and when he told me this it really touched my heart.

Me: baby, what's going on? Are you okay?

Please don't do anything that will put your life at risk.

Xavier: everything is okay.

Me: you promise?

He got quiet, and breathed. I was scared that he was in danger. My heart started beating fast.

Me: Xavier, you're scaring me

Xavier: I promise. Everything is okay.

Me: I hope so

Xavier: I have to go now, I will call you at night.

Me: okay, and Zay?

Xavier: yeah?

Me: you'll never lose me. I love you too.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* bye.

Me: bye.

We both hung up and I wished he was next to me so I could kiss him because I really do love him. I know for a guy like him to lose all his hoes for me, and to go such a long time without sex and girls. He is sacrificing a lot for me because a lot of girls are willing to jump at the opportunity to have him, yet he... he chose me! I wiped my tears and smiled at myself in the mirror.

Me: I am in love.

.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

.

Zee sat on the couch and I smiled at her. She is the reason my plan is actually working!

Me: we need to send the pictures to other people incase he kills the both of us.

Zee: does he know he was drugged?

Me: I don't think so, he thinks we really had sex and after the first round we went raw.

Zee: after you pin the pregnancy on him, what if he wants you to abort?

Me: I need to go away for a while and come back when I am 5 months pregnant and it will be hard for me to abort. It will be illegal.

Zee: sorry to burst your bubble but... he doesn't care about the law.

Me: she will. And when she cares. He will care too.

Zee: what about Patrick?

Me: I will tell him to find another bitch. I already am set for life.

I smiled rubbing my growing baby bump. This baby is going to take me to places.

~~

It was the next day and after my morning routine I changed into my pink crop top with blue jeans and light brown fake no sleeve fur. I wore my Fenty Puma white sneakers. I flat ironed my weave so it can be straight. I smiled thinking about how all of this is going in my favour. I ate some breakfast while scrolling through my WhatsApp. My whole mood changed when I saw the picture he posted of her. I rolled my eyes, when he could have all of this. He still wants a boring bitch like her who can't even go a day without crying her ugly face off. She doesn't deserve him, she doesn't even

deserve life because she's always complains about how it doesn't go in her favour. Life isn't fair and she should get used to it. Me on the other hand, life has always been unfair to me and I deserve this break! I made a decision to drop out of Varsity even though I have good grades but I know it will not take me anywhere. I don't even like the course I am in, and I feel like Xavier will take care of me, and the baby. In anger I took my purse and left. The post really ruined my mood. I took a screenshot and sent it to Zee.

Me: this bitch has him whipped, he never posts his hoes.

Zee : don't worry, after all of this. He will be yours!

I smiled because she always had good words. I can't believe I didn't like her at first, she is a



great girl! And an amazing friend. I didn't want to tell her Xavier might kill her after he finds out she has the pictures. For safety purposes I have to get the photos printed out so I can threaten him better. I met up with Partick at Tasha's. He looked paranoid meeting up with me in public because we always meet in hotels or my apartment. After I sat down, he glared at me. I smiled, I am finally going to be free from this ugly old man!

Me: It's over.

Pat: what?

Me: I have better things to do now, and I feel like our deal is pulling me down. So it's over.

Pat: don't fuck with me, Kayla.

Me: goodbye, Patrick.

I stood up and walked away from him, when I

was a bit far from him, I smiled and when I was about to call an Uber. He appeared and strangled me, he didn't care about a few people staring at us.

Pat: you leave when I say you leave, stupid bitch.

I looked at him in fear, I nodded quickly just so he doesn't kill me.

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I smiled at my baby looking fly as ever waiting

for me at the airport. He was wearing a black t-shirt with a black bomber baseball jacket with black jeans, he had on a rolled up wool beanie and black sneakers. I stood there just admiring my man, after a while he noticed me and had the best smile on his face. I chuckled pulling my two heavy bags towards him. He licked his lips, and when I finally close to him, he kissed me. His hands landed on my ass, it wasn't the pervert ass-grabbing kiss. His hands just laid there not moving while kissing me, I think he wanted to see how much I trusted him. And I really did, but I wasn't ready for sex yet. So I removed his hands smoothly by holding his hands, and he pulled away and pecked my lips.

Xavier: let's get you to my house.

Me: I need to get home first, put my luggage there.

Xavier: why don't you keep your bags over at my

house, and we go to Fifi's lunch first?

Me: I look like a mess, and you want me to have lunch with her looking like this?

Xavier: you look beautiful. \*pecks her lips\*

Me: can't I shower again and change my outfit?

Xavier: no, you look beautiful.

Me: of course you would think like that \*laughs\*

~~

We arrived in their house, I can't believe he really didn't let me change. I thought he would let me have some time with him to at least lay up with him and be lovey dovey but I guess Fifi really wanted me to come over for lunch. I heard music playing outside the backyard.

Me: it's a party and you let me come here looking like this! ? Look at all those beautiful people, Xavier. You're being unfair.

Xavier: \*chuckles\* you're overreacting, you look more beautiful than those people.

Me: what is up with you being so sweet today?

Xavier: I missed you, you know that.

I smiled and brushed his cheek. He looked better now. He was really recovering from the attack. He opened the door for me, and the lunch table had 3 other ladies there. They all looked sophisticated and here I looked like I just came from a hood party and I didn't take a shower.

Xavier: here she is.

They all turned and looked at me, I saw a woman who looked exactly like Isipho. I just felt dizzy, and everything became blurry then I was on the floor.

- 
- 
- 
- 
- 

Kayla

SEASON 2

[02/18, 07:02] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 1

- 
-

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

I felt like everything around me was going in slow motion. I held his dead body wishing all of this was just not true. I couldn't feel his pulse at all. I knew he was dead and I couldn't blame anyone but myself. I left him at the hospital! I should've went with him. I wasn't a good big brother. I just left him. I felt Rellik's hand on me but I didn't even care to remove it.

Me: he has to pay for this.

My stare was focused on King. His lifeless body kept breaking my heart but I couldn't stop staring and wishing he would arise and give me one last laugh.

Rellk: he will. I will be sure of it.

Me: he has to die by today! I don't care even if I die in the process. I want him dead.

Rellik: I can't let anything happen to you too. All of this will break Lona. She has to return to you being safe-

I wasn't even hearing him anymore. I just stared at King's body. My world is crumbling. I never understood why people cried but now I understand. Losing a sibling is the hardest thing ever. I'm not a person that cries a lot. But this, this really breaks my heart.

Scrappy: maybe we should move the bodies and start arranging the plan

I nodded and roughly wiped my tears. I stood up, and wiped the dirt off my jeans. I'm going to



avenge my little brother even if it's the last thing I do.

Me: let's get to work.

Rellik looked at me worried. And I just ignored him. I helped Scrappy move the bodies inside. After all this bullshit I'm going to plan the best funeral for my little brother.

Scrappy: I'll get OG to us with the bodies. The funeral will be after the war. It will be too much if we do it now.

I nodded at what he was saying because he was absolutely right. When Scrappy went upstairs to get his phone. Rellik pulled me back when I was going to get some water.

Me: yintoni ngoku? (What now?)

Rellik: I think we should get you to the safe house too.

Me: I'm not a child-

Rellik: I know but if we lose you too. Lona would not be able to make it.

Me: she'll have you to the care of her.

He looked at me. He wasn't happy about my response though. He should be happy I'm trusting him with my sister's life when I'm dead

Rellik: we can't lose you too brah.

Me: Rellik listen. They murdered my only brother. I want to be apart of however we kill him. I want him dead, I don't care if it's painful and slow or if it's a fast job. I just want him

dead.

Scrappy came down the stairs with Ghost. Ghost looked at the dead bodies. He shook his head. His whole heist gang gone. I'm the only one remaining. I'm not even sure I want to be a gangster after losing my little brother. The life we chose, we knew someday would kill us. Just not this soon. I also blame Rellik but he did what he had to do to protect Lona. I can't blame him for that.

Ghost: sorry for your loss.

We both did the gang handshake. And I nodded acknowledging what he just said.

Ghost: did the girls arrive safely?

Scrappy: yes.

Ghost: have you boys came up with a plan yet?

Rellik: yes. We just need to execute it.

Ghost: run it by me.

We all looked at each other. Ghost should be resting not worrying about the plans. Rellik should've made sure to send him to the safe house as well.

Rellik: we're going to go to his house and bomb it.

Ghost: bomb?

Scrappy: ja

Ghost: if he survives?

Rellik: he won't

Ghost: when you make a plan always have other

backups. Now what if he survives?

We all looked at each I think because we didn't think of him surviving a bomb. It's very rare for people to survive those.

Me: it's the only option we have. We can't get closer to the house due to tight security

Ghost: kill the guards and hack the security system. Then get inside, kill him then burn the whole place up to get rid of the evidence.

Scrappy: how will we even kill so many guards?

Ghost: I have sniper killers who are my long time friends. They're willing to help me. They owe me a favour

Rellik: we'll contact Gavin for the hacking

Me: I'll get the explosion materials.

Ghost: now this is a solid plan. The back up is

we just bomb the place just like you said.

Rellik: okay, I'm with it.

Me: me too-

I kept quiet when I saw a white man standing in the doorway of the living room. He looked very shocked at the dead bodies.

?: what !? We should-

Ghost: okay, listen. Go back to Paris. Sisipho went away for a while. You need to forge about all of this and go.

He was still staring at the bodies. He looked really scared. Auntie really fell in love and married a punk. Ghost nodded to Scrappy and the man was shot dead. I knew it was good because he would've ratted us out as soon as

he had the chance.

Ghost: he never returned from town. That's the story.

Me: I'm with it.

OG and the others came to take the bodies. I looked at the take King and I had glossy eyes. Man it wasn't supposed to end like this. How am I even going to survive without the person that could make me think right when I couldn't control my anger.

Rellik: we need to choppers ASAP

Ghost: where are you going to land?

Rellik: East London?

Ghost: too many eyes

Rellik: free way just after Mdantsane? It was

always quiet. Maybe at night it will be better.

Me: that's a good plan.

Scrappy: let me call the chopper dudes and get this over and done with.

.

.

.

-- NELLA'S POV --

.

.

.

I woke up from my sleep because I heard people laughing. I looked at the window and it already late. I looked at the clock next to me and it was 18:00pm. I got up from the bed. I need to wash these bed covers. They just feel so dirty. They must've not been cleaned in a long time I brushed my teeth because I had an



ugly taste in my mouth. When I walked out and went downstairs. I saw Fifi and the other lady smiling.

Fifi: you must be Scrappy's girlfriend.

Me: yes \*smiles\*

Fifi: I hope we didn't wake you up with our noise.

Me: it's okay.

Fifi: this is my best friend Sisipho but I call her Issy

Me: nice to meet you, Issy

Fifi: she's also Lona's mother.

I knew that's why they had so much resemblance! They look so much alike it was a weird a bit. I was still shocked and they laughed at my facial expression.

Me: you guys really look alike!

Issy: I know \*smiles\* where is my lovely daughter anyway?

Me: probably sleeping. Let me go wake her up

I smiled and ran upstairs to go wake up my best friend. She was still snoring like a drunk man making me laugh at how loud she was snoring. I shook her and she woke up with a frown.

Me: girl you can't be the only one sleeping. Let's go hang out with the wives and learn some tips or lasting relationship.

She just chuckled and got up. She went to the bathroom to brush her teeth while I waited for her on the bed. When she was done we both walked downstairs. I looked at the card game they were playing and i knew I was going to be

bored in this house.

Lona: tannie what was the longest time you spent here?

Fifi: probably a month.

We all looked at her shocked. A month without your man. A month without any cellphone. Most importantly a month without sex! Yhuu she's a strong woman indeed. I can't even survive 2 weeks without fucking my man. I know this will be a challenge for me.

Fifi: you guys are lucky. I was here all alone. Boredom was killing me. It felt like prison!

Me: wow. I could not do it. I would not survive at all without Scrappy \*laughs\*

We all played the cards but I was getting hungry. I held my stomach looking at them. They all seemed like they weren't phased by hunger. Nope, I gave in and decided to talk.

Me: am i the only hungry one in here?

Fifi: me too. And we didn't even do proper food shopping so we'll survive on tin food.

Me: please tell me you're lying \*sighs\*

Fifi: I wish I was babe. I really wish I was \*laughs\* corned meat anyone?

We all sighed then she got up to get the tins. I wanted to talk to my boyfriend right now because I miss him so much! I don't like this safe house at all.

.

.

.  
-- MULLER'S POV --

.  
.  
.  
.  
I walked inside the house. The lounge was all messed up and I think because of the Kayla and Lona situation. I walked up the stairs. First thing I thought was going to King's room. I opened the door, and immediately my heart fell short. I was hoping all of this was just a nightmare and I would wake up and he would make fun of me and we'd start laughing at our own jokes. My phone rang and I looked at my mother's number on the screen. I couldn't bear the pain in her if she heard about this. I was supposed to protect King and Lona through everything. I failed as a big brother and I really don't deserve that title. I couldn't even save my own little brother. He was probably in pain

wishing I was there in pain and I was busy wondering how Lona was. I should've took him with me. Man I just wish I could just turn back the turn. I really do, I'd do anything to save him. Even if it meant me dying. But I knew i couldn't. I needed to focus on avenging him. His death will never go down like it's nothing. I want Kenny's father to pay for this. And I will make sure he does. My phone rang again and I looked at the caller ID. It was Rellik.

Rellik: you're ready?

Me: give me 5 more minutes.

Rellik: I'm waiting outside for you.

Me: I can drive myself to the location of the choppers

Rellik: I know but I want to look out for you. Lona can't lose the both of you.

Me: I'll be right there.

I hung up before he could respond. How the hell am i going to handle Lona when she goes back to the depression stage because this will be too much for her to handle. I made sure I had my gun and knife then I headed out the door. I'm doing all of this for King.

[02/18, 07:02] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 2

.

.

.

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

.

I got in the car. Inside the range rover was Scrappy, some other guy with Gavin and I was confused where Ghost was.

Me: uGhost? (Where is Ghost?)

Rellik: I had to let him go to my house. OG and the others are with him for safety purposes.

Scrappy: I'm surprised he agreed to go.

\*chuckles\*

He drove for a long time. They were busy talking while my mind was far away. Man I wish after killing those guys that King returns. I wish the body we saw was just a lookalike dead body or something! I just can't lose him. How will I handle Lona all alone? He knew the right words to say to her, I don't even know how to raise her alone.



Rellik: Muller!

I snapped out of my thoughts and looked at him. I understand Rellik is trying to look out for Lona but I don't want him to treat me like a child. I am a grown man.

Me: ntoni? (What?)

Rellik: I'm introducing you to the person Ghost sent.

Me: harde. Moja poi. (Sorry. Sharp boy)

Rellik: that's Luke.

I nodded and again they started talking again. I was ready to kill people and I want that man dead today.

Scrappy: anybody talked to Cardo?

Rellik: I called him earlier to check on him. He's okay, I gave him money for a flight to get out of Cape Town for a while. He means a lot to Lona so I have to make sure he's safe too.

Scrappy: at least he's still alive.

Finally after so long. We arrived at the destination and I could see the choppers from a far. I got out first then they all got out. I was in a hurry to leave, and get this job done. Rellik went to talk with the chopper pilots. There were 2 choppers and in each chopper 4 people can get in. I knew I was going to ride alone because I didn't want them to annoy me talking a lot when all I want is silence. I looked at Rellik talking to those guys. He gave another dude something. I was confused what it is. The pilot came to me and I was still suspicious and I think he realized it because he went passed me and Rellik came to talk to me.

Me: what are you planning?

Rellik: nothing. The pilots need a little break we'll be going in no time.

Then I felt someone go deep in my arm. I groaned in pain and I looked at the needle. I glared at Rellik feeling drowsy. The pilot stabbed me with a needle.

Rellik: she can't lose you too, Khazimla.

I couldn't even reply. I was so angry though. That he would go against my decision to be apart of the plan and kill Kenny's father with them. I fell into deep sleep.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I took out the needle that was filled with Sedative hypnotic which was a sleeping drug. I needed the pilot to drop Muller at the safe house just in case this plan doesn't go well. I don't want him hurt in the process. I help Scrappy carry him into the chopper

Scrappy: he's going to be angry as fuck when he wakes up

Me: I don't care. As long as he's safe. I'm doing this for Lona

Scrappy: you're really feeling this girl.

Me: more than you know bruh.

~~

We got off the choppers and luckily there wasn't

any cars in the freeway. Only 1 Jeep and I figured it was the car for us.

Me: don't leave. As soon as we're done we'll contact you. Be ready to fly out anytime.

The pilot nodded and we got in the Jeep and sped off to King Williams Town.

Scrappy: Muller said he lives in Cafarianne Heights.

I nodded and then Scrappy told the driver the rest of the address. While we were approaching the house. We got off 3 houses before we reached his house. It was very beautiful I won't lie. I could see the guards being on guard. We walked in the dark so they wouldn't see us. I knew that if we walked slowly without no sound

we could kill the off. But what if the guns make a noise? We finally got a tree close to the house. Luke climbed on it making me look at him confused. Now is not the right time for games. He adjusted his gun into a sniper. That's when I understood he wanted a better position to shoot. He looked down at us and signaled there were 5 guys in the front. I nodded and waited for him to do his job. He shot 1 time and that's when i heard a lot of commotion so I figured the guards where making a noise at at a guy being shot. Then he shot 3 times. I heard guns shooting but they were shooting at a wrong direction because they couldn't see where we are. Luke kept on shooting and after a while I heard silence. I ran up to the gate and signalled Gavin to come open the gate by hacking. Kenny's father isn't that stupid. I bet he knows I'm already in here. I knew this was a rich neighborhood so we had about an hour before the police would arrive. Luke finally came down

the tree and we all got in the yard. Inside the house it was empty. I knew we had to look for him because all his guards were dead he was being a vagina.

Me: 2 up and 2 down. If you see him, shoot! Set a timer Luke and in an hour we're all leaving. We can't get arrested.

They all nodded and Scrappy followed me upstairs while Luke and Gavin remained down. We looked at all the rooms downstairs. We finally arrived in one room, and I motioned for Scrappy to wait while i went inside. I opened the door and it was an office. It looked like someone was in so I went inside deeper, then i heard a gun shot. I felt the pain on my lower back. I heard another bullet and a body falling. I looked back, and there was Kenny's father on the floor bleeding from his head. Scrappy

rushed to me as I fell on the floor.

Scrappy: he was behind the door. Why the fuck did you want to get in here alone anyway !? We need to hurry you back to the hospital.

I felt cold and I couldn't move my body at all.

Me: I ca-can survive a ride back to Cape Town

Scrappy: you're crazy! You're losing too much blood!

I felt extra weak and just drifted off, Scrappy was shaking me but his voice started drifting off too.

.

.



~~

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

I opened my eyes, and i was confused by the surroundings I was in.

Lona: finally you're awake! \*smiles\*

I looked at her confused. Is this a dream? Am I dead? I got up and I can felt the most painful headache ever.

Lona: you were dropped off with the chopper. What's going on? Why are you here? Where's King anyway? Where's Rellik? Muller talk!

I looked at her, and I couldn't stop the tears from falling. How can I tell my little sister I failed at protecting our brother? I couldn't look get in the eyes and tell her. Especially when they were so close.

Me: what's going on!?! You're making me worried. Is Rellik okay? Is King okay? What's going on please tell me!

She started shaking me with tears falling down her eyes. I don't know why Rellik did this and sent me here! I didn't want to be the one breaking the news to her but I guess I have too. I looked at her, and held her hand and wiped my tears.

Me: I need you to be strong for me while I'm telling you this. King is...

Lona: no!

She violently shook her head crying and screaming. She tried pulling my hand off but I pulled her more and hugged her as she screamed trying to be remove me.

Lona: no! Please no God please \*cries\*

Me: I'm so sorry. I would've tried everything I wish I knew what do to do to bring him back. I really wish I knew. I would do it in a heartbeat.

Lona: he can't die Khazimla! He just can't! We're all supposed to grow old together we're all supposed to make dad proud and make it in life! Please tell me he's okay. PLEASE

She started crying loud and I had to let her go, and she covered her face with her hands still crying. And that made me feel so sad and

heartbroken. I never want to make my sister cry and all of this is my fault. I'm the reason for all this shit. Nella, Fifi, and Sisipho came in the room. They were shocked to see Lona crying.

Fifi: we heard the loud cries. What's going on?

I couldn't even look and talk to them. I stared at the wall and all the guilt was eating me alive. I shouldn't have left him there. If I was a good brother I would've brought him with me!

Nella: Lona. what's wrong, munchkin?

Lona: he's dead... he-he's dead \*cries\* my brother is dead!

She screamed again, and I looked at Nella who immediately hugged her while Fifi and Sisipho

looked at her with sad eyes that were filled with tears.

Lona: this... this is all m-my fault

Nella: don't say that Lona.

Lona: if I didn't date Rellik he would still be alive! He would still be here with me! We would be playing Fifa-\*cries\*

me: if I didn't leave him at that damn hospital. He would be alive right now.

Nella: don't say that, Lona! You love Rellik. And I know right now it may hurt for for both, and it will hurt for a long time but as time goes. You will find peace. I don't know King personally but I'm sure he wouldn't want his siblings hating themselves for something that can't be fixed. He is at a happier place and he's watching over you guys with such happiness because he'll be watching you guys grow.

I zoned her out because all I could think about was how I don't deserve life after I let my brother down.

.

.

.

-- SCRAPPY'S POV --

.

.

.

I paced up and down the hospital. We were told to wait for the doctor to finish operating but I never like public hospitals. They're just not good in my opinion due to the lack of resources but it's the only close by hospital and I needed everything right now for Rellik to survive. That guy is my best friend and I can't fucking lose

him. The doctor finally came and I ambushed him with questions.

Me: is he okay!?! He didn't die right? You'll need to make sure he doesn't die!

Doc: which patient are you talking about?  
\*confused\*

me: Xavier Damon!

Doc: I'm sorry, I don't remember a patient of that name

Me: he came in here today! He was shot!

Doc: oh that patient! You'll have to forgive me I have a lot of patients it's hard to keep up with the names.

Me: just tell me if he's okay!

Doc: he's in ICU

I looked at him shocked. This can not be

happening right now. I placed my hands on my head feeling defeated.

Doc: a coma.

Me: I know what an ICU is!

I was so pissed I wanted to shoot him dead, I didn't even want to hear the rest of the words. How will I explain to Ghost his nephew is in a coma. We couldn't even burn the house so the house is left with a lot of dead bodies and I'm sure the police arrived there already. What if they check the cameras and we're seen there. This is all a fucking mess. I looked back at the boys. We needed to call Ghost asap to help us before we land in jail, and he needs to know Rellik is in a coma.

[02/18, 07:03] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~



SEASON 2

INSERT 3

.

.

.

-- SCRAPPY'S POV --

.

.

.

I quickly called Ghost because we needed a plan fast and i can't do this on my own.

Ghost: you're still alive. The plan went well  
\*chuckles\*

Me: not exactly....

Ghost: what's wrong?

Me: we couldn't place the bomb in time

because we were hurrying Rellik to the hospital.

Ghost: he's in a hospital! ?

Me: yeah. He's in a coma \*sighs\*

Ghost: what! ? I'm coming there.

Me: we still need a plan for the police. They may check the cameras out.

Ghost: bomb the whole place up!

Me: the police might be there!

Ghost: fuck! I'll see if I can hit up my old police connection and see what I can do.

Me: do it fast before it blows up on the news.

Ghost: make sure you don't leave Rellik's side incase anything goes wrong.

Me: Kenny's father is dead.

Ghost: good. Now we have nothing to worry about, but Rellik has many enemies.

He hung up. And I placed my phone back in my pocket. There was this nurse who was playing the radio and I heard the news talking about murder of 6 guys in Caferianne Heights. I knew then that Kenny's father is really dead and we're in deep shit. There were 5 guards and Kenny's father was the 6th person we killed there. What worried me the most was the news already having the information. I hope our faces won't be on the news.

Gavin: wait! I have an idea!

Me: what?!

Gavin: I can try to hack into the camera system if I'm closer to the house.

Luke: so we need to risk us being caught. What if they already saw the security system? Then we're giving ourselves to the police on a silver platter

Gavin: it's worth a try

Me: I agree with Gavin. It's worth a try. Luke don't leave Rellik's side and we'll be right back.

He nodded and folded his arms. I knew he didn't want to go because of the police so the best way was for him to stay here and stay with Rellik. Me and Gavin rushed to the jeep and we told the driver to drive back to the house but he shouldn't park just near it that it's noticeable. Luckily Gavin got a connection 3 houses away. And he started doing his thing on the laptop. I looked at the neighbours in gowns surrounding the house. There was the police, and forensic people. I could see the bodies were being put in the forensic car.

Gavin: done! All deleted. We're saved!

Me: evidence, we can't bomb the place with all

these people here?

Gavin: we're going to have to throw away all the guns we used or clean them up so we don't get anything that leads us to this.

I smiled a small smile then ordered the driver to drive us back to the hospital. We can't risk the police seeing us. At the hospital we found Luke at the same place we left him and I was happy he didn't move because I still don't trust anyone. Kenny's father may be dead but still a lot of people want Rellik dead and as soon as they learn he's in a coma they'll try by all means to eliminate him. And I don't want that happening at all.

Luke: why doesn't Ghost do an ICU transfer for Rellik?

Me: that's not a bad idea. Let me tell him that,

instead of him buying a flight ticket.

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I was very tired and I had the most painful headache ever from all that crying. I just still couldn't believe he was gone. This wasn't supposed to happen like this. Me falling in love with Rellik wasn't supposed to hurt my family like this.

Muller: you sure you're not going to eat anything?

I just continued staring at the wall not talking at all. I felt like my life was empty. I know Muller was trying to be strong for the both of us but honestly it was just so hard. I couldn't even go a second without thinking about King. He was my brother and he always made sure I was happy and I didn't have to cry or anything. He always made sure I was okay.

Muller: come on you have to eat something. You have been like this for the last 4 hours now.

I didn't even look at him. I don't blame Muller at all because he also didn't know this would happen. I always thought me and my brothers would grow old and watch our kids turn into best friends now I have to deal with the fact that he was gone.

Muller: I lost him to Lelona. I know it hurts and it feels like it's never going to get better but I promise you it will. I need you to be strong and eat something before you become weak.

I laid on the bed and just covered myself and started crying again. This was hard, I felt like my whole world just doesn't exist I felt like I deserve more because I always end up hurt into whatever i do. Maybe I'm not meant for life. I get hurt in whatever that I do and now I'm fed up. I heard Muller sigh and he walked out. I felt sleepy after crying for a long time. Then finally I fell into deep sleep.

.

.

.

-- NELLA'S POV --

.



.

.

I saw the two choppers and into quickly shouted to everyone 2 choppers were coming. I hope we're going home. Because I am tired of this place I miss my man and seeing Lona try like that makes me so sad. She doesn't deserve any of this very she's such a nice girl. But God always has a plan and everything happens for a reason. This may be her test to see how much faith she has in Him but what ever happens He would never forsake her. I hope she knows that.

Fifi: I think we're going home! Thank you Jesus!

Sisipho: finally!

I ran to my room and took my sport bag filled with my clothes and when I was about to run downstairs I saw Muller on the passage looking

all sad. I sighed and walked to him.

Me: she's doing okay?

Muller: she just stares at the wall without saying anything or eating anything.

Me: with time it will get better.

Muller: you don't know what we're going through! So please stop playing the therapist!

I looked at him and I saw her regretted what he just said. I understood the hurt and I didn't want to see her so I just nodded. And I was ambushing them with motivational words when all they wanted was silence.

Muller: look, I'm sorry to just that-

Me: no I understand. It hurts I have been there too. It feels like you could've done something

and you have so many what ifs and a lot of different scenes playing in your head how you could've prevented the issue. I know.

Muller: i-

Me: but you do need to know that your sister will need you now more than ever. Your guilt eating you up shouldn't be more than your sister. I know you feel like you don't deserve to live, I have gone through that stage too. I know. But you can't kill yourself, Lona would never make it. It's all on you now she's going to look on you for support and everything. If she loses you, she'll lose herself. Don't do anything crazy.

He nodded and i left him there to think about what I just said. I know what they're going through because my brother was also killed in gang violence and he tried calling me to help him. But I didn't answer the call because I was mad at an argument we had, I didn't even know

he was in trouble with gangs. I always hated myself for that, I wished I could take back the time to answer that call and quickly call the police but in due time I understood it's God's work to strengthen me. But i wasn't always this understanding, I tried killing myself a lot of times. But I just would survive and I knew it wasn't my time yet. And I can't let Muller or Lona go through that phase. Once my bag was in the chopper, I saw Muller bring Lona's bag and I got inside the chopper and waited for her to arrive. When she got out the house I could see her red eyes and her still crying. She got inside the chopper and moved close to me. I held her hand and she laid her head on my shoulder and I heard her sniffing meaning she was still crying. I wiped the tiny tears I had because this brought back memories. I let her cry because she needed to let all the hurt go. Muller got in also and sat next to Lona. After a few minutes we left the place. I looked back at

it, and it's a pity we couldn't enjoy this beautiful house.

~~

.

.

-- GHOST'S POV --

.

.

.

The transfer went well and Xavier was in a hospital here in Cape Town.

Me: when is he going to get out of the ICU?

Doc: not sure. He was shot in the lower back and that-

Me: just give me a percentage chance of his survival

Doc: 46% but he could still pull back and come back.

I nodded then he left while I looked at my nephew. I paid a few guards to stand on his door at all times while I went back home because visiting hours were over. I couldn't go back to my house because it was so messed up so I went back to Rellik's house. Once I was in there I had a chance to think about this. I knew a war would cause crazy things. Just not this crazy, Fifi will lose it if she learns Rellik is in a coma. Scrappy had to settle for a flight since the choppers were bringing the girls and Muller back home. I know they're going to arrive tomorrow. This will give the cleaners enough time to make sure my house is spotless before my wife returns.

.

~~

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

When we landed and I saw a car waiting for us. Once we all got inside we drove off. It was totally silent in the car. The car was going inside Rellik's house and I looked at Muller. I didn't want to see Rellik now. I was still not ready. I don't even know if we're going to make it with all these obstacles trying to tear us down. They got out the car and I had to get out too. Muller held my hand and we walked inside the house. It was filled with gangsters. I wasn't stupid all these dudes looked like gangsters. I was confused what were they doing here though. Is this a celebration? I swear I'll dump Rellik if he's celebrating while my brother is dead. Ghost came downstairs and Fifi ran to give him a kiss.

I walked in the living room in hopes of finding Rellik so he can explain what's going on. Nella was all on Scrappy and he was loving every minute of it.

Me: where is he?

Muller shrugged his arms saying he doesn't know. I walked up to Ghost because I couldn't wait till forever I want to go home.

Fifi: what's going on here?

Ghost: i have to announce somethings to the gang.

Me: where is he?

He looked at me with sad eyes. Then he looked down. I started getting this strong headache



and my heart was beating fast, he cannot be dead! Fifi looked at him shaking her head with tears falling down.

Ghost: he's in a coma.-

I didn't hear the rest, I just fell down hard on the floor.

[02/18, 07:08] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 4

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I woke up in a room I knew it was Rellik's looking around I just thought about the times we spend here and the laughter we shared in this room. On the other hand I have to go home and see King's room that will really tear me apart, I didn't even say goodbye to him. That's what makes me more sad. I looked at Muller who had fallen asleep on the couch. I love that he was by my side through all of this shit life is throwing at me. I got up from the bed and went to him. After I shook him he was a bit shocked but he realised it was me and he calmed down.

Me: what's going on now? I remember hearing about Rellik but...

I looked down with tears falling down. He stood up and hugged me. I cried more because I didn't understand how all of this can happen to a 18

year old like me. There are plenty of 18 year old girls in the world. Why did it have to be me!?

Muller: there's a chance he'll live. Don't lose hope now

Me: can I go see him?

Muller: let's go ask Ghost.

Me: how did you go to the safe house?

Muller: Rellik drugged me and I guess he ordered the pilot to drop me here. He put his life in jeopardy to avenge King and make sure I don't get hurt because of what he feels for you.

Me: I should've appreciated him more

Khazimla: he'll pull through. Don't worry.

Me: Khazimla?

Muller: yes?

Me: I don't think I'll be strong enough to live in our house again. It'll remind me of King a lot.

Muller: I know how you feel exactly. Let's give it a try though. Yanga'inkosi wouldn't want us to be like this.

I nodded because he was right. Although King was younger than Muller, he was always so mature and that's what I loved about him. We could talk about my problems and always give me advice and make me happy. We walked downstairs and I saw the people had left. I looked at the lounge and there Sisipho was sitting on the couch. She was staring at the TV that was turned off, she looked like she was crying. Muller cleared his throat.

Sisipho: oh, sorry. \*wipes tears\* they went to the hospital.

I nodded and she got up, she walked closer to

me and we were both now crying. She hugged me tight, and honestly I needed a motherly hug right now. I didn't want to let go and she held on until I was ready to let go.

Sisipho: I will really miss Yanga I didn't have the chance to bond with him again. But we were close when he was young.

Me: I really miss him and I wish all of this is a big nightmare.

Sisipho: you and Khazimla can live with me if you feel uncomfortable with the home you have now. I have brought a new house in the same neighbourhood as Fifi and Ghost.

I looked at Muller and he knew this was a good idea because we both didn't feel like living in that house because everything will remind us of King. It's best we sell it. It was under King's

name but I think in the will he will give it to Muller.

~~

.

.

I walked in the hospital room he was in. I couldn't bear looking at him like this. It was only one visitor at a time, and it was only me and him in the room. I wasn't used to him being like this. I'm used to him being strong and tough. These machines and tubes in him were making me feel really sad. If I didn't go to the shisa nyama with Cardo that night I wouldn't have saw Kenny and this could've been avoided. If I didn't go to that sneaker shop they wouldn't have fought. I know I shouldn't blame myself but when a lot of things are happening around me I can't help but feel like it has something to do with me. I sat there and started talking to him hoping he would wake up.

Me: I miss you. Weirdly enough I was thinking of us breaking up and I feel like I'm a bitch so much to you that I should learn to appreciate you more. This makes me appreciate you more. I know it's fucked up that it took you being in a hospital bed for me to appreciate you. You killed Kenny for me, as if that's not enough. You saved Muller from death by sending him to the safe house. Every time something goes wrong you fix it and you don't give up. While every time something goes wrong I'm quick to blame you and want to dump you. I don't know why I do that. I guess it's my fear that you'll end up being bored with a girl like me. But with the recent events you have shown me that I really have you for a purpose in my life. And you'll always have my back. I promise when you return I'll love you more than I should've. I'll I'll be a better girlfriend but please don't leave me Xavier. I can't lose King then lose you too. I

won't make it, I just won't.

.

.

× 2 WEEKS LATER ×

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

The funeral went by last week, and I still feel the pain of losing my brother. Now me and Lona live with Aunt Sisipho. When mom found out about King's death she lost it and when she saw Sisipho she blamed her for the death of him. She kept saying she bewitched him. Mom doesn't know King as a gangster. She went back home with dad and the family yesterday after I caught her trying to poison aunt Sisipho with rat poison and I felt like she was doing too much and now I believe aunt Sisipho that my mom may have really sent someone to try and



kill her. Rellik still hasn't come out of the coma and I know it's still affecting Lona. But I make sure she still takes her depression medicine and I take her to therapy sessions, and I take her to the hospital to visit him everyday. Ghost wanted to see me in his home so I went there. I didn't know what it was about. I wanted to tell him I didn't want to be a gangster anymore but I knew the only way out was death. And I took Nella's advice the other day. I can't die because my sister needs me more than anything and if I die she'll die too. Especially with varsity reopening tomorrow I hope she'll be able to focus.

Ghost: come in.

I walked inside the house and I greeted Fifi then we walked upstairs to his office.

Me: I have to meet with the lawyers in an hour.  
So-

Ghost: I won't take long.

Me: okay.

I sat down. And he took some papers then gave them to me, I looked at the papers and it was a contract of his club. I looked at him shocked.

Ghost: look, I understand the pain of losing a brother. It's the worst shit ever and you have to remain with a brave face for everyone so nothing could fall apart but deep down you're also human and you also feel the pain of losing your brother. You should go through that hurt phase. Don't brush it off to make sure Lona is okay. You can make sure she's okay while handling your pain as well. This is my thank you to you.

I looked at him confused. Ghost is right. I am bottling up my emotions because I want my sister to see me as strong so she can see everything will be alright. If she sees me crying all the time that won't help at all.

Ghost: the Brims have been my heist gang for some time and you made sure every time the heist went well. And with this difficult time I know you need a break. I'm giving you one of my club that way you can still provide for your sister and when you're ready to get back in the game you'll let me know. There's always a spot for you.

I looked at him with pleased eyes. I needed some good news this week and he really gave them to me.

Ghost: you can give your lawyer the contract to read if you don't trust it

Me: thank you! Thank you so much. You don't know how much I needed this.

Although the gangster life will always follow me wherever I go. A little break from it will do me good.

~~

.

.

I opened the door for the lawyer and let him in because he was going to read King's will. He shook my hand and I walked him inside the lounge.

Sisipho: I'll be in my room.

She said getting up with her materials. Lona was helping her pick the interior designs for her new store here in Cape Town. Mr Kumar, the lawyer sat down and we both looked at him.

Kumar: is this everyone?

Me: others went back home.

Kumar: okay, first and foremost i would like to say I'm sorry for your loss.

Me: thank you.

He started talking and he told us I got the house, Lona got the car and the money would be shared between the family. In the portion me and Lona 30% each. Dabs and Dad got 10% each and mom got 20%.

Kumar: and he wanted me to give Lelona Daniel this letter.

Lona took the letter and that was it so I walked him out.

Me: I want you to go through a contract I will bring it to you tomorrow.

Kumar: see you then. Again, I'm sorry for your loss

I nodded then he walked out. When I went back to the lounge, Lona was putting another CD in the DVD player.

Me: I forgot about that.

Lona: what is it?

Me: you'll have to watch and see.

King had this idea he saw in a movie Lona forced us to watch, The Ultimate Gift, that when we die we make a video talking so she'd know that everything is going to be okay, and she shouldn't be depressed. We did it like last year or something. And I'm glad we did it because we'll need it more than ever. I also made mine but she'll only get it when I die. We watched the video and she had this smile on her while wiping her tears.

King: okay, I got this stupid idea from that horrible movie we watched, The Ultimate Gift, and I thought this would help you out knowing how fragile you are, I know you're still crying about my death \*chuckles\* I love you lil sis and I know you're going to make it. Me and Muller have been so hard on you because we want you to do well. Bro, Khazimla I know it's gonna be

hard handling that spoilt girl we practically raised...

Me and Lona couldn't help but laugh.

King: since I was your brain. Nigga I wonder what the fuck are you going to do without me \*laughs\* but don't be too hard on her, I don't want no boys for her though. But I still want her happy. Graduate for the 3 of us Lona, make me proud okay? Don't be sad I'm gone because I will always be in your huge heart. \*chuckles\* watch over Muller too, you know how he gets. He needs someone to put him in check too \*laughs\* I love you guys. Everything will be fine, now stop those fucking tears. Bye guys. \*laughs\*.

He looked at someone else not directly at the



camera now then he said.

King: okay, I'm done now. Hoza Muller! (Come Muller) \*chuckles\*

The video came to an end and Lona wiped her tears chuckling she came and sat next to me, she gave me a hug and I smiled because I know the video worked, I hope she reacts better to his death now. We did those videos the beginning of last year and I'm glad we did.

Lona: it's gonna be okay...

Even in pain she gave me a sweet smile. I know it's gonna be okay, with the club and everything. It's time for new beginnings.

[02/18, 07:10] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 5

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

The following morning I woke up, feeling better than yesterday. I closed my laptop and placed on the dashboard while charging it. I slept watching the video a lot of times yesterday. After my morning hygiene routine, I wore my black tank top with black jeans and some black Nike sneakers. I tied my hair in a tight bun. I wore my 'Chek' black and white shirt but it

wasn't buttoned. Then I finished my look with sunglasses Sisipho bought for me. I also wore the earrings she bought for me and decided that I was ready for school. I know today will be very hard especially with how my June holidays have been but I know I can pull this off. I lost a lot of weight but I knew I still wanted to hit the gym, talk to my therapist and visit Zay like every day. I walked downstairs and I ate some cereal, Muller came downstairs wearing some black t-shirt with black jeans and he had on black Jordans.

Muller: you're up early.

Me: varsity is reopening

Muller: almost forgot about that.

Me: if you don't mind me asking, where is King's car?

Muller: already excited about driving it

\*chuckles\*

Me: something like that \*smiles\*

Muller: I went to the hospital and got it, like last week. It's still our old home.

Me: speaking of that. What are you going to do with the house?

Muller: probably sell it.

Me: I like staying with Sisipho. It strengthens our bond.

Muller: if she doesn't mind we'll stay here a bit longer.

I nodded and finished up eating. Muller made sure I took my depression pills then he drove me off to the campus.

Muller: you didn't leave your phone?

Me: shit! I think I did.

Muller: you'll call through Cardo's phone when you need me.

Me: okay, love you.

Muller: love you too.

Then I stepped out the car. I went inside the varsity hoping nothing will make me sad today. I need just one good day in my life right now.

~~

I laughed so hard at Cardo annoying the library students with his stupid dances. I started wiping my tears looking at him and holding my stomach.

Me: would you stop!?! \*laughs\*

Cardo: bruh I swear that's how she dances.

I held my laughter in as he told me about Soso's

bad dancing and the fun part was him imitating her.

Cardo: she's gonna have my son breaking his arm trying to dab.

I laughed too hard and loud, and we were both chased out the library. I couldn't stop laughing at him being so stupid. I held my bags and looked at him.

Me: see what you did! \*smiles\*

Cardo: it's good seeing you smile kid.

Me: it's hard not too with you being so stupid.  
\*chuckles\*

Cardo: how's Rellik?

Me: he's still the same sadly, but I visit him like every day.

Cardo: if that's not love I don't know what is.

I chuckled then we saw this girl that had the worst body ever. I wasn't going to say anything because I don't like bullying, she winked at Cardo. And she walked away.

Cardo: did I just see a P?

I laughed so hard, then I smacked him with my small backpack! The girl was tall with big boobs, no ass and she was very thin. She was basically shaped like a P. She had that Wendy Williams body.

Me: stop! No. I'm not taking part in any bullying.  
\*chuckles\*

Cardo: let's just get you home. \*chuckles\*

Me: actually give me your phone, I have to call Muller to fetch me then we're going time my therapy session then I'm visiting Zay.

He gave me his phone, and I could see Dylan was the wallpaper. He looked so cute in his underwear and t-shirt with his cute curls.

Me: I'm sad I missed his birthday.

Cardo: they'll be plenty more. Don't worry.

I nodded and then I proceeded calling Muller he picked up the call after 4 rings.

Me: I'm all done. Or are you busy?

Muller: nah. I was just dropping off these papers to Ghost. I'll be there now now.

Me: which papers?



Muller: I'll let you know when everything goes well.

Me: okay, hurry up or I'll be late.

Muller: okay. \*chuckles\*

We both hung up and I gave Cardo back his phone. I walked with him to wait for Muller outside.

Me: you should bring Dylan over for the weekend. We live with my biological mother now

Cardi: biological mother?

Me: it's a long story.

Cardo: I'm sure it is. You'll tell me all about it on WhatsApp.

Me: if I am not too tired to type.

Cardo: Voice note.

Me: fine nigga damn \*laughs\*

Muller came and I said goodbye to Cardo then me and muller went to my therapist for my session. I think the sessions are helpful because I haven't thought about suicide or maybe the pills are helping. Dr Zwide really is the best, shame. I underestimated her but she really listens to what I say and sometimes that's all I need.

.

.

~~

-- MULLER POV --

.

.

After giving the Ghost the papers and dropping Lona at her therapist I went to go check out the

club that will be mine from now on. I smiled looking at it, it had potential to be great I could renovate it a bit but it could really help me financially. I can't believe I actually own a club, there wasn't anyone in the club just me. I knew I was going to call it KING after my brother because I wanted to honor him. I locked up and decided to go fetch Lona. Things may really be looking up for me. I just need to stay out of trouble for a long time. When I fetched Lona she still wasn't done so I had to wait for her, it didn't take long because I was scrolling through my phone. I smiled when I saw her, no tears today. We walked out and I drove her to the hospital.

Me: I'll be back 2 hours later. That's okay?

Lona: yes.

She got out and I drove off to look for people to

renovate the club for it's new launch.

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I greeted some of the nurses who knew me by now. As usual I went you his room and sat there for you first 15 minutes I talked to him, then I took my books out to study. The reason I do it here is because when I'm with him in always feel at peace and I'll be able to focus even though it's hard because he isn't saying anything and I'm used to him being annoying and saying the cutest things to make me smile. The full 2 hours ended with me studying and him not waking up. I'm not losing hope though, the reason why I choose to study here is

because when he wakes up I want to be the first one to be there . He's a strong person. I know he'll pull through. I packed up my books and kissed his cheeks. Then I walked out before I was told time was up. Outside I could see Muller's car. Honestly I am happy he supports me through all of this. I know King's death must be hard on him too. When we arrived home it was a bit late and Sisipho was already preparing dinner. Sisipho was amazing through these weeks. With Isipho blaming her for King's death and wanting to poison her. I think she's handling all of this with so much grace. That's the type of peace and unbothered behaviour I want in my life. She always spreads love and she's an amazing person to talk to, I love helping her with her new shop she's about to open here in Cape Town.

Sisipho: how is he?

Me: still the same.

Sisipho: it will get better.

Me: I'm willing to wait for him just like he would for me.

Sisipho: that's so cute.

I helped her finish up cooking, we had so much fun laughing and talking. I love that I have a good support system to help me get through everything.

Sisipho: go get Muller and tell him dinner is ready.

I nodded and rushed upstairs. I found him with my laptop watching the King DVD. I stood on the door frame and let him finish. I should suggest therapy for Muller because he also lost

King just like me and him bottling up his emotions won't be good at all. It will only hurt him in the long run.

Me: dinner is ready.

Muller: \*sighs\* I'll be there in a minute.

I nodded and waited for him. Maybe I should suggest it now. I was a bit scared because I'm used to talking through King and he'd tell Muller what I wanted or thought.

Me: you're okay?

Muller: yeah. Just missing the kid.

Me: hey, I think you should attend therapy as well.

Muller: I'll be fine. I'm fine.

Me: I'm just trying to help. Bottling up your

emotions won't help it will only just make it worse. please at least try it. For me at least

Muller: you're not gonna let this go huh.

Me: nope. I'll set an appointment for you!

\*smiles\*

Muller: let's go eat dinner.

He stood up and we walked downstairs. We helped Sisipho set up the table.

Muller: how was the first day back?

Me: very good! Cardo really made the day

\*chuckles\*

Muller: I don't even want to know what that idiot did \*chuckles\*

We sat down and Sisipho prayed for us then we started digging in on the wonderful food.



Sisipho: well I think you guys will be happy to learn the store is finally mine. I'll renovate it then move my clothes in after that the clothing business industry will know all about AMOUR.

Muller: what the hell does that mean? \*laughs\*

Sisipho: \*laughs\* it sorta means love it's french

Me: it's a cool nice name.

Sisipho: I'm really excited about it.

I'm glad she has something going on as well because she has been down with King being dead, her missing husband, seeing my dad for the first time in years, and my mom and dabs wanting her gone. She deserves this.

~~

.

.

The week went by fast and on Saturday I went to the gym, went to my session, visited Zay then got back home to prepare for Nella's birthday party. I wanted her to feel special. Even though there'll be a lot of Rellik's friends there asking me about him that doesn't mean I can't have fun. Muller was coming with anyone so he'll sense when I'm uncomfortable and just tell people to back up. Since the kidnapping I haven't been out a lot. I hope I don't freak out a lot. I wore my maroon crop top with my Blue ripped jeans with black fenty puma sneakers and a light purple shirt that was unbuttoned with a gold necklace and gold big earring. I tied my black weave to the side and decided I was all done. I tried doing some light makeup I saw on YouTube then I was done.

Muller: somebody went all out.

Me: well it is my best friend's birthday \*sticks

tongue out\*

Muller: \*chuckles\* let's just go. I'm not even going to comment on the outfit and makeup.

Me: she picked up out and ordered me to wear it. Birthday girl always get what they want  
\*smiles\*

.

~~

.

I didn't drink at all because alcohol always makes me brave and makes me do crazy things. I danced with Nella who was a bit tipsy.

Nella: thank you for coming. And I love my presents! \*grins\*

Me: you're my best friend. I wouldn't miss it for the world.

Nella: I would've understood if you guys didn't

come. Thank you really.

Me: my pleasure girl! \*chuckles\*

Me and Nella both gasped feeling something cold on us. I looked up and it was Rosa, Vicki was behind her.

Nella: you're not invited here

I pulled her a bit back so she doesn't start fighting.

Rosa: you think telling Wiz to break up with me will really make us break up? You're dumber than I thought.

Nella: all I said was you're a hoe that's the only reason why you would fuck someone else while you're with him.

Rosa: we were on a break! Don't speak on anything you know nothing about!

Nella: well I said what I said. Now move along.

I stood in between them because it looked like Rosa was ready to fight.

Me: guys really? We're attracting attention, stop. Nella is celebrating her day, you're not invited please leave.

Vicki: shouldn't you be mourning? \*chuckles\*

When she said that, anger built up and i found myself punching her and i pulled her to the ground that's when the fight started.

[02/18, 07:12] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER  
~

SEASON 2

## INSERT 6

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I started punching her as I was on top of her. The fight didn't last for long because Muller pulled me back while K9 held Vicki. I could see she was bleeding from her nose and lip. My head was in so much pain from her pulling my hair a lot, and I knew I had scratches from her nails. She's really a snob and I'm thanking Muller and King teaching me how to defend myself. I never want to fight but she asked for it. I'll be damned if I let her disrespect King like that.

Me: and the next time you talk about my brother I'll do more than ruin your face, bitch!

I was so mad I wanted to go and beat her up again. I could see Nella still fighting with Rosa and I was surprised Nella could fight like that. Muller pulled me towards the house to sort the situation out.

Muller: what happened?

Me: she's disrespectful and I want her out of here before I beat her ass again!

Muller: calm down. Let me see your hands  
\*chuckles\*

He looked at my bruised knuckles that were in so much pain from punching that bitch but it was worth it because I don't like her anyway.

Nella: let me go Scrappy! That hoe wants to ruin my party I will fuck her up! Who the fuck does she think she is!? Clearly she doesn't know me, I've been too nice with these crusty hoes.

I could see Nella was very pissed. She was shouting and throwing glasses, I would be angry too if someone ruined my birthday.

Scrappy: Nella you better sit the fuck down right now!

Nella: she-

Scrappy: I'm not repeating myself, bruh.

Nella sat down breathing hard I could see she was still angry. Scrappy gave the both of us ice packs. I placed mine on my hands and on my



face sometimes. My face felt hot.

Muller: you have a lot of scratches but it's not permanent.

Me: I can't believe she would say something so insensitive. We talked and I apologized what more does she want?

Nella: she wants us to act ratchet and fight with them! That's what they want. And I'm okay with doing it again since they're forgetting what type of bitch I am!

Scrappy: can you just calm down. They're going to leave and we'll enjoy this party

She sighed and placed the ice pack on her hands.

Muller: both of you calm down and tell us what

happened?

Me: Rosa was confronting Nella, I was trying to stop the fight and Vicki said something to me about mourning. And I lost it, I had to punch her. She was asking for it, she really was.

Muller: although I'm glad you're standing up for yourself. I'm not loving the violent thing, what if she took a bottle then smacked your head with it? What if she grabbed a knife?

me: I understand. But I'm not apologising.

Muller: fuck no you're not.

The four of us started laughing. It was weird that Muller was giving me pep talks about not fighting because I'm used to him saying I should fight everyone to get what I want. The mature him was surprising me. I guess he realises without King he has to be mature for the both of us. K9 and Wiz came in the kitchen.

K9: yo Nella. I-

Nella: it's okay K9 I know you don't like this but your girlfriend Vicki is the most petty person ever because she was the only one there when I talked to Wiz about Rosa. She's trying to start drama, and one day it's going to come bite her in her ass.

Wiz: to stop the petty fight, we'll leave.

Nella: you guys can stay. They should leave though.

Wiz: I think the party is ruined anyway. We should leave. See you later, kid.

K9: happy birthday again. \*hugs Nella\*

Wiz: happy birthday, kid. \*hugs Nella\*

They both came and gave me hugs as well

Wiz: I didn't even know you could fight Lona  
\*laughs\*

Me: \*laughs\* she was asking for it

Wiz laughed then they walked out.

Nella: I have known them longer, they should  
break up with those hoes.

Scrappy: \*chuckles\* you can't decide who  
people date. That's being unfair.

~~

.

.

We both went back home, my hands were in a  
bit of pain but better than before. I walked to  
lounge and Sisipho was finalising her store  
issues with the interior designer.

Issy: what happened to your face! ?

Me: Vicki gave me scratches while I gave her punches.

Issy: can we have a moment?

The interior designer nodded and walked to the kitchen. She patted the spot next to her and Muller walked upstairs. I think he was tired from all of this.

Issy: you're not the fighting type. What happened?

Me: she said something about me mourning and I just started feeling very angry then next thing you know we're fighting.

Issy: \*smiles\* I love that you're standing up for yourself but you don't have to get your point across with violence

me: it felt good though.

Issy: \*chuckles\* I'm sure it did

Me: but that's my last time fighting. I don't want to be seen as ghetto or ratchet because that's the impression they already have.

Issy: what?

Me: they're such snobs and they're very disrespectful especially Vicki. She's been wanting me to do something to her. The first time I slapped her now we fought. It's what she wanted though so I don't regret it.

Issy: just control your anger next time.

Me: I will. \*smiles\* why is your interior designer here so late?

Issy: we have to change the designs a bit because the space isn't what I thought it would be

Me: you know the shop opens next month right?

Issy: it will be ready.

Me: I hope so.

I said that standing up. When I was on the stairs she called her interior designer. I thought maybe I should go check on Muller and he was on the bed looking at some drawings. I walked closer and noticed it was decorations for a club.

Me: you bought a club?

Muller: Ghost gave it to me.

Me: what!? That's so sweet of him.

Muller: I know. I'm thinking of relaunching the place next week.

Me: what!? When was I going you know about this?

Muller: I wanted it to be a surprise.

Me: it looks beautiful.

Muller: I am a bit nervous tho.

Me: why? You'll do great.

Muller: I know nothing about handling a business. All I'm good at is robbing banks.

me: there are online courses you can take. It's better than giving up so soon. I know you can do it.

Muller: thanks sis

~~

× 6 months later ×

.

.

It was the 1st of December and I finished my exams yesterday. After my hygiene routine I wore my gym clothes and went to the gym. I didn't bother waking Muller up because I knew he was tired from his online business courses



and handling the club. But he's doing pretty good. I drove myself to the gym in King's car which was mine now. The last 6 months had been pretty good on me. I have lost a lot of weight but I still want to maintain my slim thick body. Nella is 4 months pregnant now, and I love spending a lot of time with her when she's pregnant. Her baby bump is the cutest. Muller's club "KING" is doing so good. Every day it's packed there, I think he underestimated himself too much, he didn't think he had the brains to do it, but with the online courses he's doing great. Sisipho's clothing store it's bringing in a lot of money for her, she's thinking of branching out to Jozi and hire someone to look after it. Rellik is still the same sadly, I asked the doctors if there's hope of him ever waking up. They said they is but he'd have to pull through. I hope he does. I don't imagine losing him. I have dealt with losing King even though it still hurts but I know he wouldn't want me crying about it all the

time. The video helps a lot too when I miss him. After the gym session, I realised I left my phone at home. Ugh, I don't need it anyway. I quickly went home to do my hygiene routine so I can visit my baby even though he's in a coma I talk to him like he's still hearing me hoping he'd wake up. I wore my 2 piece bobtube 'chek' printed with some matching tight pants. Then I wore my usual white sneakers. I let my black weave loose. When I took my phone off my charger I saw the plenty of missed calls from Fifi and Nella. My heart started beating fast, scared of what it might be. I quickly called Fifi because maybe that's concerning Rellik.

Me: tannie? Is everything alright?

Fifi: come to the hospital quick.

I didn't even asking more questions I ran out the house. I was too scared to even eat. At the

hospital I couldn't even greet the nurses because I was in a hurry. I didn't see anyone in his room so I was very scared. I felt someone tapping my shoulder. I looked back and it was a nurse.

Nurse: he has been moved. It happened early in the morning.

Me: what? Why? Where is he?

Nurse: \*smiles\* he's off ICU. Come I'll show you where we moved him.

I smiled so hard because finally something very good is happening to me. She showed me his room, and when I opened the door I saw him smiling at me. I ran to give him a hug with happy tears. But he winced in pain.

Me: I'm so sorry! I'm just so happy to see you,

don't worry these are happy tears \*chuckles\*

everyone in the room laughed. I saw Fifi, Ghost, Scrappy and Nella. That's why they called me, but I was too busy in the gym. I should've started here!

Rellik: somebody missed me. \*smiles\*

He held my hand and kissed it, damn I missed his touch. I missed his kisses. I missed everything about him.

Me: you have been gone for like 7 months.

Rellik: I have been told. \*chuckles\*

He held me closer to the hospital bed with his hands on my waist. I was blushing because he

was too affectionate in front of his tannie and uncle. He bit his lips and looked at me.

Rellik: come here.

Me: \*blushes\* not in front of everyone.

We were speaking in low voices and everyone was just looking at us just smiling.

Rellik: okay, everyone out. I want to kiss my girlfriend.

my eyes popped out with my face turning pink from blushing. They gave us privacy laughing at Rellik being blunt. Once they closed the door, I went lower and gave him a kiss. It lasted longer than I thought and it felt so good kissing him again.

Rellik: after I get better you owe me something that's long overdue.

Me: what's that? \*chuckles\*

Rellik: some pussy.

I couldn't help but laugh. He was right, it was sorta selfish of me to not give him the cookie and we have survived so much.

Me: get better first. Then we'll think about all of that.

Rellik: \*smiles\* man you're not going to rest. No day break.

Me: you have just woke up from a coma you were in for 7 months and you're already thinking about sex.

Rellik: those tight pants and crop top is making

me think about fucking you hard until-

Me: okay! \*laughs blushing\*

He brushed my ass. I won't lie I felt some type of way. I laughed to brush it off. I'm even scared of sex, what if he's too big and i bleed? I heard that happens. That would be too embarrassing for me.

Me: okay! \*laughs\* let's change the topic.

Rellik: what did I miss? \*laughs\* You have been safe?

Me: yes. I'm just so happy you're back. Took you long enough though.

Rellik: \*chuckles\* I heard you visited me everyday.

Me: I'm your girlfriend. I love you, and even though I wasn't the first one you saw. I'm happy

you're back.

.

.

.

apologies I'm rushing the story to get it done  
because I don't like long season 2s ♡ but  
anyway BAE IS BACK

[02/18, 07:14] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 7

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.



rellik: you should join me in here.

Me: I am not spending a night in a hospital.

Rellik: \*chuckles\* I'm saying get on the bed.

Me: why didn't you just say that? \*smiles\*

Rellik: I didn't realise you were slow. \*smiles\*

I pouted and he chuckled at my pout. He tapped my ass and brushed it. He has been touching it ever since I got here. I know it's big but oh my gosh can he stop? I feel horny. And it's crazy that I'm actually open about this because I usually feel shy and move his hands but since I'm enjoying the affection he's giving me. I'm letting him do what ever he wants.

Rellik: get on.

Me: don't you see how small this bed is?

\*laughs\*

Rellik: I don't care. as long as you're next to me.

Me: stop it! \*smiles\*

Rellik: I just missed your smile a lot babe.

Me: you're making me blush like crazy.

Rellik: I have to make sure you're always smiling.

Me: \*smiles\*... what did the doctor say?

Rellkk: regarding?

Me: your health? When are you coming home?

Stuff like that.

Rellik: \*chuckles\* I haven't been out of the coma for a day and be already you want me home.

Me: yes! \*chuckles\*

Rellik: I'll be using a wheelchair until my legs function well. \*sighs\*

Me: I'll be there to support you through what ever..

Rellik: I'll need physiotherapy but in a few weeks. I'll be able to walk on my own.

Me: okay, at least there's still hope of you walking.

Rellik: I was also nervous about that.

Me: even if there wasn't I would still be right by your side.

Rellik: \*smiles\* man, I'm lucky.

Me: I think I'm the lucky one here.

Rellik: \*chuckles\* listen baby....

Me: yeah?

Rellik: about King...

Me: I know you would've done anything to protect him. But he's gone, and I've dealt with it. It's all going to be okay. Thank you for saving Muller though. He told me what you did.

Rellik: he must've been very pissed when he woke up.

Me: well after we learnt the news of your shooting. He respected you more for putting your life in danger to save me and avenge King's death.

Rellik: how's he doing by the way?

Me: he has a club now. He's off the game for a while. He needs the break anyway.

Rellik: a club?

Me: yeah. Ghost gave him a club. Then he fixed everything and relaunched it. It's a good club.

Rellik: wow, who would've thought Muller would want to own a club.

Me: he surprised me too. I'm proud of him though. He's really accomplishing a lot. I thought us selling the house would be bad but it's actually good.

Rellik: you sold your home? Where are you staying right now?

Me: with sisipho.

Rellik: she stayed?

Me: yeah. I also thought she'd get too scared and move back to Paris but she's still here. Her shop Amour is doing so good too. Her husband ehh not as much.

Rellik: \*chuckles\* .... what happened?

I looked at him weirdly why would he chuckle at that. I didn't want to give too much thought into it so I didn't speak about that, I just explained to him what happened.

Me: he has been MIA nobody knows where he is.

Rellik: that's fucked up.

Me: very.

Rellik: what about you? How have you been?

Me: like hell. But I have been taking the pills, getting therapy and focusing on school so I've

been okay I guess.

Rellik: no trouble?

Me: nope. I have been safe surprisingly. I'm still confused how.

Rellik: ghost must've had people watch over you.

Me: I don't notice people watching me. Must be God.

Rellik: trust me. The people ghost hires to look after some one. They're professional guards. You can't see them but they always make sure you're safe.

Me: yeah, maybe he's the one who organized the bodyguards outside your hospital room all the time.

Rellik: yeah.

Me: they never talk though. It's weird.

Rellik: \*laughs\* they're here on duty. Not to make friends.

Me: \*smiles\* still. A little hello won't kill no one.

Before he could respond the door opened and Nella smiled at us. I blushed ..

Nella: we have to go. Visiting hours are over.

Me: what? They just started \*laughs\*

Nella: no but time flew by very fast. We'll be back here in the afternoon. Let's go.

Me: okay, let me say goodbye.

Nella: don't do anything nasty in here. It's a hospital. \*laughs\*

Rellik: get the fuck out Nella \*chuckles\*

Me and Nella laughed at him. Then she walked out, I looked at him and gave him a long kiss. And I think just like me, he didn't want to let go.

Me: I'll be back okay?

Rellik: i love you.

Me: i love you too.

He lets go of my waist and I was about to work out when he whistled and mumbled damn. I am loving this attention this outfit has on him.

Rellik: and go home straight.

Me: why? \*chuckles\*

Rellik: I don't want niggas looking at what's mine. That ass is looking too good.

Me: bye babe \*laughs\*

Rellik: bye.

Then I walked out, the others went to say



goodbye as well then we walked out.

Fifi: he was so happy to see you.

Me: I'm also happy to see him.

Fifi: you guys need to hurry up and give me grandchildren .

My eyes popped out and I started coughing.  
Nella laughed at me. I don't think I'm even ready for children.

Me: I want to finish varsity first. Then we'll think about children.

Fifi: 3 more years. Lord, I have a long time of waiting.

Me: \*chuckles\* they'll go by fast. You'll see

Fifi: I need twins for that matter. No triplets or something.

I gasped and held my chest. Ghost started laughing hard. Scrappy and Nella couldn't stop laughing as well. Twins? Triplets? Issa no.

Me: hay i am not promising that one. \*laughs\*

~~

.

.

Me: I feel like I'm ready. I should go get an contraception injection.

Nella: I heard that shit is painful as fuck.

I was telling Nella about being ready for sex. But children? That I'm not ready for at all. I'm still 18 maybe in the next 3 to 4 years when I'm 21 or 22 but still I'd be too young. I don't want to rush into children that's a big thing and kids

need every attention a person has. I can't let my child be neglected because I have to study. And I can't let my studies get affected because of my child.

Me: I'm willing to do anything as long as I don't get pregnant in varsity.

Nella: muller would be pissed.

Me: kill me and that fetus.

Nella: \*laughs\* girl! Why are you lying?

Me: okay he would be upset but he wouldn't kill me. \*chuckles\*

Nella: your brother loves you to death. He would not lead you into death \*laughs\*

Me: \*laughs\* you're so corny.

Nella: \*laughs\* that was good. Admit it girl!

Me: I'll give you a 5 \*chuckles\*

Nella: hater.

Me: shut up. Any who. How's the family feeling about the pregnancy?

Nella: obviously they don't approve because of his lifestyle and what not. They still think I'm making the biggest mistake of my life by being with him.

Me: does scrappy know they say this?

Nella: girl they say it to his face.

Me: ouch.

Nella: that's why I decided to give them a bit of a break. Maybe they'll come around when the baby gets born.

Me: what are you hoping for?

Nella: a boy.

Me: scrappy?

Nella: a girl \*rolls eyes laughing\*

Me: why don't you want a girl?

Nella: you see the way he spoils me? If we have

a daughter it will be a problem. Dead Lord.

Me: aww a spoiled princess. It would be the cutest thing ever.

Nella: stop playing.

Me: \*laughs\* aren't you scared of pushing the baby out?

Nella: that's the only thing that's giving me chills.

Me: \*laughs\* I'm pretty sure it's going to be painful as fuck.

Nella: don't talk about pain when you still have to handle a dick inside of you. \*laughs\*

Me: don't remind me \*sighs\*

Nella: and please don't be a frozen chicken, hoe \*chuckles\*

Me: what does that mean?

Nella: being still. Do you see how hard it is to move a frozen chicken?

I couldn't stop laughing. Nella is so crazy I didn't even think of the term frozen chicken.

Nella: so have you figured when you want to lose it?

Me: I didn't set a date. If it happens it happens.

Nella: you don't want the candles? And everything?

Me: I don't know. I feel like they're too outdated? But they're cute.

Nella: so you just want a plain "let's have sex" for your first time?

Me: I really don't know. \*sighs\*

.

.

.

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

I looked at the finances we were having. It is good money but not the type of amounts I'm used too. That only meant one thing. I need to speak to Ghost. I can't survive of this amount of money. I called Ghost and he answered quickly.

Me: we need to talk.

Ghost: I'm listening.

Me: i have an idea for you. It is concerned about the business.

Ghost: okay.

Me: I'm willing to make you a partner so you can clean the blood money this way. But I'll need a percentage too.

Ghost: you want to be involved in money

laundering?

Me: yes.

Ghost: okay, I'll ask my lawyer to draw up a contract and we'll talk properly when I see you.

Me: cool.

We both hung up, and I decided to video call Lona because I haven't heard from her. I always make sure she's okay if an hour goes by without me seeing or talking to her.

Lona: bro?

Me: where are you? Everything's okay?

Lona: yeah. I'm just chilling at Nella's home. Rellik woke up.

Me: what?

Lona: I know right!?!? \*smiles\*



Me: you must be happy as fuck.

Lona: you have no idea.

Me: I should go see him later on

Lona: I'll see you there then.

Me: cool. Bye.

Lona: bye.

We both hung up and I finished looking at the finances. I heard a knock on my door.

Me: come in.

This girl walked in. She looked beautiful as hell. And she had the most good built body. She was a bit dark-skinned and I was in awe looking at her. I cleared my throat because I was noticing how hard I was staring at her.

Me: can I help you?

?: I'm Jayde. I want to have my 23rd birthday party here. So I want to rent the whole club for a night.

I was surprised she was 23 she looked very young. Like she was 16 or something.

Me: ID?

Jay: what?

Me: ID? I don't believe you're 23.

She chuckled and I smiled at her beautiful smile. She showed me the ID and she was really turning 23 next week.

Me: okay, let's talk deals. Do you want the whole place empty? Or there should be security and we'll be able to sell alcohol to the people?

Jay: I want the security and selling alcohol deal. And I don't want uninvited people here.

Me: got it.

I could see she was the rich type. Grew up with everything handed to her. From her clothing and her hair, makeup everything she looked like a snob. But she is pretty though.

[02/18, 07:19] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER  
~

SEASON 2

INSERT 8

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

The following weeks were hard with the wheelchair and the physiotherapy was no joke either. But now I'm able to walk, if I take it too far I'll get pains on my lower back but I make sure to take my medication. Well my wife makes sure, I take my medication. I was already out of the hospital and I was staying with my uncle and tannie since they didn't want to me to stay on my own. I walked downstairs even though the stairs were hard to walk down in. I met tannie Fifi in the kitchen, as always.

Me: the way you love cooking and baking I'm surprised you're not a chef or something.

Fifi: \*chuckles\* boy, hush. You're hungry?

Me: nope. I'm thirsty though

She got me orange juice while I sat on one of the kitchen chairs. She looked at me drinking the juice and I knew she wanted to say something. I sighed and looked at her.

Me: what is it?

Fifi: don't you think it's a bit too early for you not to use the wheelchair ?

Me: I talked to my physiotherapist and he said it was fine as long as I take it extremely easy.

Fifi: okay. I was just worried. When is your next appointment?

Me: later on at 16:00pm.

Fifi: I'll drive you there.

Me: Lona already volunteered.

Fifi: \*smiles\* I love that girl for you.

Me: I know. \*laughs\* you tell me that every

chance you get.

Fifi: I can't help it. She has changed you into a better person.

Me: \* smiles\* I know. Where's Ghost?

Fifi: he went to Muller's club to discuss something else

Me: Muller is back in the game?

Fifi: not entirely. He's just doing something to make him more money.

I nodded and didn't ask any further questions. I am so ready to move back in my house. I'm even ready to get back into business. This wheelchair and walking in pain thing is not my kind of style and I don't like it one bit. I heard the door open and close.

Lona: tannie! ?

Fifi: kitchen baby.

She came in the kitchen looking so good in this short white skirt a grey tucked in t-shirt then a white similar jacket. She also had on white ankle heel boots.

Me: woooo!

Lona: stop it \*laughs\*

She came and gave me a hug. She smelled so good, I kissed her neck and she giggled.

Fifi: okay that's enough love.

Me: where are you going looking so beautiful?

Lona: Brandy's birthday brunch. And I came here to ask tannie to tell Issy where I am, and I'll be back later on.

Me: Issy?

Lona: sisipho.

Me: let me go get ready. Wait for me.

Lona: ready for what? \*chuckles\*

Me: the birthday brunch we're going to.

Lona: oh my God. You haven't even fully recovered yet. \*laughs\*

Me: I don't care. I'm not letting you be this beautiful and let niggas drool over what's mine

Lona: you have 30 minutes.

Me: \*laughs\* and an hour.

Lona: just go get ready.

I walked up the stairs even though it was hard I ended up being on top then I changed my clothes since i had showered earlier. I wore green sweatpants with black sneakers. I tried putting on my Gucci sweatshirt but it was hard



with my back being in so much pain. I finished off my look off with my Gucci snap back. I took my pills and walked downstairs. Man, Ghost needs of put an elevator in this house or something. This is painful as hell. I drank the pills and Lona looked at me.

Me: I'm fine.

Lona: clearly you're in pain. Why don't you stay?

Me: i want to be there with you.

Lona: stop that. You're clearly in pain. Stay at home. I'm not going to entertain any dudes at the brunch.

Me: lelona. I just said I'm fine.

She took out her phone from her tiny purse and started dialling something. I looked at her confused what she was doing.

Lona: Brandon? ... I'm so sorry I can't make it, something came up.... I'm really sorry, I'll bring you your present tomorrow okay?... bye.

She hang up and looked at me folding her arms. I walked closer to her but it seemed like more like limping because I was in pain.

Me: you shouldn't have done that.

Lona: I don't like seeing you in pain so I probably wouldn't have enjoyed that party. Now we have time to chill. Let's go watch a movie.

Me: if I wasn't in pain, I wouldn't told you another way we could chill. \*smirks\*

Lona: boy you couldn't handle all of this.

She got up and stuck her tongue in the sexiest

way ever. I followed after her.

Me: oh shit! It's like that huh? \*laughs\*

Lona: \*laughs\* shut up and let's go watch a movie.

We walked to the TV room, and she turned on the TV. Once I sat down. I sighed and she sat closer told me. I took her legs and placed them on my lap. I wanted to play with her, so I started brushing her thighs. At first she tried to act like she didn't care. Then I could see she was breathing a bit heavy, and she was definitely feeling the pressure. I just grinned know the type of power I have over her body.

Lona: stop that. \*smiles\*

me: stop what? \*chuckles\*

She smiled and licked her lips. I told her to sit on my lap, and we were kissing like crazy. She surprised me when she took off my sweatshirt so I went along knowing this is the time. I removed her jacket still kissing her. She kept running her hands around my body, smiling in the kiss. I removed her grey t-shirt.

Fifi: not in my cute couches!

Lona: oh my God!

Lona quickly got off and wore her t-shirt. I glared at Fifi I was so fucking close!

Me: what do you want?

Lona playfully slapped my arm. But I was dead

serious. I was about to get some pussy and she's here ruining everything.

Fifi: it is my house.

Me: tannie. \*annoyed\*

Fifi: I left my wallet and phone upstairs. Don't fuck in my couches.

She laughed walking upstairs. Lona was so embarrassed I could see it from her face. I brought her closer to me and kissed her neck.

Lona: your aunt saw us trying to have sex, Xavier.

Me: so what? It's not like we were naked.

Lona: but still.

Me: okay, how about we take it upstairs then?

Lona: no. And you're still injured anyway.

I sighed, fuck I could strangle tannie right now!

.

.

.

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

I finished counting up the money Ghost gave me. It was my share of cleaning the money. I heard the house bell ring meaning someone wanted to be let in the yard. I quickly placed back the money into the bag and I rushed to my room to hide the bag in my closet. When I went back downstairs my phone rang and I could see from the caller ID it was Jayde. Me and Jayde have been vibing a lot because she said she

wasn't the type to be in relationships, the last ones fucked her bad. I judged her quickly because she was really a cool girl. Even though her friends are stuck up. She was cool, and right now we're just enjoying each others company, and fucking a lot.

Me: Jayde.

Jayde: open the gate. It's hot as hell.

I just smiled and went to press the button to open the gate. I waited for her in the lounge. And just like usual, she came in the lounge in her short Nike shorts with a Nike long sleeve crop top. Her hair was in 2 braids, she was wearing her Nike red sneakers. She had a black Chanel purse with her. And she had this Indian thing on her forehead. I smiled looking at her belly piercing.

Me: you look good.

Jayde: thanks Khazie.

Me: I told you to stop calling me that.

Jay: I'm not going to, so give up. \*laughs\*. You should've visited me at my home.

Me: I was caught up at work. Got busy.

She folded her arms. And I chuckled, I got up and I walked closer to her.

Jay: don't walk any closer. I'm mad at you.

Me: really?

Jay: yes. Now stop.

I picked her up and kissed her. My hands were on her ass and her legs were wrapped around



me. She moaned into the kiss.

Me: I thought you were mad at me. \*smirks\*

Jay: can't be mad when you do this.

I walked with her upstairs. She was thin so it to wasn't much of a problem. She giggled when I opened my door. I threw her on the bed and she laughed. I took off my white t-shirt and my other clothings, she smiled taking off her crop top revealing her cute little boobs. I licked my lips removing her shorts, and thong. I threw them on the floor, I turned her around and she was laying on her stomach. I grabbed her ass, and smacked it causing her to moan. Then i entered into her pussy from the back, she started moaning loudly. That's when the rhythm came, and I started thrusting inside of her fast. She was moaning like crazy, I had to go slower, she looked back at me, and I took to chance to

kiss her so she can tone down the noise.  
Seeing it was working, I started entering hard.  
She couldn't even kiss me anymore she held on  
the bed cover her hands balling into fists. She  
placed her face down trying to tone down her  
moans. I held her waist forcing it down, not too  
hard to hurt her but to make her arch her back  
more. Then I started entering fast again.

Jay: oh my God! Ahhhhhh, Khazimla I... fuck!  
Ahh. .. yes!

Then I felt her pussy being more slippery  
meaning she came. while she was cumming I  
smirked and increased my sped making her  
scream. I went lower kissed her neck, then her  
back shoulder, I placed my hands next to her  
shoulders;each side; then i used the hands  
balancing myself while I went slower but harder.  
And repeating the same movement 3 times with

her moaning loud I finally came inside of her, after I was done I pulled out, she was on birth control. then laid next to her. She smiled at me and laid her head on my chest while I was gently rubbing her back.

Jay: I swear every time we fuck you always know what you're doing.

I couldn't help but laugh at that one. Jayde is very open about stuff while I'm the laid back and I don't like talking about emotions. She's the talkative type.

Jay: you must be in a training class or something.

Me: \*laughs\* what? I see my dick has you talking crazy.

Jay: psst boy please. You didn't even do

anything. \*smiles\*

Me: that's why you were trying to ruin my eardrum.

Jay: shut up! \*laughs blushing\*

Me: make me.

I bit my lip, making her get on top. She smirked looking into my eyes. I won't lie, fucking Jayde is good. Very good if I'm being honest.

~~

.

.

.

After 4 rounds on the bed and the last one in the shower. We were both tired. We cuddled in the bed still naked, we were both too lazy to get dressed.

Jay: I should get going. It's going to be late soon.

Me: nah. Sleep here.

I held her tight by her waist and laid my head on her shoulder.

Jay: what is your sister and aunt going to say?  
No I should go.

Me: they won't say anything.

Jay: but-

Me: nana khalale man. (Baby please sleep )

Jay: what does that mean? \*blushes\* you said it so sexy.

Me: \*laughs\* it means go to sleep.

Jay was raised by whites she doesn't know her

biological parents so she doesn't speak any languages besides English and little Afrikaans. I think that's cute.

Jay: okay. \*smiles\*

I closed my eyes. And I could feel her hands on my lips. I got off her shoulder and laid on my pillow looking at her. She smiled this cute smile. I couldn't help but laugh. She gotta closer and laid on my chest running her run on my abs. I shook my head falling into sleep.

.

.

.

if this sex scene gets reported then we're not getting full details about Lona's first time .  
In other words I'm saying if you're uncomfortable with sex scenes please don't

ruin for other readers. ♥

.

.

.

BOOKERS MEET JAYDE

[02/18, 07:22] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 9

.

.

.

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

I woke up with Jayde still laying in my bare chest. I smiled looking at her. She was still

asleep and I gently removed her and got up to wear my boxers and my basketball shorts. She was still asleep so I walked downstairs to drink some juice. Then I came back to her wearing her clothes. Her scent was all over the room

Jay: I should get going. My parents have been calling non-stop.

Me: \*chuckles\* they're worried about their little girl.

Jay: I'm not little

Me: you're sure?

I folded my arms smirking. Jay's parents treat her like a baby. Hence I see why she's so spoiled. If she's gone from the house too long, they'll call her. I have never seen parents so protective. I know I'm not the one to talk but Lona is my little sister that's very different.



Jay: just give me a kiss, and shut up about your opinion.

I chuckled, she pecked my lips and I walked her out. Once I saw she was totally gone. I walked back inside the house. I need to get my own crib. Living with my aunt is cool but I'm grown and I need my own space. Maybe I should look at houses closer to this place so I'm not far away from Lona. So whenever she needs me, I'm closer to her. I want my own house because it's awkward bringing girls here and having to hide them from my aunt. I know I said girls, honestly Jayde isn't the only girl I casually fuck. I'm not in a relationship so having fun isn't a problem. Jayde said it herself that she doesn't want a relationship we should just vibe and fuck. I'm not sure if she has other niggas so I'm fucking other bitches. I went back upstairs to

lay down before I go to the club later on. My room smelled like Jayde a lot making me chuckle. I don't know if her perfume is strong or she literally sprayed the room with it. It was a very strong scent. I called her and she quickly replied.

Me: did you put perfume in my room?  
\*chuckles\*

Jay: yes.

Me: why?

Jay: so these girls can know to back off and I'm here to stay.

Me: what girls? \*laughs\*

Jay: I'm not dumb. I know you have girls on the side, your texts say all of that.

Me: you checked my phone?

Jay: yes.

Me: Jayde \*sighs\*

Jay: look we're dating now. So it's not okay for them to send you nudes or any type of sexual shit.

Me: \*laughs\* when did we start dating?

Jay: don't be rude.

Me: I'm not being rude. I'm just asking.

Jay: really Khazimla? You think I let guys fuck me just casually? I like you.

Me: you need to trust me if we're going to be dating. Checking my phone isn't cool. I'm-

Jay: I've been hurt too many times, Khazimla. You know this. I don't want the same thing to happen over and over again.

Me: I'm not like your exes.

Jay: I know but-

Me: so my privacy should be respected.

Jay: I'm sorry. I just really like you and I don't

anything to go wrong.

I sighed I didn't know whether to be upset or feel sorry for her. It's fucked that girls will have a few bad relationships and automatically all guys are the same. I know I'm the player and I have no right saying this. But I do feel bad for Jayde to be that beautiful and still have insecurities and not trust yourself that you're beautiful and enough for a guy. It's a shame.

.

.

~~

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I paced up and down looking at Nella who just

had this amusing smile on her.

Nella: would you stop looking like crazy person.

me: okay, so we almost had sex! I am not even on the injection yet.

Nella: not the end of the world. \*laughs\*

Me: you're not helping!

Nella: sit down and tell me everything.

I sat next to her on my bed. It was very late and I asked her to join me for a sleepover.

Me: we were sitting on the couch, right? Mind you he's still feeling back pains but he brushes my thighs.

Nella: girl! He wanted to fuck \*laughs\*

Me: listen \*laughs\* next thing I know we're

kissing and the demon came inside of me, I took off his shirt.

Nella: Lona! \*laughs loudly\*

Me: I thought I was ready okay?! \*laughs\* then next thing happens I am shirtless in my bra, Fifi walks in.

She screamed then covered her mouth. She started laughing, like really laughing holding her stomach and even had tears.

Me: it's not funny.

Nella: what did she say? \*smiles\*

Me: we shouldn't fuck on her cute couches-

Before I could even finish she started laughing again making me laugh too.

Me: Nella you're supposed to be advising me.

Nella: on what? At least you guys weren't naked.

Me: that's the same thing he said! It's still embarrassing though.

Nella: I'm sure Fifi won't mind if you guys fuck in her house. I mean, she does want you guys to give her grandchildren.

Me: and she's going to be waiting for a long time. I need to get on the injection before I even sleep with him.

Nella: why don't you just contraceptive pills?

Me: \*sighs\* pills everyday.

Nella: it's better than that painful injection.

Me: you're kinda right.

Nella: or take after pills before 24 hours hit.

Me: I think the after pills one is more okay. I don't like taking pills everyday.

Nella: a tip, it's more painful with a condom and

girl during sex don't talk a lot. \*chuckles\*

Me: why not?

Nella: it's going to be hella awkward when you think about it. Trust me. And he's going to use it against you! \*laughs\* Scrappy does that all the time! I hate the things I say during sex. I need to buy some tape for my mouth!

Me: \*laughs\* it's that bad?

Nella: trust me, just don't say anything. Stick with moaning his name. And tomorrow we're going lingerie shopping. Get some cute underwear. Not those grandma things you were.

Me: \*laughs\* what the hell? Those are cute.

Nella: gosh no.

.

.

~

-- RELLIK'S POV --



A few days passed and I was moving back in my old house. My back was much better now. But i knew shouldn't overdo it. It was Christmas tomorrow, and we were all going to have dinner at Ghost's house. I called Scrappy because I wanted him to fill me up on what I missed on business. I know it's too early to get back but I need to make more money. It's not going to make itself.

Scrappy: nja ye'game (king of the game.)

Me: moja ntwana (sharp boy)

Scrappy: smoko? (Problem?)

Me: I need an update on what I'm missing.

Scrappy: Ghost already ordered me not to tell you anything unless he sees you have fully recovered.

Me: why am I not surprised? \*laughs\*

Scrappy: harde ntwana. (Sorry boy)

Me: moja ntwana (sharp boy)

We both hung up. I don't mind Ghost caring for me but he needs to stop treating me like I can't handle business. Yes I was shot and in a coma but I'm back now and I need to make sure everything runs smoothly because it's only a matter of time I take over. I heard my door being opened and closed.

Lona: baby!?

Me: in my room!

I shouted back. I placed the bag on the floor looking at my room being clean. The maid really works good. I should give her a raise.

Lona: somebody's happy to be back.

Me: you have no idea.

I turned around and smirked when I saw her wearing this short floral tight dress with thin straps on it. This girl is begging me to fuck her, I swear. I walked closer to her licking my lips. I held her waist kissing her neck. She smells good all the time.

Me: who are you looking cute for?

Lona: this old dress? \*blushes\*

Me: damn. Turn around and let me see how beautiful you are.

I held her hand and made her turn around. Man that ass is really something crazy about my wife. I unzipped her dress kiss her shoulder and

creating hickeys on her neck. Once the dress was in the floor, I could see she had no bra on and she had on a black thong. I bit my lip smiling. I brushed her ass, even smacking it a bit making it jiggle. I smiled, I turned her around. And her boobs were in full display. I played with her left nipple lightly pinched it making her moan. I smirked kissing her and leading her to the bed. Once she laid on it, I quickly took off my white tank top. She smiled at me, I removed her heels happy I was finally getting some action. I went lower and kissed her. She caressed my neck and body, creating more sexual emotion in me. I went lower to suck on her boobs. While I sucked the right, I made sure I grabbed with the left roughly. She was moaning calling my name. And I looked at her face still sucking. Her face was so beautiful when she was moaning, I could watch it all day. I went lower kissing her stomach, I took off her thong and opened her legs a bit wider, from the

looks of it she was wet. I ran my tongue up and down her clit. She moaned trying to run. I held both of her thighs and proceeded going faster. She was moaning while clenching in the bed cover. I looked up at her and she was looking at the ceiling with her eyes close, biting her bottom lip, moaning like crazy. I sucked on her clit hard making her scream then she quickly covered her mouth. That made me chuckle a bit then I continued moving my tongue fast on her pussy.

Lona: Xavier! Xavier! Xavier! Ahhhh! \*squeals\*

Her legs started shaking, and I felt her cum on my tongue. That made me smile. Her kissed her thighs, and went up to her kissing her and her neck again. She was breathing fast and I could tell she loved it because she was smiling so cutely. i took off my sweatpants and boxers,

then I took the condoms out the drawer. I could see it from her eyes she was scared because of the size. I didn't want to laugh and scare her more. So I ran my fingers on her pussy making sure she's still wet because this will really be painful for her. I sucked on her boobs and kissed her chin trying to enter inside of her. She quickly jumped moving. I stood on my knees, bringing her back. I held one of her thighs and tried going in again, I could see she was clearly in pain and wanting to cry. It was tight as fuck.

Me: should I remove the condom?

She nodded pouting. I quickly removed it and threw it on the floor. I tried again, kissing her this time so she won't be too focused on the pain. She tried moving so she could run away from me entering but I held her thigh still. She opened her mouth and her chest went up. I took

this as a chance to suck her boobs again. She was still in pain though. I was already midway in, and I was moving slowly so she can adjust to the size before enjoying it.

Me: look into my eyes, and relax.

Lona: it's painful.

Me: I know, but please trust me and be a big girl for 3 seconds? Please?

She nodded, kissed me. Then I entered fully, but slowly. She moaned loudly. It sounded like a scream. I looked at her, I don't want to lie. I was loving how tight her pussy is on me. Even though she was in pain, I didn't want this to stop. I moved slowly because I didn't want to hurt her. I started groaning because I was enjoying it. It's been a while since I have had sex. You can't blame me. She started moaning too but clearly

in pain, I smiled biting her neck a bit.

Me: fuck, I love you. Okay?

Lona: i-... I love you too.

I repeated my movement for some time until she came again, then I'll followed right after her. I groaned loudly when I came inside of her. I got off her and laid next to her pulling her next to me and we were both body heated. I kissed her forehead. She wrapped her arms around me, I know she was feeling tired. So since it was her first time I'll let her sleep but when she gets up. I'm hitting it again, her pussy feels too good for me not to enter inside of it again.

.

.

.



If the sex scene isn't what you expected. Don't kill me     having sex for the first time is painful, I heard.

[02/18, 07:24] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER  
~

SEASON 2

INSERT 10

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

After i ran her a bath, and gave her painkillers because she said it was painful peeing and she was in pain like walking different. I never fucked a virgin before so I didn't know what to do, so I gave her painkillers. I was worried about her,

she didn't even want to wear an underwear so I gave her one of my t-shirts then we went to sleep. I yawned waking up and it was late probably 22:00pm, I was surprised to see Lona looking at me. She was awake.

Me: you're okay?

She nodded, and I knew this was going to happen. She probably started feeling regret.

Me: baby talk to me. Don't shut me out.

Lona: I gave you my most prized jewel, please don't play with me.

Me: hey! Stop thinking like that. We're stuck forever. You know I would never hurt you intentionally. If I hurt you then I'd be hurting myself.

Lona: I love you so much, Xavier.

Me: I love you too.

I kissed her, so she would know I meant it. I know that she's scared I might leave her after having sex but I wouldn't. I had to wait for almost a year to finally sleep with her. She's definitely the one I'm going to marry, the one I see my children looking like. The kiss started getting heated, then I kissed her neck wrapping her one leg on my waist

Lona: it's painful.

Me: I promise it won't be as painful as the first.

I rubbed my dick on her pussy, and it was wet from our heated kisses, she took off the t-shirt. While I slowly entered inside of her. I paused for a little while so she can adjust again. I started

moving slowly. This time around she wasn't jumpy a lot. Through the process, she started moaning as I showered her boobs and shoulder with kisses. Creating love bites marking my territory. I moved her, so she can lay in her back and I was on top. She held both of my hands, and our hands were intertwined while I was going in and out slowly and kissing her while she was moaning, her moans matches my groans. Then she started moaning loudly matching my rhythm I smiled because she was finally enjoying it. We repeated the same movement and I knew I would cum so I had to make sure she came first, I held it in. I loved this girl so much that making love with her is probably the best things I could do. She removed her hands, and wrapped them on my neck pulling me closer. Our bodies were so close and connected I could feel her body heat on me. She came, moaning right in my ear so sexy that I followed right after her. Once I was

finished releasing my load inside of her. I pulled out and smiled kissing her forehead. I pulled her next to me, she chuckled.

Me: is it still painful?

Lona: yes but not when we're having it. The pleasure covers the pain.

I nodded smiling at her. I fixed her hair which was all over her face. She smiled biting her lip.

Lona: you have to get me morning after pills. I don't want to get pregnant.

Me: okay, early in the morning.

Lona: now.

Me: where am i going to get them now baby?  
\*chuckles\*

Lona: Xavier I'll forget in the morning.

Me: I'll remind you.

She folded her arms pouting. I sighed taking my phone and calling the doctor to supply me with after pills.

Doc: Rellik.

Me: I need after pills.

Doc: since when did you start fucking bitches raw?

Me: no questions. I expect them to be here in an hour.

I hung up before he could respond. I looked at Lona. My wife could control me and I still couldn't care about anything else.

Me: there'll be here in an hour.

Lona: thank you baby.

me: I have another way you can thank me.

\*smirks\*

Lona: oh my God no. \*chuckles\* we just had sex now.

Me: baby you have to understand. I was in hunger for a 9 months or so. I just want to make love to you every chance I get

Lona: let me heal first before you start pounding in me again.

We both laughed. We just started goofing off, fucking, and talking in between about everything. The doctor came with the pills and she drank them then we were off to sleep again at 5am

.

.

~~

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

I woke up at 9am. It was still empty in the house so I figured Lona is at Rellik's house and Sisipho is at her store. I hope Lona isn't sleeping with him yet, because I don't like her sleeping over there. My phone rang again, and I sighed looking at the caller ID. It was mom and I knew she was going to be nagging me about Christmas. It was today and I had no plans of returning home after knowing what she did. I can't trust her at all. I ended up answering the call, maybe it's about something serious.

Me: ma?

Mama: Khazimla, ufuna undixelela awubuyi kulo nyaka for iChris'mesi (Khazimla are you trying



to telling me you're not retuning this year for Christmas?)

Me: hayi ungeka vumi izekho zakho and uxolise kuMakazi uSisipho (not until you own up to your actions and apologize to Aunt Sisipho.)

She kept quiet and I knew she was upset. That meant only one thing. She's going to cry and try using the emotional blackmail on me.

Mama: yazi yinto Khazimla? Ku'right mntanam ulumkele ungazisoli ngezinto uzenzayo. Ukhetha yena kodwa ndim owakuzalayo. Ndim owava intlungu zokwenza! \*cries\* (You know what Khazimla? It's okay my child but be careful you don't end up regretting what you're doing. You're choosing her but i gave birth to you. I was the one who felt the pain of making you.)

She cried very hard I had to put the phone down but i didn't hang up. She was making such a noise and it was really affecting me. I sighed maybe she should come to Cape Town so she can sort this thing she has with Sisipho.

Me: I'll get tickets for the family. We need to solve this thing once and for all.

Mama: funeka naye aqale axolise for uthatha indoda yam sogqiba wayizalela. (She also needs to apologise for sleeping with my man then giving him a child. )

Me: mama awuna17 yeka ukuziphatha okomtwana. (Mama you're not 17 stop behaving like a child.)

Then she started shouting because I was rude. I decided to hang up and I placed my phone in flight mode. I don't need all the unnecessary

bullshit. I know I have no right speaking to my mother like that but sometimes she really gets on my nerves. And if she lets me talk to her like that, I guess it's not a big deal. I didn't know what I would do because we had to attend a Christmas dinner at Ghost's house and it would be inappropriate for me to bring my mom there. I didn't know whether to not buy the tickets and ignore their calls or buy them but let them stay at a hotel. I opted for option 1 so I wasn't going to buy the tickets and I was going to ignore their calls. My phone rang and i immediately smiled looking at Jayde's name pop up.

Me: baby.

Jay: I could get used to this.

Me: what? \*laughs\*

Jay: you calling me baby.

Me: \*laughs\* I always called you that.

Jay: mhhh. So what are your Christmas plans babe?

Me: family dinner.

Jay: lucky you.

Me: your plans?

Jay: parents bailed out because they had to attend to my sick grandma in Australia.

Me: so you're all alone for Christmas.

Jay: yes. \*sighs\*

Me: why didn't you go with them?

Jay: didn't feel like spending my Christmas in a hospital all the way in Australia.

Me: well how do you feel like spending your Christmas like?

Jay: with my babe.

Me: \*chuckles\* come to my family Christmas dinner.

Jay: no! Baby can't you cancel and hang with me instead?

Me: \*laughs\* man you're too spoiled. I'm not doing that. It's either you're coming or you'll be alone.

Jay: I don't like you being mean.

Me: that's why you're still stuck with me.

She laughed. I think I like Jayde even with her spoiled tendencies. I'm used to girls already calling me asking me for money but she has her own it's just something different about her. She likes me because I can put her in check and I always bring her down to earth, and I like her because she just has that energy that can keep me calm.

Jay: what time should I be ready? What should I wear? Isn't it too early to meet the family?

Maybe I shouldn't go.

Me: Jay. ..

Jay: yes?

Me: you're going even if you're in sweats. I'm going to drag you out of that house.

She laughed making me chuckle. I know it's too early for her to meet the family but honestly I had a good feeling about her.

.

.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I walked inside the house and I tried tiptoeing

upstairs. It was 12:00pm and all me and Xavier have been doing is making love. I was so tired and in pain. I just wanted a long bath. Luckily I wasn't found so I smiled in my room. I limped to the bathroom to pour water in the bath basin. A bubble bath is all that I need. Nella forgot to mention how fucking painful this is. The first time it was HELL I thought my private part was being torn apart with a knife. But I'm glad it's over with. The other rounds were painful as well but they had sexual pleasure to them. I looked at my ringing phone and it was Nella. I picked it up smiling.

Nella: what are you wearing to the dinner chomp? Let's wear the same colors.

Me: how about black?

I tried moving in the tub and hissed in pain. I smiled thinking about the memories we created

in that room.

Nella: bitch you did it!?

Me: yes. It's painful as hell.

Nella: it will get better boo.

Me: and you were right about the condom. it was more painful with it. He asked if he should take it off, and I nodded. It was a bit better after taking it off but!... it was still painful.

Nella: aww it will be better your second time around. After pills?

Me: yes, and we already had multiple rounds. But I drank them again for just in case \*laughs\*

Nella: that greedy bastard \*laughs\*

Me: I didn't mind because I kinda enjoyed it into round 3 or 4 I was really enjoying it.

Nella: 4!? Bitch what !?

Me: I'll tell you the details over lunch tomorrow



just the two of us.

Nella: bye, get ready boo.

Me: bye.

I hung up smiling. I heard someone clearing their throat I gasped looking at Issy behind me. I felt so embarrassed I wanted to drown myself in the bubble bath. I placed my phone on the side not dropping it in the water.

Me: that's invading my privacy.

Issy: so you're having sex now?

I looked down with no explanation. Why am I embarrassed? I'm 19! I'm grown I should own up to it. I am in varsity.

Issy: using a condom in sex is very essential,

Lelona.

Me: I'm sorry.

Issy: are you on the contraceptive injection?

I shook my head looking down. I didn't want to have this talk at all. It was embarrassing, I wasn't ready for it. She sat on the closed toilet seat and looked at me. Like really look at me, you know how mothers just stare at your soul? That's it.

Issy: do you want a kid at 19?

Me: no.

Issy: do you want to live with HIV? STD? STI? any type of disease?!

Me: no.

Issy: then why are you gambling with your life!?

Me: he's clean. I trust Xavier.

Issy: oh you're the miracle seer. Everyone you trust is clean. Don't be too naive Lelona man! You know what type of guy he was before you. You took life orientation as a subject and you passed. Now why are you becoming slow at this information?

I couldn't talk at all. All i could do was stare at the bubbles. And i can't blame Zay he asked me if he should take it off, I agreed.

Me: I took an after pill.

Issy: hurry up so we can go get you a contraceptive injection and get tested.

Me: i-

Issy: Lelona I know I wasn't in your life, but I'll be damned if I let you ruin your life because you trust someone! Diseases don't look like anyone it could affect everyone. Hurry up.

She walked out and slammed the door, she was very angry. I sighed and finished taking the bath even in a bit of pain. I guess Issy was right, but I doubt Zay is infected with anything.

.

.

.

and please support Bella & Xavier's gangster love story & I fell inlove with my brother's ex.



[02/18, 07:25] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 11

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

After all I did getting ready, I was done to go get tested and get a contraceptive injection. I didn't want to say no to Sisipho because she looked so angry and I couldn't say no, it's my first time seeing her that angry. I was in a long dress that wasn't tight at all. I wasn't wearing an underwear because my vagina was still in pain. Maybe 4 rounds was overdoing it? Hay Zay will wait for a week before I open my legs again. Sisipho quickly drove me to the doctor. I haven't seen my doctor in a while, she smiled at me.

Doc: still having the panic attacks?

Me: no.

Doc: it's been a while since I seen you here. It's

great seeing you.

Me: thank you \*smiles\* merry Christmas.

Doc: you too, sweetheart. Right after you I'm clocking out and heading back home to my family for some celebration time.

We both smiled at each other. Sisipho was also smiling. She didn't want to appear as rude, and I totally understand.

Doc: what's the special visit for?

Me: uhm... I want to get tested and I want to have a contraceptive injection.

Doc: can the lovely lady wait outside?

She looked at Sisipho.

Issy: oh sorry, I'll be waiting in the waiting room.

I nodded, and she left. The doctor did her thing.

Doc: so who's the special guy?

Me: \*chuckles\* Xavier.

Doc: nice name \*chuckles\* where did you guys meet?

Me: doctor Vane! \*blushes\*

Doc: I'm only asking \*laughs\* I love seeing you this happy. You're not the same girl from January that was always in here with the panic attacks. You have really grown. I am happy.

Me: thank you. And also thank you for recommending Dr Zwide. She's amazing.

Doc: I knew you would like her. She's one of the best. I'm really happy things are looking out for you, Leona.

Me: Lelona. \*chuckles\*

Doc: sorry. \*laughs\*

Me: I've come to accept you'll never be able to say it right \*laughs\*

She laughed also and gave me a small cup. I knew where the restroom was, so I knew I hate to pee. Lord that was going to be a challenge knowing how painful it is to pee. After all of that. I had to wait before I was told my results. She had given me the contraceptive injection and let me tell you! It was no joke but it wasn't hurtful to a point where I'd cry, it was very painful to walk because of that damn dick Xavier has. I wanted a wheelchair but I knew that i would be a laughing stock . Doc called me up again. And Issy walked with me inside her office. I told her she could come so she can hear about my results because I know they're clean.



Doc: okay, with the birth control shot you may feel nausea but that's normal. You may also gain weight, experience headaches. Your breasts become tender. Get depression. Or have a slight bruise where the shot was given even a very rare small, permanent dent in the skin where the shot was given. But all of this is normal or it might not happen but if it does. It's normal.

I nodded as listened attentively to her giving the pros and cons of the birth control shot.

Doc: every 3 months you should come get one. but it's still not okay to have unprotected sex. You and your partner need to come here and get tested together. Am I making myself clear?

I nodded and she smiled.

Doc: everything is clean. She doesn't have any diseases or has she contracted anything. She isn't pregnant either.

I smiled, and looked at Issy like "i told you so" she chuckled.

Issy: I still don't want her having sex so young.

Doc: they're bound to grow up some day.

Issy: I know. It's too soon though

They both started laughing. I was just ready to leave, my legs were killing me. I was giving them smiles but I wanted to go. On the ride back home, Issy was giving me a lecture about how lucky I was. Millions of people contract diseases from partners they trust. In all

honesty I was not listening. I know it's bad but I know all of this information so I wanted her to keep it zip. Once we arrived at the house, I was surprised to see Muller in the living room with this dark-skinned cute girl. He was laughing. I mean really laughing. I have been so busy with Zay, I didn't even notice him being in a relationship. He didn't even tell me about her.

Me: well hello \*smiles\*

They both looked at me. The girl quickly jumped off him, and sat next to him.

Issy: everyone in this house is dating \*laughs\*

I looked at her. Lord I hope she doesn't tell muller about the incident.

Me: I'm Lelona. His little sister.

Muller: Iona this is Jayde. My girlfriend.

I looked at him smiling. First time he introduced someone as a girlfriend with a smile. He was looking at her smiling and her eyes were on me and Issy. She was scared that we found them all giddy in the living room. .

Jay: I'm so happy to finally meet you guys. I have heard so much.

She got up and gave us hugs. That took me by surprise. By her fashion sense I thought she would be a snob but no, she gave us hugs and was always smiling. She was wearing all black with her blonde hair slayed. I was amazed by her beauty.

Me: nice to meet you.

Issy: we'll leave you two lovebirds alone.

She smiled and I laughed. She was excited about Muller having a girlfriend. I think we're both used to him being tough and a player that when he smiles and he's in love it's actually a good look.

Me: she's pretty

Issy: very pretty.

~~

.

.

Luckily for me Muller was occupied with his girlfriend he didn't ask about me walking funny even though I tried my best to hide it. I'm pretty

sure it was visible. He didn't even ask about me not sleeping here yesterday. We were now on our way to the dinner Fifi invited us to. I was wearing this short black dress, knee-high open toe boots with a hoodie cardigan in a way. I was not going to take it off because then people would see it wasn't wearing any underwear. I'm refraining from wearing it because it was close contact with my vagina making it more painful when I walk. I was in the car with Sisipho and she was excited about the dinner because she says she hasn't seen Fifi in so long. Like 3 day is long. Hay they're really best friends. I found myself laughing at that. Once we were let in and everything i saw I was in awe how beautiful the decorations were. This was amazing! We were accompanied to the dining room. And there was scrappy, Nella, Ghost, Fifi and Xavier. Well all greeted each other saying merry Christmas. The maid took our gifts. I am glad I went shopping last week earlier. I was next to Xavier

and everyone was engaging in their own conversation with whoever they wanted.

Rellik: you're okay?

Me: yeah. I'm fine babe.

I started getting a headache. But I didn't tell him because it's not a big deal its part of the contraceptive injection effects.

Rellik: you're sure? I feel like I over pushed you with 4 rounds when you were starting.

Thank God he was whispering. I don't want muller to know yet.

Me: it's a bit painful but I'll be fine. I promise, a week without anything big tearing my vagina in

half then I'll be fine.

He smirked because I called his dick big. I rolled my eyes smiling.

Me: oh God.

I knew that would boost his ego. He licked his lips and smiled.

Me: eat your food and stop talking dirty.

He laughed lowly and we started eating. The dinner was good. And Jayde was a sweet girl, a little spoiled that we could see but she was nice. I like her. My headaches were getting stronger and I was feeling light-headed. A bit dizzy to be exact. I didn't pay any mind to it because



maybe the injection is working hard on showing me it's effects.

Fifi: Lona. I heard you passed all your modules with distinctions. Congratulations.

I looked at her. It felt very hot in here. I smiled, even though it was very hard concentrating.

Me: thank you. Can I be excused to go to the bathroom?

I got up and walked to the bathroom. There I opened the window because I needed a lot of fresh air. I took off the wool jacket and sat on the closed toilet seat. I heard knocking and I knew it was Xavier.

Me: it's not locked.

And just like I said if was him. He could see I wasn't okay.

Rellik: you're okay?

Me: feeling nausea, and I'm getting stomach cramps

Rellkik: it must be the after pills.

Me: yeah and I also had a contraceptive injection this morning.

Rellkik: what?

Me: yup. Issy was pissed we had unprotected sex, I had to even get tested.

Rellkik: that's why she's been acting cold towards me.

Me: I'm sure you'll be happy to learn I'm clean.

Rellik: you think I go around hitting every girl  
raw?

I shrugged my shoulders. He chuckled and I  
smiled looking at him. I don't know why I was  
happy that he actually only makes love to me  
raw, and all his ex hoes he used protection with.

Rellik: you need something to make you feel  
better?

Me: just cold water, please.

Rellik: let's go.

He took my hand and we walked to the kitchen.  
The maids were busy I don't even know with  
what. He poured me a glass of cold water. I  
smiled drinking it.

Me: thank you.

He gave me a quick kiss but i was blushing because the maids were looking at us smiling. He wrapped his arm over my shoulders and we walked back to the dining room.

Issy: you're okay?

Me: yes. Just needed air, it became too hot.

Fifi: I'll go ask them to switch on the air conditioner.

Me: I'm okay, that won't be necessary \*smiles\*

Fifi: stop being silly! \*laughs\* I'll be right back.

She left and soon after she came back. The room started feeling a bit chilled. I smiled and thanked her. I am happy they didn't ask any more questions

~~

We were driving back home. And the dinner went perfectly. I smiled looking at the gifts Xavier gave me. It was a Cartier bracelet with a Rolex and he said my other gifts are at his house. I knew they were really expensive and that made me feel bad I only got him new Gucci sneakers, with a Rolex and my virginity. I laughed at my own joke, my virginity as a gift.

Issy: someone's happy.

Me: yeah, I really am.

She quickly stopped her car, and looked in front angrily. I looked up to see what she was looking at. And near the gate, there stood Isipho, Dabs, uncle and dad. Damn...

[02/18, 07:27] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 12

.

.

.

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

I looked at my mother in utter shock that she would come here. I made sure to ignore their texts and calls so how in the hell did she get here with the rest of the family? Man if King was here he would've helped me with this. I can't count on dad or my uncle because they're both equally useless. I know that's mean but it's the truth. The weight of the whole family is on

my shoulders.

Jay: khazie you're okay?

I forgot she was even in the car with me. I looked at her, and she could clearly see i was stressed the fuck out. I got out the car not answering her question. As I walked closer to my mom, I turned around and signaled for Lona to remain in the car.

Me: ma, yintoni ngoku? (Mom, what is it now?)

Ma: asikwazi uhlala kunye for iChris'mes?

Kudala sihamba sisuka eAirpirt. Vula siphumle. (can't we spend Christmas together? It's been a long walk from the airport. Open let's get some rest.)

Me: ayondlu yam. Ba umakazi akanifuni nizofuneka nihambe. Nifike njani khona? (it's

not my house. If Auntie doesn't want you here you'll have to leave. How did you get here anyway? )

Dabs: si'book'ishe ngokwethu kaloku wena awukwazanga (we booked on our own because you couldn't do it. )

I could sense the attitude in her voice. To avoid the drama, I looked at my dad and uncle who have been quiet this whole time. See why i would never respect them? They're controlled by them!

Me: ndizohamba nani ukuya eHotele, anizokwazi ulala apha. ( I'll go with you to the hotel, you can't sleep here.)

My mother was the first one to storm to my car. I sighed when she opened the front door and



saw Jayde.

Ma: tchin! Wahlala? Khawuthi'gu. (You're still sitting? Just move.)

I quickly walked to the car, I could see Jayde was confused because she doesn't understand Xhosa at all.

Dabs: khamjonge ubhitye ungakanani.  
Abantwana bangafela esuswini kulo. (Look at how thin she is. Kids would die in her stomach.)

I sighed, I was very thankful she didn't understand my language. Jayde being spoiled was not moving at all in her seat. I shook my head starting to have a headache from all this unnecessary shit.

Me: baby, please step out for a moment?

She got out, mom pushed her to get in the car.

Me: ma!

Mom glared at me and fixed her long skirt closing the door. Then the others also got in the car.

Me: can I leave you with my aunt and sister for a little while? I promise I'll be back.

Jay: I don't know, Khazimla.

Me: baby, I promise I'll be back. I'm just going to book them a hotel then come back.

Jay: I can't sleep over here

Me: why not?

Jay: it's disrespectful to your aunt. \*blushes\*

Me: issy is cool.

Jay: they're identical twins right?

Me: yes. I'm surprised you weren't shocked.

Jay: I have cousins who are identical twins so it's not really shocking when I see identical twins.

Me: let me go quickly. I promise I'll be back quickly okay?

She nodded and I accompanied her to Issy's car.

Issy: I don't want them here.

Me: I'm taking them to a hotel.

Issy: what are they even doing here?

Me: we were supposed to have dinner together

but I ignored their calls so they came here in Cape Town.

Issy: why didn't you tell us anything?

Lona: they must've used their own money. They have money now because of King's will.

Issy: nxa I don't want them here Khazimla.

Me: I'm making sure they're leaving, antsho? (Aren't I?) All of you are getting on my damn nerves acting like 5 year olds.

After saying that, Issy's mouth flew open because I said it with so much attitude. I was honestly tired by all of this bickering like we weren't family. I kissed Jay's forehead then rushed to my car.

Ma: andazi ungathengi eyakho indlu nje. (I don't know why you don't buy your own house.)

Me: mama, uyayazi ngoba. (mom, you know why)

Dabs: Lelona umdala angakwazi ukuzinakekela. And akana mama na ngoku? Phila ubomi bakho Khazimla. (Lelona is old enough to look after herself. And doesn't she have her mother now? Live your life, Khazimla.)

I decided to ignore them even though I knew they were right. I don't want to leave Lona to stay with issy alone because I promised her I'd always be right where she is. Then at the same time I don't want to take her away from her mother. I know she enjoys staying there and most of the time I'm never home. I'd be unfair to take her only for her to be alone all the time.

.

.

.

-- JAYDE'S POV --

.

.

Lona offered me juice while Issy went upstairs to rest because she was too tired.

Me: thank you.

She smiled at me. But later her smile turned into a frown and I could see she was in pain.

Me: you're okay?

Lona: yeah just cramps.

Me: must be the periods approaching.

Lona: yeah must be that. So tell me about yourself. How did you guys meet? \*smiles\*

I blushed thinking about Khazie. I never thought after dating a lot of guys and always ending up hurt that I would finally meet someone so nice and sweet yet so mean and intimidating.

Me: I'm 23, I'm the only child that my parents have. I was adopted, and I'm really not that interesting \*laughs\*

Lona: how did you guys meet?

Me: uhm.. it was a week before my birthday I think, but I know I heard about this hot new club so I wanted to rent the whole place for my party because I didn't want people I didn't know at my party because that's very irritating. But, me and your brother just kicked it off. He would invite me to lunch and stuff, and I always thought he just wanted to smash then leave me

She laughed at my dramatic hand gestures. I

took another sip of the juice smiling.

Me: so I was like 'fuck it' so we started casually fucking. Silly me grew feelings, then I did the dumbest shit ever.

Lona: what? \*laughs\*

Me: I sprayed my perfume all over his room because I wanted any chick he would bring home to know that, I have arrived. \*smirks\*

Lona: oh my. .

She started laughing. And I joined in on her. I know it was wrong of me to do if but let's face it. I know Khazie is a bad boy that plenty of girls throwing themselves at him. I want them to know he's mine and that they should back far far away.



Lona: I like you. You're talkative and over the top.

Me: thank you \*laughs\*

I'm happy his sister likes me because that guy would die for his little sister and I bet if I get on her bad side and she says he should dump me he will. That is exactly why I plan on not getting on her bad side. I want one relationship of mine to at least last.

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I laid on my bed bored watching some TV. Since there weren't any interesting soccer matches, I decided to do some work on my

laptop. I was going to send some PDF to one of my employees for one of my clubs when I saw new pictures on the laptop. My eyebrows furrowed confused as to what was going on. I checked them out and I smiled. It was Lona's pictures but I could see they weren't new pictures. How is it that it's the first time I'm seeing this? It made me miss her and I took my phone calling her. While I was waiting for her to pick up, I quickly sent the PDF to the employee.

Lona: baby?

Me: I saw the pictures

Lona: which pictures? \*laughs\*

Me: the pictures you took on my laptop.  
\*smiles\*

Lona: oh my gosh. That was from a long time ago \*laughs\* when we were in the B&B

Me: how come I'm just seeing them now?

Lona: I don't know. Ask yourself that \*laughs\*

Me: don't get smart. \*smirks\*

Lona: I'm sure you're just missing me that's why you called me for not reason at all \*laughs\*

Me: I miss you so bad.

Lona: figures \*laughs\*

Me: let's go for a night drive.

Lona: you must want muller and issy to kill me.  
\*laughs\*

Me: \*laughs\* they'll understand.

Lona: you have 30 minutes before muller arrives.

Me: where is he?

I put my phone on speaker and quickly changed my clothes into a tight black t-shirt with white sweatpants that had grey lines on the side then I finished it off with Gucci slides.

Lona: he went to book my evil family into a hotel.

Me: they're here?

Lona: yup.

Me: how do you feel about that?

Lona: as long as they're far away from me. I'm okay.

Me: I'll be there in 10 minutes babe.

Lona: okay. Love you.

Me: love you too.

She hung up and I picked my phone up. I'm surprised Isipho hasn't told Muller about me attacking her. I'm sure that will cause a lot of drama and I'm hoping she'll keep her mouth zip. I sped off to Lona's house, I took the range rover today because i noticed I always use the

lambo. I want to get a new car anyway maybe an audi 8 or Mercedes Benz arbonne. When I arrived she was already outside the gate texting on her phone. This time her walking was better than before. She kissed me when she got inside the car, I smiled at her wiping her lip gloss off her lips.

Me: this is a new one?

Lona: yup. Like it?

Me: well it does taste good.

She laughed at me licking my lips. The lip gloss she puts on always make her lips look more good. And that just makes me want to kiss her more.

Lona: should I feel bad that I left Jayde all alone in the house?

Me: \*laughs\* no.

Lona: Xavier.

I sighed and parked next to her yard. I got out the car, and I opened the door for her.

Me: why did you come in the car if you knew we weren't going to leave?

Lona: \*smiles\* wanted to kiss you without eyes watching.

Me: \*chuckles\* you're something else.

We walked inside the house and I kept touching her ass because it's just so big and soft. I smirked when I felt no panty through her short dress. We were now inside the house on our way to the living room. I lifted up her dress, and grinned at her bare ass. She smacked my hand

away.

Lona: stop! \*laughs\*

She fixed her dress down. I smiled looking at her like she was the last meal and I was hungry as fuck.

Me: I've seen it before and it's mine now anyway. Now move and let me enjoy my art.

Lona: \*laughs\* you're so annoying.

Me: give me a kiss then if I can't at least look at it.

Lona: no.

She smiled and when she was about to walk off, I held her back and pouted giving her sad eyes. She laughed giving me a kiss and my hands

landed on her ass, brushing it and even smacking it. When the kiss ended, I brought her closer by grabbing it. Her arms were on my neck, she wiped her lip gloss off me again.

Lona: you're such a baby.

Me: I'm your baby.

She blushed like hell and laughed making me chuckle.

Lona: let's go. The poor girl is all alone.

She let go of me and removed my hands from her ass. I watched her go, man the way her ass was moving i wanted to fuck her in that living room. My wife can make me go crazy just by wearing anything. It's crazy how much I feel for



this girl.

[02/18, 07:31] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 13

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

We talked with Jayde and she was honestly a good girl even though I could sense the insecurities she has but nonetheless I think she's a good girl for Muller. After so long, Muller came back and I was going to chill with Rellik in my room.

Muller: where are you two heading off too?

Me: my room.

Muller: no boys upstairs.

Me: it's just Xavier \*chuckles\*

Muller: no boys upstairs Lelona. You want to disrespect Sisipho and fuck in her house?

Me: fuck?

Muller: his grin isn't hiding anything and your walk isn't denying anything .

I looked at him shocked that he knew. I looked at Rellik who was trying to hide his smile. Gosh, Bury me deep in the house anyone. The stare Muller gave me was one I could sense he was disappointed but he didn't have a big fuss about it like I thought he would. He just looked at me for a long time. Even Jayde kept quiet and didn't

want to get involved.

Muller: we'll talk properly tomorrow.

I nodded embarrassed. Me and Xavier sat down on the couch. I wanted to ask him to leave because now this was very awkward. The tension was crazy! I looked into his eyes and pointed at the door with my head. He shook his head smiling. I glared at him with my eyes tinted. He puckered his lips into a pout giving me an air kiss. I couldn't help but chuckle. Making Muller and Jayde look at us. They were confused why I was laughing, because me and Xavier weren't even saying anything. I looked back at Xavier who also gave me the same facial expression they had. He's such an actor! My mouth flew open because he's making it seem like I'm being crazy. Muller and Jayde continued watching TV and all cuddled up. It's

unfair how he gets to cuddle with his bae and I get to do doing sign language with mine. but I guess that's the big brother perks..

Xavier: that's my cue to leave. See you tomorrow, baby.

Me: I'll walk you out.

I quickly stood up. Xavier chuckled and we walked to his car.

Me: he's being unfair.

Rellik: he's being a big brother. I would act the same.

Me: then maybe we shouldn't by have sex until he is comfortable with it

I folded my arms frustrated that he was taking

his side when clearly I wanted him on mine. I knew the word 'sex' would make his ears perk up

Rellik: fuck no. That's not what I said

Me: sounds like it.

Relli: don't put words in my mouth now stop being spoilt and come give me a kiss.

Me: you're lucky I love you.

Rellik: I know. It's hard not to.

I laughed and pecked his lips. He is wasting my lip gloss all from this kissing like we're newlyweds.

Rellik: that's not a kiss.

Me: then what is it? Isn't it a baby kiss?

Rellik: do I look like a baby?

Me: yes, yes you do. And you act like one too-

He cut me off by pulling me to him and smashed his lips on my. I didn't want the kiss to end so when he pulled away I pouted

Rellk: cheer up. You'll see me tomorrow.

Me: I know. Drive safely.

Rellik: I love you.

Me: I know, call me when you get home.

Rellik: Lelona I love you.

Me: \*laughs\* damn, I heard you.

Rellik: don't test me.

Me: \*smiles\* I love you too, idiot

He smiled making me laugh, one would swear

this guy is bipolar but he's just too damn goofy no one would understand unless they're closer enough to really know him. I went inside the house when I saw his car really speed off. When I was inside the house, I frowned missing him. The cramps came back with the headache. I went upstairs and took headache pills. I ran myself a bath because I knew this meant my periods were on the way. After the bath I wore my granny panties with a pad on and my granny nightie. I hope it's not the periods. I heard the injection prevents them then they also said small blood spotting right? When I was about to sleep a text lit my phone up. I checked it and it was Zay.

Hubby : back safely.

Me: okay, I'm off to sleep. Love you. ♥

Hubby : love you too.

Right after that I feel asleep and drifted off to lala land. The next morning I woke up and I knew I was on my periods due to the unusual feeling below my legs. Let this be the last time I have periods please please. After all my morning routine I walked down the stairs and I could already hear the screaming. I checked the time on my phone and just was 12:03pm. Damn why didn't anyone wake me up ?

Issy: she is my daughter and if you dare call her a bastard child again I will do something I should've done a long time ago. Try me!

The room got silent. Then I heard a lot of glasses breaking and a lot of commotion. I walked inside the living room and I could see Isipho was bleeding from her head, Issy was bleeding from her hand and there was broken glasses on the floor. I swear I act more mature



then them. I really swear. But I was really happy that Issy was defending me. I followed Muller who was holding Issy back and rushing her to the kitchen. He took the medical aid kit and walked to the living room.

Me: what happened?

They both ignored me. Muller came back and i looked at him again. I was waiting for an answer and I would not stop until i was given one

Issy: I want them out.

Muller: but-

Issy: Khazimla!

Me: calm down.

I knew muller hated being shouted at and Issy was really working herself up i didn't want her to get a heart attack because of that grinch.

Issy: I'm sorry. khazimla I know you want the family to all get together because you hate choosing a side. I understand but I will never forgive her for what she has done

Muller: but you're not innocent in this either.

We all got quiet. I knew shit was about to blow off. I sighed, here we go

Issy: how dare you say that! She is fucking evil! Who tries to kill someone just because of a man!? That same man that she's still with but he was the one who came to my bed! \*cries\* you think this is easy for me!? My own blood wants me dead and now I have to know that I

have lost and sister forever someone whom I used to value.

Muller: not enough to turn her husband away.

Me: Khazimla...

I popped my eyes out. Issy was shocked that he would talk like this. Issy was hysterically crying. Muller just sighed and looked at me

Issy: get out!

I looked Issy, clearly she was overreacting and she needed to calm down.

Me: Sisipho.

Issy: out!

Muller: just because I'm telling the truth? Which

is something you don't want to hear? Both of you are wrong. There's no right in this. Both of you let a man come between your sisterhood and now this is all one big mess. Stop playing the victim and realise you're also wrong. This won't end until the both of you apologize to each other. You may never see each other again and that's okay. Just when you guys do there shouldn't be any type of commotion with this.

Issy stood up and wrapped the kitchen cloth on her bleeding hand. We'll have to throw that away after all of this.

Issy: one more wrong move from her and she's out.

Muller: I'll make sure of it. \*smiles\*

Issy smiled too. I loved that she didn't have a hating bone in her body. Yes she overreacts sometimes but she's a cool lady that has a lovely heart whenever she has calmed down. I gasped silently when I saw Isipho's face with blood. I knew she must've had a cut on her face. That was surely going to leave a scar.

Issy: I do apologise for being violent. I shouldn't have thrown the glass at you.

Dabs: zizinto zakho kaloku ezo (those are your things)

Muller: makazi! \*shouts\* (aunt)

Dabs kept quiet and looked at Isipho's scar.

Muller was really raging with anger. I would be too, all these grown people and they're acting younger than us. I was feeling a bit sad that all of this was because of me. I am the product of

all this hate. I am the cause of another human being's hatred towards her sister.

Issy: and I do apologise for sleeping with your husband. Even though I never called him to my bad, I should've been a good sister and pushed him off. I'm so sorry Isipho I know that caused you so much pain especially because you loved him so much and as you sister I should've respected that.

Isipho was now crying too. Like really crying, and that made me feel bad for her. To love someone and trust them only for them to sleep with your sister and impregnate her. Then you have no choice but to raise the child. It must've really hurt her bad. But murder is still not excusable. She nodded through her tears.

Isipho: ndiyaxolisa nam for zonke izinto ezimbi endizenzileyo (i apologize too for the bad things I have done. )

Muller: so now can we just be a family.

Isipho: ndicinga kuzoba'betere ba singandibani- (I think it would be better if we just don't meet-)

Issy: meet. There's too much hurt and maybe someday we will. But for now, we all need time apart.

Muller sighed. I guess some things are just better left like that. Even though the sisterhood is forever broken I'm happy they apologized and all of this will be behind us and they may not spend time together or as a family but now we're being civil. That's good. Later on that day, the family went back home and I was in my room watching some TV when I heard my door being knocked on.

Me: come in.

Muller came in and I knew this was the talk.  
Give me strength Jesus.

Muller: so when did it happen?

Me: what?

I played lost in hopes of him dropping it. I know he hates it when people play dumb, maybe then he'll leave it? I just don't want to talk about it.

Muller: don't get on my nerves.

Me: uhm... on the 24th.

Muller: condom?

Me:... yes.



I looked down. I can't tell him we fucked raw. I'm clean anyway. I think he knew I was lying because he looked at me with so much anger. I knew I had to tell the truth.

Me: I got tested and I'm clean, I'm not even pregnant. I'm sorry.

Muller: \*sighs\* I just don't know anymore Lelona. I'm trying, and I just don't know. Do you want to be a housewife with kids? Or die because of Aids?

Me: I-

Muller: I get it. You want to waste all the money we spent in your studies to be a housewife for him, because he's rich. Be different man Lelona! There are so many girls who lose their lives being reckless like you!

Me: I'm really sorry. It won't happen again.

Muller: "it won't happen again" \*chuckles angrily\* you too are practically so in love even a blind person could sense it and you're telling me it won't happen again.

Me: I'm sorry. But Khazimla. I'm not a child anymore. I'm 19 turning 20 next year. I can't be a baby forever. You have to accept it.

He sighed because he knew I was right. I smiled weakly and got up to give him a hug. Even though he's upset I know he won't hurt me. This guy is practically my father. He has been through hell with me. And I understand how he feels but now I'm older and he has to let me grow up.

Me: I'm growing up and you have to accept it.

[02/18, 07:34] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 14

.

.

× 3 YEARS LATER ×

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

I fixed my dress getting ready for the big day ahead. I smiled looking into my mirror. I squealed when I saw my big brother Muller. I ran to give him a hug with tears threatening to fall but I didn't want to ruin my makeup.

Me: you came!

Muller: I wouldn't miss it for the world.

I looked at him with sad eyes. He had moved to his own place and it was hard for me because I was so used to having him around wherever I went but I knew he couldn't live with Issy it was a man thing it made him feel inferior. He is now living with Jayde and their 2 year old son, Yanga'inkosi. I love that he named him after King. The reason I was surprised he came was because he went to a heist thing in Durban and I didn't think he would come and support me today.

Muller: how do you feel?

Me: nervous.

Muller: you'll be okay. I'm proud of you little sister.

Me: I know. Through all the pain we went through and finally it's happening.

Muller: just like King would've wanted.

Me: I'm graduating for the three of us.

My brothers never had the chance for varsity because of financial problems and I think that's why they were so hard on me to graduate. It meant so much to them that I did it for them. I was the first to graduate in my family.

Me: so after the ceremony-

Muller: we're all meeting at Rellik's house for the party.

Me: I'm so happy to be done with school! And I have a new internship, my life is looking good.

Muller: you deserve all of it.

Me: thank you. You're going to make me cry.

Muller: let me leave \*laughs\*

Me: thank you for coming.

Muller: see you there kid.

I nodded. He walked out and I took tissues to wipe my tears. It's been 3 years and all I can say is, my life has been good. Yes there were some hiccups but it hasn't been too much. Me and Xavier are still going strong. We went testing together and he was clean, and since I was graduating I was off the injection 4 months ago. He really wanted a kid, especially a girl. I wanted to work but he promised that it wouldn't come in between my work. He always says he wants a kid just like me. And I want one just like him. It wasn't a too revealing dress but it wasn't too hiding too. My boobs were hidden by my weave. I took my candy bar and started eating it because I was hungry, after eating that it's like I was inviting food more. I went downstairs and got myself the spicy chicken lickin wings and dipped them in chocolate. I moaned at how delicious they were. After eating, Issy walked in

while I was clearing the table.

Issy: you're ready?

Me: yes.

Issy: I'm so proud of you, Lona. To pass with such good marks. It's amazing to watch you grow each and every day. From being 19 to seeing you turn into a 22 year old beautiful lady. \*cries\* it amazes me every time.

Me: thank you \*cries\* I love you, mom.

Issy: I love you too, sweetie.

We shared a long hug, until we both pulled apart and started laughing.

Issy: Now let's go before you become late.

.

.  
-- RELLIK'S POV --

.  
.  
I asked Fifi to handle the whole house because I would end up shooting people if things don't go my way. I want my wife to be happy and things right now at this party look slow and if they don't turn out good I will tear things up.

Fifi: how is she?

Me: excited for everything.

Fifi: of course she is. \*laughs\* she must be more happy about the internship.

Me: yes. But I'm more excited about her off varsity meaning more time to spend with me  
\*smirks\*

Fifi: you two promised me a baby after she



graduates.

Me: \*laughs\* she's off the injection so we'll just have to wait.

I couldn't even describe the smile on Fifi's face. She was really excited about this, probably more than us. I was more nervous than anything. Today I was going to do something I should've done a long time ago.

Ghost: Rellik!

I looked at him, and he motioned for me to come closer to him.

Ghost: so do you have it?

Me: yes.

Ghost: her size?

Me: yes. \*sighs\*

Ghost: you're not having second thoughts now are you? \*laughs\*

Me: no. Never.

Ghost: it's good seeing you grow up kid. Never in a million years did I see you as the marriage type, but i know how she makes you feel. And you want her off the market

Me: no-one can have her but me. \*laughs\*

Noelle: Uncle Xavier!

Noelle ran to me with his arms wide open. I laughed and picked him up. She was Scrappy and Nella's daughter. She was also me and Lona's goddaughter. She was turning 3 in a few months and boy was she excited about that. She definitely has her mother's talkative personality.

Me: hey kiddo. Where are your parents?

Right on cue Scrappy and Nella walked in being lovey dovey. Last time I checked they were not on good terms but I guess nobody knows what happens in a relationship, except those 2 people and the walls in their rooms.

Nella: we better get going or else we'll be late guys!

~~

Everyone was here dancing and I was dancing with my ever beautiful wife Lona. Her back was facing me, I held her waist and laid my head on her shoulder while moving side to side to Major- This is why I love you. She was eating some braai meat and she said she wouldn't stop even if I asked her to dance.

Me: I'm proud of you baby.

Lona: thank you, baby. I love you.

Me: I love you too

Lona: it's crazy that we lasted for 4 years.

Me: why is it hard to believe? \*laughs\*

Lona: a girl like me taming the bad boy every girl wanted to have.

Me: I'm happy it was you. The happiness you give me is undeniable and without you I'd probably be heartless.

She sniffed, and I looked at her. She was really crying. I knew my baby was a crybaby just not this much. I chuckled, she turned around making us stop dancing.

Lona: that was so sweet.

Nella: Lona! Come open up presents!

I glared at her. Can't she see we're having a moment here.

Nella: calm down Rellik it's not like you two were fucking.

I heard laughs. They keep entertaining her smart mouth. I shook my head chuckling. That girl has no filter. I saw Muller hanging out with Yanga so I figured this was the chance to do it. I know i'm a disrespectful guy but I think Muller would like it if I asked for his sister's hand in marriage because their father is a spineless punk. Yanga looked at me and I smiled. I placed Lona's plate on the table and sat down. He walked towards me, I could see he was struggling it was too adorable. He tried climbing on my lap, so I helped him up and he wanted the meat. I shook my head laughing with Muller. He

was just like his aunt, crazy about food.

Me: we need to talk.

Muller: sounds serious.

Me: uhm... it is. Well... i-

Muller: \*chuckles\* you want to marry her.

Me: yeah. How did you-?

Muller: Scrappy can't keep a secret.

Me: that bastard \*laughs\* does she know?

Muller: not yet.

Me: do I have your blessings?

Muller: you have been making her very happy these last years. And I want what's best for her. You have given her the best so I agree. You can marry her.

Me: thanks man. Where's the rest of the family?

Muller: let's just say mom and aunt don't favour

Lona a lot.

Me: your dad?

Muller: mom pulls him by his nose.

Me: damn.

Muller: but at least she has us here.

I nodded and I knew he was about to say something. Yanga wanted to eat the bigger piece so I had to cut it little pieces. He thought I was taking it, he gave me the biggest glare ever. I smiled, giving him the tiny pieces.

Muller: I'm trusting my sister with you Xavier. She shouldn't be crying at all.

Me: I would never let a tear fall down her face.

Muller: I don't want her coming to me with a broken heart too. You feel like you're ready for marriage, do it. But don't break her heart and

except her to stay just because of marriage.

Me: I love her with every fibre in my body. I would never do that.

Muller: then you better start preparing your speech, boy.

He laughed picking up Yanga. Yanga had this small pout like he was about to cry, Muller glared at me and he didn't cry but just laid his head on his shoulder. I loved their father son relationship. All my friends have kids except for me, but I refused to cheat on Lona and have kids without her. She would never forgive me. We went inside, and I chuckled at Cardo bothering Lona. Cardo dropped out of varsity a year ago, he was now a full time gangster by hijacking cars, reinventing them and selling them to the highest bidder. Although Lona was a bit disappointed he won't graduate with her, she had to support his decision regardless.



Dylan went to Lona and gave her a cupcake. She smiled and picked him up. I don't know why she still treats that child like a baby. But I understand that's the first child she knew. Now Scrappy has a kid, Muller has a kid. All that's left is us. I know she wanted to work first but I want a kid fast.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

Rellik came to me and I finished the cupcake.

Dylan: why is your tummy big and hard. It wasn't like this \*giggles\*

Me: what?!

Dylan: \*chuckles\* or you're becoming fat.

I placed him down offended. He frowned and hugged my legs. Rellik then finally reached us. He wiped my tears, because I was offended that Dylan called me fat. No way I'm pregnant as of yet. The doctor said after the injection it may take a lot of time to get pregnant probably a year or so.

Rellik: what's wrong?

Me: just happy tears.

I smiled through my lie. Dylan went back to his father and mother. I'm happy all my friends are here so it was a good day for me. Rellik took a glass and lightly smacked it with a fork grading everyone's attention and the music was turned off.

Rellik: okay, we're here to celebrate the graduation of my beautiful girlfriend. Baby, I am so proud of you. The sleepless nights and the hard studying have given you the results that you deserve. From the moment I met you at your brother's house in the party, I knew there was something fascinating about you and I had to explore it. From the day we came back from East London and you agreed to be my girlfriend I loved you even more. Lelona, you stayed with me and held me down through my hard days. The coma, and endless trips some of you didn't approve. \*chuckles\* you changed me, you changed me to a point where I have become a pussy to my friends... \*laughs\*

Scrappy: pussy!

The whole room laughed, I joined in laughing as well wiping my tears.

Rellik: I love you so much, the moment I think of you without me, I turn crazy because you're one of a kind and I'm not willing to lose you.

He got on one knee making the whole room scream in happiness. I was shocked my eyes popped out crying like crazy. I was speechless.

Rellik: I love you, and I want you to have the same surname as me. I never want to let you go.

He took the ring, and I screamed looking at it. My God, it was so beautiful!

Rellik: will you marry me?

I nodded with no words coming out crying hysterically. He chuckled placing the ring on my

engagement finger. As soon as he got up, I hugged him. I am going to be marrying the love of my life.

~~

We were all celebrating at his club having fun. My graduation party and I got engaged today. Wow, what a life.

Scrappy: good luck being stuck with this fool forever \*laughs\*

Me: I don't mind.

I chuckled giving a grinning Xavier a kiss. I couldn't stop staring at my ring.

Scrappy: Who knew you would be stuck together for these years? wow! He did a good job killing Omar for you-

He quickly kept shut, and I glared at Xavier. He did what! ?

[02/18, 07:35] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 15

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I glared at Scrappy, he always did have a loose mouth when he was drunk. Nella looked at us shocked. I couldn't bare looking at Lona and seeing her sad eyes, I knew Omar still held a special place in her heart because he was the first boyfriend she had and he died while they

were on good terms. She roughly removed my hand and walked out the club. I sighed gulping all the Hennessy shot in my mouth.

Me: you better fucking pray she forgives me.

I said to Scrappy in anger. I ran after Lona and I sighed when I saw she was already outside with tears, her phone was on that let me know she called an Uber.

Me: Lona please-

Lona: don't you dare fucking talk to me!

My jaws furrowed in anger, people were looking at us chuckling. She needed to show me at least a bit of respect before I become a joke to these streets.

Me: lelona get back in that club.

Lona: uyanya (you're shitting)

Me: we will talk like proper adults in my office.  
Get back in that fucking club right now!

Lona: fuck you Rellik! I knew you were bad I just didn't know you would do this! An innocent person! Why?!

Me: lelona I'm not repeating myself.

The Uber parked next to us since it was the only parking space left.

Lona: I can't believe you're this evil.

She took off her ring and that's when I started panicking. She threw it at me and got in the Uber. I picked it up and before I could run to her



she was already gone with the Uber.

Me: fuck!

I didn't care about the stares. I stormed inside angrily, how could my own best friend snitch me out! To my soon to be wife! He knows how much she means to me!

Scrappy: I'm so sorry bruh. It just came out, I don't even know what happened-

Before he could even proceed I threw the first punch. Making us fight in the club. Everyone's attention was on us. I could mostly hear Nella screaming. When the fight was officially broken off, I could see I did him bad, and I knew he had good jabs too, I won't lie at all.

Me: you better fucking pray she doesn't leave me because your life will be hell with your fucking loose mouth.

I pushed the guy holding me. Then I rushed out the club. When I was at Issy's crib she told me Lona specifically told her I shouldn't go to her, but issy likes me as her son in law so she let me go upstairs. I knocked on her door, I heard her light "come in" I knew she was crying and it broke me that I was the reason for that. But I don't regret what I did because then I wouldn't have had her. I could see a bit of concern on her face because I was bruised but her face went back to anger quick.

Me: Lelona please.

She sat up and glared at me, but I wasn't giving up at all. She screamed throwing her pillow at me.

Lona: leave! I fucking hate you for making me feel the blood on my hands. How could you!? I could forgive the Kayla part but Omar!? You knew how much he meant to me! He was sanity and my first boyfriend and first kiss. You just had to kill him because you're a selfish bastard and I deserve better.

Me: you don't mean that. We love each other.

Lona: I'm not staying with someone who murders people to get what they want.

Me: it happened years ago!

Lona: it doesn't matter! You can't kill people to get what you want! That's fucking wrong.

Me: lelona you knew I was a gangster from the start. You think we just sit all day and play

chess!?

Lona: it doesn't mean innocent people should die!

Me: I couldn't let you pass me by. I just couldn't. I love you from the moment I laid eyes on you.

Lona: leave. \*cries\*

Me: Lelona-

Lona: just please give me space. Leave.

I sighed and I walked out. Issy offered me coffee and I was happy she was more calm than her daughter. After hours of us talking on how I can charm Lona back, she agreed I could sleepover just no sex. I went back to Lona's room. She was asleep and my heart broke once I noticed her face was puffy meaning she was crying. I took off my clothes and got in behind her spooning her. I kissed the back of her neck. She got closer to me, and I smiled. I knew she

loved me way too much to let this damage us.  
My phone vibrated on my sideboard but I  
ignored it and drifted off to lala land

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I got off Rellik to brush my teeth and face and I  
did look hideous. I went back to the room, his  
phone vibrated and a part of me wanted to look  
at those messages because I feel like I don't  
know him anymore. I didn't know the password  
so I slid down the notifications and I saw K9's  
text and Wiz's text.

K9 : send 80 girls to Congo that's quick

money for the crew.

Wiz : it doesn't look like he'll talk. Let's end him

My heart fell into my stomach and I felt him looking at me. I quickly placed his phone down, he tried hugging me but I moved back.

Me: don't. Please.

I was scared of him the tears fell down. He was into human trafficking. I don't even know the guy in front of me. I knew he was a gangster but I didn't know he sold innocent girls from money. I felt like crying. Who have I been in love with? Was I really going to marry this monster?

Me: please leave, we're done. For good.

Rellik: you don't mean that.

He tried stepping closer, I screamed scared of him. Issy quickly came in the room

Issy: what's going on?

Me: I want him gone.

Rellik: baby, you know I would never hurt you. Especially not on purpose.

Me: what are you? I never want to see you again!

Issy: Lelona.

Me: you're a murderer and not only that you sell girls, innocent girls! Just for money. I never knew I was this blind. Please leave.

Rellik: Lelona-

me: leave! !!

Issy: I think it's best you give her some space.

~~

Most of the weeks I spent in my room crying and just feeling down. I can't believe he really is in human trafficking and he's killing people. I knew he was a gangster I just didn't know innocent girls suffered because of it. Was my ring bought with that dirty money? It pained me more thinking about it. What if it was my sister? My friend? My cousin? Niece? It shouldn't happen to anyone. I cried even more checking the pregnancy test. I was really pregnant! I was giving a monster another innocent soul to take. I could never let that happen. I couldn't call Nella because she won't agree with my decision. Muller would kill me if I kill his niece or nephew. No way in hell I'm calling Rellik. I can't call Cardo too, Issy will probably slap me. If I have this baby with Rellik we'll be tied forever and I don't want that. I made it perfectly clear to him I was done. And he said let's take a break then continue where we left off. Break my ass, I'm



done with that heartless monster. I called Brandon because he can help.

Brandy: bougie bitch!

Me: I need your help \*sniffs\*

Brandy: what is it? Anything.

Me: I want you to come with me to get an abortion.

Brandy: what!?

Me: don't judge me just please help me.

I can focus on my career after this because clearly love isn't in my good list. He sighed and I could tell he was really thinking about it.

Brandy: are you sure? I mean you love that sexy hunk of yours.

Me: he's not mine anymore.

Brandy: don't tell me you cheated and had another man's baby

Me: brandy!?

Brandy: I had to know?

Me: I'll leave the house unlocked.

Brandy: aight girliwe.

I hung up and wiped my tears. I know this will hurt but I was only 2 months because that's what 8 weeks mean right? I can always have another baby with my future husband who isn't Rellik. I got dressed in maroon velvet Adidas tracksuit with black Nike sneakers. I took my chanel handbag that had my phone and everything. Brandy really came and as soon as he saw me he attacked me with a hug.

Brandy: you're really doing this?

Me: yes.

Brandy: I'll be there supporting you, doll face.

I nodded and we drove off there in his car. On the way there Sam Smith was playing and the atmosphere was just sad. Brandon was texting a lot on his phone. I hope he doesn't crash this car. When we arrived at the place. I sighed with my palms sweating. I hope God forgives me for this.

Brandy: go in, I have to make a quick call. I'll be right there

I nodded and went inside. After signing up, I was given pills, I stared at them for hadn't long time.

Nurse: it's okay if you're changing your mind. You're entitled to.

Me: can I drink them on my own time? I feel I need an hour before I drink them. Just to apologize to God.

Nurse: you can go sit sweetie. I'll attend other patients.

I nodded and I was happy she was a nice nurse those are rare to find. I sat down looking at the pills I was still in the waiting chairs. Should I drink them? I could always move and he'll never know about my pregnancy. I heard a door being banged, when I looked up. There Rellik was looking so angry, I thought he was going to kill me. He pulled me roughly making the pills fall off my hand. The cup of water I was given was now on the floor.

Nurse: sir! You can't just come in here and-

He pointed a gun at her making my cry silently. He pulled me out the place. Brandon outside had this look of guilt on him. I shouldn't have trusted him. I don't even know how he has Rellik's number.

Brandy: you were going to regret this Lona. I couldn't do that to you.

I rolled my eyes and pushed Rellik off me. His friends, Wiz, Scrappy, K9 & Shooter looked at me, he was every angry and they thought I was provoking him.

Rellik: you were going to kill my child, lelona!

Me: I want nothing to do with you!

Rellik: I don't give a fuck then! But my child will be born then you can do what ever the fuck you want.

I knew he would tie me up with this baby. He wanted us stuck forever and I hated that. I was going to Brandy's car, but he pulled me back.

Rellik: you're riding with me.

He opened the door, I rolled my eyes. He closed it and once he got in. I could sense by his actions he was still raging with anger.

Rellik: I never knew you as that type.

Me: Rellik please I'm tired.

Rellik: I'm tired of fighting with you too. Lelona

you know how much a baby would mean to me. Why would you do that to me?

Me: I'm just tired. It's like I don't even know you. Human trafficking is a big thing. I knew you were a gangster I just thought you were involved in drugs only. \*cries\* my conscience just won't let me allow this to happen.

Rellik: baby that's why I didn't involve you in my businesses because I know how fragile you are. Seeing you cry makes my heart hurt. But baby, the gang needs the money. I can't run the gang based on my fiancé's conscience. That will leave us bankrupt! Please just love me for me and not get involved in my business. My phone is off limits you know that.

I wanted to be mad at him, I really did but him calling me baby and he was looking good. I just couldn't. I looked out the window. I faced forward once I heard gunshots. I wailed when I

saw Brandon's car being shot and it falling off the road and going into flames.

Rellik: roll your seat down now!

Me: what's going on? \*cries\*

Rellik: lelona man!!!

I quickly rolled my seat making me look like i am laying on a bed. I watched him take out his gun, I held my mouth trying to tone down my screams. What is going on!?

[02/18, 07:36] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 16

.

.



-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I watched him start shooting while the car was speeding off. He turned while the car was fast, that made me scream. I think that worried him more because he looked at me but his eyes were still cold with anger.

Rellik: open the dashboard and put the headsets on!

Me: Xavier!

Rellik: lelona i am trying to save the both of us here and I don't need to worry about you while shooting!

He was shouting and I quickly took the headsets and placed them on my ears. My tears

fell looking at the massacre in front of my eyes. Thank God the windows were bullet proof. I laid back down and put my seat belt on. After 30 minutes of the whole shooting. The car came to a stop. It felt like I was in a video game, this is why I needed to do the abortion. I can't raise a child in a life like this. He got out. I got up and looked at him arguing with his friends. I couldn't hear what he was saying because the headsets were soundproof. All I heard was silence. I gasped when he slapped K9, and K9 let him! How can he be so disrespectful to people his age!? I didn't want to get involved I was even having a bit of pain cramps. I just wanted to lay down. He came back and he could see something was wrong with me.

Rellik: you're okay?

Me: Brandon?

Rellil: he has a bit of burns but he'll survive

I breathed in relief. I didn't want him dead even though I was still angry at him. He basically ruined my trust.

Me: rellik.

Rellik: baby you know how I feel about that word.

Me: stop calling me baby! How did this happen? What's going on?

Rellik: you'll always be my baby njena.

I folded my arms and looked away. I needed to be with Brandon. I couldn't leave him alone, and Rellik was driving away.

Me: I need to be with Brandon!

Rellik: he'll be fine. I can't put your life at risk

and my baby's life at risk by leaving you in the hospital.

Me: Rellik! My friend is hurt, I need to be there to support him.

Rellik: he'll understand

Me: what happened? Are you in a war?

Rellik: baby-

Me: and don't you dare lie to me.

Rellik: K9 is having an affair with this Durban dude's girlfriend. He found out and he basically wants us all dead.

Me: why you? You didn't fuck her. Or did you?

Rellik: don't do that.

Me: do what? You're not answering the question.

Rellik: you know your pussy is the only place that's for me

I looked away, feeling my cheeks heat up. I hate that he still has an affect on me. He chuckled and I rolled my eyes.

Rellik: he knows if i find out he killed K9 I'll kill him so he tried killing all the birds with one stone. Not knowing that he just made a big enemy out of me.

Me: did you have to slap K9 though?

Rellik: yes so he can know what he did is fucked up. You could've been very hurt. I can't lose you or our baby. I'll kill him myself. There's plenty of girls in Cape Town and he choose her! He deserved more than a slap in the face.

Me: you can't choose who you love.

Rellik: it's not love it's lust.

I fixed my seat and placed the headsets back to the dashboard. The pain came back again abd

this time I screamed. He looked at me worried almost hitting the car in front of him.

Rellik: I'm taking you to the hospital \*worried\*

I didn't even have the energy to fight back. I just nodded fighting back the tears. I was in a lot of pain.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

Doc: the baby is fine. You're just under a lot of stress which makes the baby be in pain. As you can hear the heartbeat is faint because of the stress you're in. You need to calm down, or you'll lose the baby Miss Daniel.

Lona was stuck on the little screen looking at the fetus. She had tears in her eyes. I nodded at the doctor because I knew she wasn't going to respond.

Doc: I'll write up the prescription for her.

I nodded and she walked out after cleaning Lona up. She was not showing yet but I knew I would be happy when she was

Me: you won't kill my child Lelona.

She rolled her eyes and looked away. I held her face roughly and made her look at me

Me: do we understand each other!? If you do I

will you kill then kill myself and we'll play happy family in hell.

Lona: you're crazy.

Me: crazy in love with you.

I kissed her but she wasn't responding. I wormed my hand inside her t-shirt and brushed her skin softly making her moan and kiss me back. I smirked continuing to kiss her back.

~~

After getting the pills from clicks we went to my house.

Lona: you need to take me back home.

Me: you're gonna be with me for a few hours until K9 sorts his mess out.

Lona: I guess it's another war.

Me: I'll make sure it doesn't lead to that.



Lona: mhm.

I sighed because I thought after the kiss she would forgive me. But nope, she was still angry. She walked upstairs to my room and immediately got out of her tracksuit and was only in her t-shirt then got under the covers.

Me: baby please tell me what can I do to save us. I'll do anything. I can't bare losing you

She turned to my side, and looked at me. I laid on my side facing her. I was on top of the covers.

Lona: I want the truth. What exactly do you do

Me: Lelona.

Lona: I need to know what type of monster's

child I'm carrying.

Me: don't say that.

Lona: talk rellik.

Me: we sell drugs, mix them and distribute them. We steal cars, reinvent them and sell them. We do heists. We are also involved in human trafficking and selling guns to other people in other countries. We do almost everything that has cash we do it.

She wiped her tears. This is why I never wanted her to know because she'll be fragile and think about all the bad shit. But in this world it's fuck it. Eat or get eaten. If I wasn't a gangster maybe someone else was going to be doing what I was doing so it's really not much of a big deal. It would happen with or without me.

Lona: the clubs are all a front.

Me: we clean the money that way.

Lona: money laundering too. \*sighs\* I could end up being a single parent.

Me: Lona you were perfectly fine with me being a gangster. What happened?

Lona: I wasn't perfectly fine with it. I just tolerated it. It was before a child was brought into this.

Me: lelona we are not killing our child no matter what you say.

She sighed and looked at the ceiling. I looked at her. She was so beautiful and I knew pregnancy was gonna make her more beautiful.

Lona: I'm just scared. I can't raise a baby by myself. I can't bring a baby to this lifestyle Rellik it's too dangerous. You're the leader now meaning more enemies. The last time you went

into war we lost King. I can't bring a child into this.

Me: baby, I'll be there every step of the way with you. I promise nothing will happen between you and our child. I promise, they'll have to kill me first and that's impossible.

She kept quiet and I knew we weren't on bad terms anymore because her sigh wasn't the annoyed one. Just the tired one

Lona: why did you do it?

Me: lelona.

Lona: you have to answer me.

Me: stress is not good for the baby.

Lona: I need to know.

Me: I already told you. I just had to have you, I couldn't let another guy touch you and love you

while you're mine. I knew if Omar continued loving you like that I would never have a chance.

She wiped her tears, I knew Omar was a touchy subject for her. But that was years ago. She needs to focus on us. Not her dead ex.

Lona: who else-?

Me: lelona. ..

Lona: who else did you kill because of me?  
Besides Kayla and Omar.

Me: zikhona. Khanyi and Nia.

I couldn't tell her about the threesome or killing them both. It would only add petrol to a big fire. She screamed throwing her head on the pillow. She let out a small cry. I moved closer to her hugging her, she cried in my arms. Maybe I

shouldn't have told her.

Lona: why do you have to kill them!? Can't you just hit them then let them go? Their blood is on my hands.

Me: lelona did you kill people?

Lona: no, but-

Me: then there's no blood on your hands.

Lona: Rellik.

Me: enough about this discussion you're upsetting yourself and my child. Get some sleep

I kissed her forehead I know Lona says one thing but her body language says another which means she still loves me a lot. After hearing her light snores. I gently removed her and I opened my drawer for the ring. Once I found it i

placed it back on her finger. I went to my study and called K9 he needs to fix his mess before I fuck him up again. He let his dick think for him and now the gang is in it too.

Me: you fixed it?

K9: I'm packing for the trip.

Me: what are you gong to do?

K9: what do you mean? I'll kill him

I sighed, how stupid can one be? Especially a doctor.

Me: that will just create war idiot!

K9: well smart-ass what do you suggest we do!?

Me: call up a meeting with him. We'll go with you and call up a truce

K9: if someone slept with Lona would you agree to agree truce?

Me: fuck no!

K9: then he's not going to agree.

Me: he's not me.

K9: that's his baby mama I fucked. Lona is your baby mama. Same situation.

Me: she's my fiancé. Don't make me angry, K9 you don't want trouble with me.

K9: \*sighs\* I don't think a meeting will help.

Me: it's worth a try then if not we'll attack.

K9: got it.

Me: how's Brandon?

K9: I left him still being treated. Send someone to check on him.

Me: moja (sharp)



I hung up. And I sat on the office chair. Since I have taken over the gang has made more money but it's hard washing the money so it was piling up in our warehouse and we have a higher risk of being caught. We needed it washed. I was thinking of opening another club or restaurant. I heard a phone ringing and I knew it was in my room. I rushed there and Lona was already answering her phone with a sleeping voice. I didn't want her to wake up yet. Then she'll go back to stressing.

Lona: Cardo... I'm at Rellik's house... yeah bring him too... love you too bro.

She hung up and that's when she noticed me standing there. I could see her eyes were puffy and her face was swollen.

Me: I don't like seeing you like this.

Lona: stop making me like this.

Me: baby, I promise I won't hurt anyone anymore okay.

Lona: you'll stop human trafficking?

Me: lelona I can't just do that. We'll end up losing a lot of money.

She sighed and looked down at her ring. She fixed it in her finger, I smiled because she wasn't taking it off.

Lona: I hate how much I love you. It makes me go crazy accepting things that I shouldn't and turn into a person I'm not. Especially when we're fighting.

Me: I love you too

I walked closer to her then I laid on top of her kissing her. I need to get another phone for my gang activities because I can't lose a lot of money, and I can't risk her seeing my texts all the time. I'm doing this so we can maintain the lifestyle we already have.

[02/18, 07:37] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER  
~

SEASON 2

INSERT 17

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

a few days past, 2 week to be more exact,  
Brandon was okay but still in the hospital. And  
today I was starting my internship at a huge PR

company. I didn't like that I was pregnant because they would look down at me but I was sure I would work hard to prove myself. I wanted to look professional without giving it away that I was pregnant. Me and Xavier agreed that no one will know until I start showing, only his friends know. I was wearing my red suit with my white then strapped top, with gold stilettos. I didn't want to showcase my small bump. I looked at the mirror smiling a bit.

Me: mommy just needs one day without sickness baby, just one.

I brushed my stomach. Morning sickness has been a bitch and I needed a break. It started last week and I wish it would end already, I could control my cravings a bit it's the morning sickness that I can't. I went downstairs because I was still staying with Issy. Rellik was on a trip

to Durban to fix K9's mess. My phone rang and it was Rellik.

Me: baby.

Rellik: you're good?

Me: no sickness today.

Rellik: told you my boy could give you a break

Me: it's a girl so don't fuss.

Rellik: what's wrong with a boy? \*laughs\*

Me: have you seen women pregnant with boys?  
They become ugly. \*chuckles\*

Rellik: that could never happen to you.

Me: mhm \*blushes\* when are you coming back?

Rellik: today. I just called to say good luck on your first day.

Me: thank you my love.

Rellik: and wear your ring. I don't want to hurt

these little preppy boys.

I couldn't help but laugh. I was still uncomfortable with him killing people for me, but after a long talk with Nella. She made me see a new side to it, even though murder is still very much inexcusable, and if he does it again he can forget me marrying him.

Me: I always wear my ring.

Rellik: and I have new 3 boys for you.

Me: Rellik. ... \*whines\*

Rellik: I love you. I just want you to be safe.

Me: I love you too. \*sighs\*

We both hung up. I didn't want to be the only person with 5 bodyguards at work. I already have 2, since finding out I was pregnant. He

was more protective than ever! I have guys following me everywhere. I have a tracker in my body that was installed and he calls all the time. I got in my car, and just like usual 2 cars followed after me. I sighed thinking about how crazy this is. It's like I'm the first lady of this country and I'm just a mere normal girl. Arriving at work, I had to beg the bodyguards not to get in and I'll alert them when something is wrong. Finally they agreed and I went inside.

~~

I was assigned to be mentored by this guy. He was cute, but not cute like my baby. Rellik was just his own kind. He was the hood sexy that made girls loose their minds. And don't get me started on his body, I'm waiting for him to come back so he can dick me down. I heard someone clearing their throat. I looked at Mason embarrassed I was not listening and thinking about my man.

Me: sorry

Mason: it's okay. He must be a good guy for you to think about him daily.

Me: he is \*smiles\*

Mason: good thing he put a ring on it...

Me: \*chuckles\* it is.

Mason: because I'm sure I would've gave him some real competition.

I paused and looked at me surprised he was flirting with me. I looked at my ring, and smiled shaking my head. This guy clearly doesn't know Rellik.

Me: I doubt it.

Mason: \*chuckles\* really?



I was sitting in the small table, and he was standing. He stood behind me and breathed on the back of my ear. And I just froze scared because we were the only ones here. I quickly pushed him before he could whisper anything dirty.

Me: get off me. I will lay a charge of sexual haharassment.

Mason: an intern on the most paid employee? My father owns this place. What fantasy life do you live, beautiful? Get some done, I'll check on you in a few.

He bent down, to kiss me and I moved my head. I he roughly touched my face, and kissed my neck. I cried removing him.

?: Mason. Out!

He chuckled looking at the girl, then he left. I was still in tears. She came and bent next to me.

?: I'm Melissa. I'm so sorry, my brother can get a little violent sometimes. He just hates people saying no. Please don't cry, I'm so sorry.

She gave me a tissue and I wiped my tears. Why did he have to work with me!?

Mel: our father owns the company and I guess he thinks he can do what ever he wants. He just doesn't learn! He has been doing this since forever and I always tell papa he needs help, he's sick! The company will end up in drains if he lets him carry on like this.

I looked at her, she was just airing her family personal business out there with no stop.

Mel: but what did I expect? They both are sexist. To them women are just incubators! Ugh, have you ever wished you were born in another family?

I just looked at her. She didn't even stop talking.

Mel: I wish so. But can you do me a favour?

I nodded, wiping my tears. She smiled at my ring, I knew it had that much affect on women.

Mel: don't lay at charge.

I looked at the her shocked, she just said she hates her family. Or was that just an act for me to feel bad?

Mel: I know! He should be punished but he's just growing. He needs some time out. How about I just change you to someone else?

Me: please.

Mel: thank you! I know you'll have a permanent spot in this company .

She smiled walking out. I just finished my work through the tears. I don't want trouble anyway. I just want a job where I'm not depended on anyone. I want to have my own money.

~~

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I brushed her hair as she slept. After work she immediately fell asleep. I knew something was wrong because I know her like the back of my hand, but she assured me it's nothing. The bodyguards said she seemed fine to them. as I was brushing her hair, I noticed red marks on her face, her chin. Like a mark that could vanish after one day. I gently removed her, and examined it angrily. If there was someone who touched her, I swear I'll kill them with my own bare hands. I gently shook her, but I think it came off hard because she woke up looking at me with scared eyes. Then she calmed down when she saw it was me.

Lona: what's wrong, baby?

Me: what's on your chin?

Lona: what? \*confused\*

Me: lelona I didn't stutter.

Lona: nothing.

Me: why is there red marks on your chin. Who touched you?

Lona: \*sighs\* Xavier please let it go.

I looked at her in anger. It took everything in me not to curse at her, or slap her awake because clearly she's still asleep. I stood up about paced up and down to calm down.

Me: let it go? Let it go!?

Lona: you're overreacting. It wasn't that serious . And his sister apologised it's all good.

I looked at her, so it's a he that touched her. She looked down, playing with her hands. I sat back down and looked at her trying to calm down because I was ready to kill that motherfucker even though I don't know his name.

Me: who is it?

Lona: Xavier...

Me: don't you dare fucking protect him! Who is it!?

Lona: \*sniffs\* it's a guy named Mason at work.

After the meeting with the Durban guy Terror, we finally came to a truce and I come back to my fiancé being bruised. I am clearly being tested.

Me: you're resigning.

Lona: what!?! No!

Me: tone your voice down. I said it, and it's the final word.

Lona: Xavier this is exactly why I didn't want to tell you! You'll overreact and it's quite unnecessary because I need this job.

Me: need it for what? How much do they pay you? I'll double it every month. There you have it, you don't need the job.

She looked at me, she was annoyed that she covered herself with the covers. I knew she was crying, it's unfair how she uses tears to get what she wants because she knows I won't say no to her tears. But I knew I also had an advantage to her. I got under the covers and she turned away from me. I smiled, I moved closer spooning her. I kissed her neck.



Lona: you don't understand. \*sniffs\* I want to have some type of independence I can't allow people to take care of me forever.

Me: make me understand.

I continued kissing her neck, biting it lightly, creating hickeys. I wormed my hand inside her lace panties and started doing my magic. She moaned and started turning around kissing me while playing with my dick. But it was hard for her to concentrate when my middle finger went in her pussy.

Lona: babyyyy \*moans\*

Me: make me understand.

I got on top, her leg went up to my shoulder and

I entered into her slowly. She started moaning matching my rhythm. Her biting her lip and looking at me, just made me want to fuck her more. I placed her second leg up, and started going in fast and rough. She squealed trying to make me go slow. I smirked because I could see she was really enjoying this just like me.

Me: you're quitting...! You're... going to leave that job Lelona.

I went faster and bent lower testing her flexibility and bit her nipple going slower she screamed nodding.

Me: I want to hear your voice, baby.

Lona: ye- AHHH

Before she could finish her yes, I went harder making her scream. I smiled biting my lip. Her legs shook indicating she was going to cum, I took my dick out and she glared at me. I couldn't help but chuckle.

Me: you're leaving that work tomorrow Lelona.

Lona: okay, Xavier. Finish what you started.  
\*whines\*

Me: \*chuckles\* say please daddy.

Lona: in your dreams-AHH

I rammed into her without notice she screamed, I chuckled then went fast, I groaned because I felt the urge to cum. She came, and I followed right after her groaning loudly as I came inside of her. The best warm place for me, is definitely her pussy. My phone rang, and I kissed her forehead. Taking it, it was K9. Since he was

calling from my normal phone I knew it might be important. Lona cuddled next to me as I answered the call drawing nonvisible shapes on her back.

Me: this better better important.

K9: I was thinking we open a surgery and wash the money that way.

I looked at Lona hoping she didn't hear what he just said. Luckily for me she didn't.

Me: who will look after it?

K9: me. I'm the only doctor nigga.

I smirked at Lona getting on top of me, I smiled shaking my head, as she gave me a hand job. My dick didn't even take 30 seconds before it

become hard again, my breath just stopped. I tried stopping her because I was on the phone, she sat as it went inside of her, my mouth flew open no sound or breathing happening. She smirked at my expression.

Me: hmm. Mhm

K9: you're okay?

Me: uh..ahh yeah. Look we'll talk-

I moved her with me using my free hand. I sat straight on the bed with my legs on the floor. She was straddling me, she started moving her hips, I mumbled a "fuck" holding her still by her waist, because she was making me crazy. She giggled lightly at me, I was shaking my head.

K9: we're going to do it or no!?

Me: yes man, fuck!

I dropped the call and threw my phone on the bed, Lona kept riding me making me look at her in amazement. She was really good at this shit and I was lucky to be the only one experiencing this. She started bouncing then moving in circles and up and down. I matched her rhythm feeling my cum build up.

Me: yes baby.

I moaned, I knew I would burst soon so I held her waist still as I tried not cuming first. Once I let go of her waist, she started going fast this time.

Me: lelona! \*groans\*

I held her waist and just exploded inside her and she bit her lip cumming 5 seconds after. I looked at her having this innocent smile then hiding her face in my neck pecking it. I chuckled at the freak she has turned into. But I'm still killing this Mason dude, and she's not gonna work there.

[02/18, 07:37] Wdz: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~

SEASON 2

INSERT 18

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

After our steamy sessions we were taking a rest and I thought this would be the perfect

time to talk him out of killing Mason.

Me: baby.

Rellik: yeah?

Me: you can't kill Mason.

Rellik: he touched you lelona.

Me: I know but Melissa already promised me she'll change me to work with someone else

Rellik: who's that?

Me: his sister.

Rellik: she's just trying to save her brother's ass.

Me: you still can't kill him.

He didn't respond and I picked my head up from his chest and looked at me. He was staring into my eyes I could see that he had anger.



Me: baby you can't go around killing people.  
One day you will get caught.

Tears fell down. I knew once the waterworks  
fall he will fall into it. I don't want rellik in trouble  
because of me.

Rellik: I won't kill him on one condition

Me: anything.

Rellik: you quit

Me: that. I'm not doing!

Rellik: you're being selfish right now. All this  
stress is not good for the baby.

Me: you're the one stressing me! Do you have to  
control me all the time!

Rellik: I'm trying to protect you!

Me: I have a tracker in my body. I have 5  
bodyguards. I have 2 cars following me all the

time. I don't even have a moment to myself.  
You're doing too much.

Rellik: lelona you don't understand. I am the leader now. You need all of this protection I dare slip up once that's your life and our baby's life on the line.

Me: baby, you're already doing a lot you don't need to worry. But I like being independent, I like having my own money. I need just that. I didn't study all those years to be a housewife.

Rellik: there's nothing wrong with that. Fifi is a housewife

I glared at him, he's crazy if he thinks I'll be at housewife. I got up from the bed. And started going to the bathroom for a shower.

Rellik: you're not even listening to the reasons why.

Me: I won't be a housewife Rellik. We're done talking about it.

Rellik: then bye bye Mason.

Me: see who you'll marry.

Rellik: over that punk?

Me: no! Over you being a control freak... baby can't you at least wait until my internship is over or I look for another one? Don't kill him, everyone will suspect me.

Rellik: fine. I won't kill him, I'm getting you a new internship though.

.

~~

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

me, Wiz, Scrappy, and K9 waited for Mason outside the basement parking. He was the only one working late today and I needed to teach him a lesson. Nobody touches my wife and I let it slide. I should torture his sister too for manipulating Lona into not pressing charges. I searched about them and it's always a cycle like this and Melissa always make it seem like she's apologising for him but she's bad just like them. The research I did made me want to kill them and follow my name but I promised Lona I wouldn't kill them. I didn't promise I won't lay a hand on them. Finally he came down the lift. he was the only one, and I smirked looking at him. Scrappy passed me the blunt, I took 2 pulls and inhaled then blew out the smoke. I could see the worry on his face when he approached us

Me: Mason right?

Mason: who are you?

I didn't even wait for him to say anything else I punched him and beat him up senselessly and my rings were in my advantage. The boys chuckled when I broke Mason's nose when I stomped on his face.

Wiz: hella irongo le bruh \*laughs\* (this guy is evil)

We all started laughing, we were crazy high.

Me: if you ever think of being 2 centimetres close to my wife, I will kill you.

I continued beating him up and kicking him ignoring his cries until he became unconscious. Scrappy removed me from him because he

knew next thing I would do would kill him. I still can't quite control my anger. I looked at him smirking at the art I just created. Now he'll know my wife is off limits.

Me: Scrappy, check the cameras make sure nothing shows our faces.

Scrappy: \*chuckles\* got it.

K9: he has about 30 minutes to live. You might want to hurry

Scrappy came back 20 minutes later. And he said it was all done and they were off for an hour more. I took of the small useless phone which is covered with a cloth because I couldn't risk my fingerprints on it. I called the ambulance covering the speaker with the cloth so my voice sounds different and they won't trace it. After that call I hung up, dropped the phone and

smashed the phone with my leg than got in my car. We all speed off separately. I didn't want to go home just yet because I know Lona will see the blood but I went home anyway because I know she'll suspect something if I don't go home. I knew she was home because I saw her car outside.

Me: shit.

Lona has the key to my house, and I don't mind her visiting me all the time, but today I knew she was going to be angry as fuck about the Mason situation and I want to get her a new internship. I'll look for it myself if I have to. The guards 3 guards were outside with there guards while 2 were in the house. I nodded my head at them. Since I found out Lona has been pregnant I felt the need to protect her more. I just can't risk losing her at all, nor our baby. You never know

when someone will attack and I just want to keep them safer. Even if it means tracker installed in their bodies and lots of guards I will do it. I want to teach her how to shoot though now. I want her to carry a gun at all times in case the guards fail to protect her.

Lona: oh my God, Xavier!

She got up from the chair she was sitting in, she was doing her makeup. She's kind of obsessed with it now. I think she looks beautiful either way. She looked at the clothes i was wearing, I knew she was going to cry because she had glossy eyes. I was about to hug her but she backed off. She looked at my hands that were bloody like I was killing a goat. And they were in pain because of the rings I wore. She walked out.



Me: lelona.

Lona: don't even talk to me right now.

Me: baby..-

Lona: I'm serious! Say another word and you're going to get your ring back for good this time.

I sighed and sat down. I took the rings off feeling defeated that she's upset I was protecting her. Women are so confusing man. Was I supposed to let him go? He touched her and I would never let someone touch her and get away with it. She should be happy I didn't kill him. If she leaves me, then I am going to kill him because he messed up my most valuable relationship. I looked up when the door opened and she walked in with the medical aid kit. I smiled because she didn't leave.

Lona: don't even give me that. I am so

disappointed right now Rellik you don't understand. \*sniffs\*

I looked down feeling my heart beat slow in pain. There's nothing more painful then seeing your loved one in pain or crying because of you

Me: I didn't kill him. Just messed him up a bit. Can't I get props for that?

Lona: wow.

Me: what? Tell me what can I do lelona! I can't sit down and watch someone violate you!

She closed her mouth and continued taking care of my hands. I wanted her to say something we needed to talk about this. One thing for sure she's not going anywhere near there tomorrow. She might as well tell them she quits. After she was done she got up and didn't

even say anything. I took off my t-shirt with the sweatpants and sat on the bed. Finally she came up, she packed her makeup away and i watched her hoping she'll say something but nope. Nothing.

Me: lelona.

Lona: if you don't want to lose me and this baby. You better shut up.

I sighed because I was getting frustrated with this.

Me: lelona what did I promise you when we started dating?

Lona: Xavier...

Me: say it. I want you to say it.

Lona: I don't have time for this.

Me: didn't I promise to protect you through everything? Why should I change now?

Lona: I'm the one who's going to get dirty eyes at work! Not you, me!

Me: you're not going to be working there.

Lona: rellik I already told you I'm not going to be a housewife.

Me: look for a new internship. I will help you look if I have to.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

Time flew past like crazy and already I was 9 months pregnant. Xavier hasn't been home a lot of times because the trips to Russia were crazy. I think there was a problem though he would never tell me I just knew there was. Though him

and Muller were always gone, I was afraid that something would happen to them. the lobola and damages have been paid (that was a massive struggle since my dad was controlled by Isipho) and after the baby turns 1 we're going to get married. I have a new job now, and I am the PR to this famous bimbo model. I swear that girl does the craziest things and I always have to clean up after her. My phone rang and i quickly answered it.

Me: Xavier \*sniffs\*

Rellik: baby what's wrong? Is the baby okay?

Me: I miss you. You have been gone for a month now. You'll miss the baby's birth.

Rellik: baby I would never miss that \*chuckles\*

Me: stop laughing. I'm alone in my last pregnancy trimester.

The doctor said I'm due on February 24 and today was the 10th of February.

Rellik: what do you mean you're alone? Where are the guards?

Me: I want you.

Rellik: baby don't cry. \*sighs\* I promise I'll be there. Okay. .. how about I come back tomorrow?

Me: please

Rellik: \*chuckles\* you promise you'll stop stressing my son with all that crying for nothing.

Me: well your son wants you.

Rellik: tell him to hold on I'll be there.

~~

I was wearing a nike sports bra with Nike leggings and just socks. My hair was in a bun, right now I was in Rellik's house since he had a lot of security I felt safer there.

Que: bozza will be here in a few minutes.

Me: okay, thank you que.

He called me yesterday so I'm guessing he really came back for me. I tilted my head when Que stared at my huge boobs. He noticed I was glaring at him and he quickly left. Que is harmless and I won't jeopardize his job for him so I'll let this slide. I started eating the pizza from last night. The sweet sauce just did something to me.

Rellik: damn our son is growing

Me: baby!

I ran to him, more like wobble to him. He met me half way laughing at me struggling to run.

He bent down and kissed my stomach.

Rellik: ntwana yam. Were you good to mommy?

The baby started moving, Rellik's eyes lit up with excitement. I love that our son had that affect on him.

Me: he recognizes your voice.

Rellik: I missed you baby. Both of my babies

He kissed me, I had to stop it before I wanted more. I can't have sex right now I'm too big. He chuckled brushing my ass and kissing my boobs.

Rellik: I need to get you pregnant all the time. Your ass was big, but now damnnnn and man



those boobs. \*licks lips\* im one lucky dude.

Me: I know. \*grins\* now i want to know the whole Russia thing.

Rellk: Lelona.

Me: baby.

Rellik: \*chuckles\* some guy has beef with them i guess so they wanted to stop all business transactions they have. I had to be there to protect the deal we have with the Russians and let's just say, now they think I am their enemy.

Me: \*sighs\* could've just left it.

Rellik: and lose that much money? I'm worried they'll attack me here

Me: you'll die someday because of money-

I couldn't even finish my sentence without screaming. There were gunshots outside. Rellik quickly took me to the basement. He was

about to leave when I saw the water on the floor.

Me: Rellik!

He turned back and looked very scared too. The first time I've seen him scared.

Rellik: there's a tunnel I'll walk you through but I want you to walk there until the end there'll be my friend Carlos at the end. It's his house, he'll take you to the hospital.

Me: I'm not doing anything without you. \*sniffs\*

I held his hand tighter and he walked with me through the tunnel but it was hard to breathe and walk. The pains weren't there yet but I was just scared.

Rellik: Lelona we have to hurry you there.

Me: I'm not having this baby without you

I cried so painfully. He felt bad, and hugged me.

Rellik: okay, okay. I'll be there but baby the guards, the money in the house if they get in I'm fucked.

Me: who's more important? Money or our baby.

Rellik: fuck! Let's go.

I wiped my tears following him we walked for a long time well it felt like a long time.

Me: this is far.

Rellik: it's only 5 houses.

Me: they're mansions.

Rellik: we're here!

We stepped out the tunnel. And I could feel little bit of contractions but they were manageable.

~~

Me: I HATE YOU!

I screamed at Rellik feeling the pain of the contractions. I held his hand tighter and I could see he was in pain.

Me: take him out. Take this baby out now!

I cried in pain, trying to do breathing exercises. I am not having another baby ever again. No no no.

Me: this is the last one I swear Rellik. Oh my God.

Rellik: I'm so sorry baby.

He kissed my forehead as I cried, I was in legit pain.

Rellik: the doctor said you can't have stronger drugs you're about to give birth.

Me: muller will miss it?

He stayed silent and I looked down. I want my brother here. And just like the angel he is, he came through the door and I immediately let go of Rellik's hands and open my hands for my brother. He chuckles and hugs me.

Me: I don't want a child. This is painful. No

more sex for me.

Muller: \*laughs\* trust me when you see the little guy. It will all be worth it.

I looked at Rellik who was still flexing his hand.

Me: tell the doctor I want a contraceptive injection after this.

They both laughed but I was dead serious. I hate being in labor but its my first time.

~~

I felt tired and i opened my eyes. I smiled looking at Rellik's big buffed body holding our tiny son. I smiled looking at them. I stared in amazement that I created such a being. Once he saw me awake Rellik came close to me and gave me the baby. The nurse showed me how

to hold him, I stared at him with tears in my eyes. Even in pain, I was proud I made such a baby.

Nurse: a name yet?

Me: Xayden.

Rellik looked at me with this smile he was sort of surprised I picked something with x because I always wanted something with L and talked about it but we'll have that with our daughter. He kissed me and the nurse smiled at us.

Rellik: can't until he turns 1 and you become my wife officially.

[02/18, 07:38] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

INSERT 19

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I stared in awe at my new born he could hardly open his eyes but he was still perfect in my eyes. Xavier was still very much in awe as well. I think he was really accepting the fact that he was a dad. I loved the look he had on his face watching over me and Xayden.

Rellik: he has your eyes.

Me: \*smiles\* I don't see it.

Rellik: I look into them everyday and I fall in love each time. I know he has your eyes.



I blushed looking up at him, he chuckled and gave me a short kiss. Rellik really knows how to make me blush really. Scrappy and Nella came to visit. I was very happy to see her, she was more excited about seeing me son. I laughed at her

Nella: my godson looks so adorable!

Me: I know. He's gonna have his father's looks.

Scrappy and Rellik excused themselves I was worried when they walked out. I hope I really hope it's nothing bad.

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I looked at Scrappy because I knew it had to be something bad for him to want me outside the room.

Me: what's up?

Scraply: luckily they weren't in your house but they did shot up. It's almost ruined. In your next house you're going to need windows that are proofed.

I sighed I'm relief that my money and everything are still safe.

Me: the guards?

Scrappy: it looks like a bloody massacre there.

Me: you went there?

Scrappy: before I came here.

Me: damn.

I saw Fifi and Ghost approaching. I couldn't even smile thinking about the dead guards.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

× 1 YEAR LATER ×

.

I couldn't believe that a full year passed by and I am getting married tomorrow. Xayden was now 1 and active as ever. He definitely has his father's personality because they click so much. He even watches soccer with him even though he's confused he just gets hyped when his father gets hyped. We moved into a new house

that's closer to Fifi, Issy and Muller. I was feeding Xay when his father came downstairs and gave me a kiss. His son opened his arms so he could take him. I stopped rellik before he could.

Me: I'm still feeding him \*chuckles\*

Rellik: he looks like he doesn't even want to eat anymore \*laughs\*

Me: that's because he's attached to you.  
\*smiles\* I have never seen a son more in love with his father. They're usually mama's boys not this.

Rellik: don't worry you'll get a princess that'll be way more attached to you.

Me: nope. After 2 years.

Rellik: I know but another child right now wouldn't be bad.

Me: I want one when Xay is 3 that way he won't

feel like we're neglecting him when we're busy with the new born. And work right now is too much

Rellik: told you to open up your own cosmetics shop.

Me: and sell what? Makeup? That won't be a good income.

Rellik: but you love it. Money shouldn't be a problem because I have all the money we need.

Me: I don't even want to spend your money. Do you know how happy I get when I spend my own? And I studied for PR so I'll go for PR.

Rellik: fine then sacrifice your happiness for money.

Me: don't say that.

Rellik: \*laughs\* and don't have too much fun tonight at your bachelorette party. I won't hesitate to hurt people.

Me: I already told Nella no strippers.

Rellik: good.

Me: and the same goes to you.

Rellik: who would you hurt? \*laughs\*

Me: try me.

Rellik: you know I would never do that to you.

No strippers is a rule we both agreed on.

Me: good.

~~

I smiled at all my friends in lingerie. I was having a Bachelorette party that was lingerie themed.

Me: I'm serious Nella he would kill all those strippers.

Nella: I already cancelled them. \*laughs\*

Me: good.

We had a lot of fun, it was me, Nella, Jayde and Nella's other friend Kim. It was really fun and with no drama. I didn't invite Fifi and Issy because there were a lot of sexual games.

Me: wait, is it in?

Jay: no! \*laughs\*

I laughed looking for the hole. We were playing a game. I was blinded and i had to look for a hole on the cardboard to fit in the dildo. I screamed after I finally fit it in.

Me: \*laughs\* that was harder than I thought.

Nella: time for gifts! \*squeals\*

I grinned going to open the presents. I stared with the big black gift bag.

Me: ouu

Nella: that's from Mwah!

I laughed opening the gift. It was lingerie a lot of lingerie.

Nella: for the honeymoon babe's. You'll need them

We all started laughing. They looked really cute. I said thank you and passed one to the next pink glittery bag. When I opened it up it was sex toys.

Me: guys really? Can i have something for me and not me and Xavier? \*laughs\*

Kim: girl in marriage and motherhood you don't



get gifts for yourself.

Nella: oh Jesus. Now you too are about to bond over marriage \*rolls eyes\*

Me and Kim laughed at Nella's dramatic reactions she ended up laughing and that led to all of us laughing. We smoke 3 joints earlier and I was feeling very happy. I smoke weed, Xavier would kill me though he hasn't noticed anything. I learned from the model I'm working for. The way she stresses me out I needed that weed, but when she offered me cocaine. I shouted at her and she never tried teaching me, weed? That's fine but cocaine! That's way too extreme.

Me: well Kim is the only one married and I'm following after her.

We both gave each other a high five. JaydJayde

smiled at us, Nella just chuckled.

Jay: maybe those idiots will marry us too  
someday \*sighs\*

Nella: yup.

I wanted do laugh because my brother doesn't  
look like the marriage type but let me let her  
dream.

~~

.

-- RELLIK'S POV ~~

.

.

I called Lona when I was finished dressing up.  
She replied quick making me smile. Today was  
our wedding day.

Me: wife.

Lona: it hasn't happened yet \*laughs\*

Me: it will. You're ready to take my surname?

Lona: been ready. Isn't that why I have your ring?

Me: getting smart huh?

Lona: been smart boy.

Me: have that same mouth when I'm bending you over and tearing that ass up.

Lona: I will. You know i'd never back down.

Me: okay have that same energy in our honeymoon.

Lona: I will \*laughs\*

Me: damn you make me want to me want to see you right now so I could fuck you until you want me to stop.

Lona: that's rape.

Me: it's not if you want it.

Lona: \*chuckles\* I'm telling you, you stop.

Me: and who begs me to get in again? \*laughs\*

Lona: I don't beg \*laughs\*

Me: really now? Don't make me record you.

Lona: I'd kill you.

Me: and risk being a single mother? \*smirks\*

Lona: I'll. Have another nigga play daddy to your son \*smirks\*

Me: okay let's stop.

She laughed and I ended up chuckling. I love that we have an close relationship that some people would say we're best friends well she was my best friend before we dated but I always wanted more.

Scrappy: let's go ntwana.

I nodded and we drove to the church. Last night was a wild night but mostly I had fun. I know me and Lona agreed on stripper but this nigga Scrappy never listens so I could a lap dance from another stripper man it was so heated I almost took her to my room but I remembered that if I do I could lose Lona forever. I didn't sleep with her I just stopped the lap dance.

Scrappy: marriage man

Me: I know right.

Scrappy: who would've thought. The play boy himself leaving the bachelor shit to us.

Me: can't wait for the day Nella realises you're shit \*laughs\*

Scrappy: shut up.

This nigga has a new girlfriend and I won't lie she's way too beautiful. Even more beautiful than Nella, but man he can't keep his dick in his pants.

Me: I can't wait to finally have that girl for life.

Scrappy: I don't see myself married at all  
\*laughs\*

Me: I didn't either but when you find that one, you just know she's the one.

I didn't want to say Nella wasn't the one for him because it's not my place but clearly she's not if he's going to continue cheating on her. But that's not my business today I'm getting married to the love of my life.

.

.

.

I feel so bad for not posting. I'm embarrassed even, I got the school but now I need to sort out res shit and it's hard. Pray for me

[02/18, 07:38] Wdz: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

SEASON 2

SEASON FINALE

INSERT 20

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I cried looking at myself in the mirror. I didn't even know this new Lona but I loved her with every fibre in my being. Anyone who would've told me in my first year, I'm going to get married in would've told them to stop lying. I remember the panic attacks and the constant bullying I experienced from my family and friends. I decided to not invite Isipho and Dabs so I'm guessing dad isn't coming either. But it's okay I have all the people that love me. I want no drama in my wedding. Someone knocked on the door, I said come in wiping my tears thank God makeup was the last time I planned on doing or else it would be a mess. I smiled at Muller.

Muller: someone is ready for her big day.

I cried even more hugging him. Now I miss King more than anything. He would crack up a joke just to see me smile or give me good advice



about this dad thing. Muller brushed my back as I continued crying. This has to be the happiest day of my life but I'm crying over my spineless father.

Me: I have no one to walk me down the aisle.

Muller: I'm here.

Me: tradition says it has to be the father.

\*sniffs\*

Muller: fuck tradition. And I'm a father more than a brother.

I laughed nodding. I hugged him again.

Me: thank you.

Muller: for what now?

Me: \*laughs\* for being the best brother a girl could ask for. I don't know where I'd be without

you.

Muller: you're not dying you're getting married.

\*laughs\*

I playfully hit him joining him on the laugh.

Me: to think you hated our relationship.

Muller: any brother would be worried. That Nigg  
a was a man whore

Me: I know, he was my best friend before all  
Lloyd of this. Still can't believe he changed just  
for me.

Muller: he really loves you. I see all that shit now.

Me: feels like a fairytale.

Muller: when a nigga loves a girl, they love hard.  
I see that in him now.

Me: yeah \*smiles\*

Muller: now finish up. I'm ready for this wedding to end. I hate suits.

I laughed at him and proceeded with my makeup.

.

.

-- SCRAPPY'S POV --

.

.

I looked at her picture smiling. I don't know how but it's crazy how I am dating this girl and she still hasn't realised I have a daughter and I'm dating Nella. I don't know why I haven't told her, I feel like she'd leave me if she did. She's an independent woman that has her own hair salon business. She's very independent to the point where she never lets me buy her anything no matter how hard I convince her. I saw Nella

approaching me and I turned off my phone. I smiled looking at her. She was really beautiful and I love her I'm just not in love with her. I can't tell her because that would break her heart something like that scares me. Nella held me down when no one was there for me and for me to just dump her for a fling would be crazy but at the same time I don't feel like this is a fling. The way that girl makes me feel is crazy and the sex is on point.

Nella: where's your mind at?

Me: no where. Just thinking.

She furrowed her eyebrows and nodded. I wanted to change the topic quick.

Me: what did the nanny say?

Nella: they're still okay.

I nodded and checked her beautiful dress. The bridesmaid dresses were dope. Kids weren't allowed and I was okay with that because if my kid was here I'd probably not concentrate that's how much I love my princess. She literally has me wrapped around her finger. My phone rang, I looked at the caller ID and instantly rejected the call and said I'm busy.

Nella: who's that?

Me: work related.

She nodded and kissed my lips before disappearing off to get ready for the wedding. I can't tell Nella I'm not happy anymore or i've fallen out of love for her because she has been with me through so much, sacrificing my happiness is the least I could do and my

daughter deserves to live in in a happy home.  
Even if that means sneaking around.

.

~~

.

--RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I couldn't take my eyes off her in that wedding dress even after she was next to me. Now was time for the vows. I cleared my throat feeling nervous. Everyone started laughing. I chuckled at that.

Me: baby. You know we've been through so much, and each time that just brings our love closer together. Nobody thought this day would come, they all thought you were just lust but I

knew. I knew from the day I saw you in that party looking all natural and beautiful I knew I was going to marry you on day even if it took a lifetime convincing you I knew you would be mine. I wanted you to be the mother of my children and my wife now my dreams are coming true. I can't wait for the life we have ahead of us.

She looked at me with tears in her eyes. I wiped them and they just fell more. The pastor said now it was her turn

Lona: you loved me even when I didn't love myself. You showed me everyday that you never want sex and you wanted more. At first I was so scared of you \*laughs with audience\* you looked really scary then you turned out to be real soft-

Me: don't get it twisted everyone. I'm soft with

my wife, everyone else I will burst your head open.

We all laughed at my joke. She playfully smacked my arm.

Lona: you were my best friend then lover then baby father now husband. All in all you're my everything and more Xavier. I know we'll survive this, marriage kills a lot of couples but we'll show them how it's done.

The crowd went crazy at her last sentence. I smirked nodding, yup that's my wife. After the "I Dos" we had to kiss, so we did the practiced handshake we had then gave a kiss at the end. Everyone loved that. Now off to the reception.

~~

.



.

Me: wife.

Lona: \*laughs\* oh gosh.

Me: I will never get tired of saying that.

Lona: I know you won't. And I don't want you too \*smiles\*

We shared a short kiss and laid on the jet waiting for it to finally move but it was taking some time. I received a call from scrappy.

me: honeymoon starts after the wedding.

Scrappy: Nella! She.... fuck! She's-

Me: woah woah! Calm down. Talk slow. What's wrong with Nella?

Scrappy: she went through my phone and i- I had to come clean. Now she's. ..

Me: she's what!?

Scrappy: she's dead.

Me: what!?

Scrappy: I thought she was okay man, I really did! We talked and she asked for some Tasha's food then when I came back she used my gun man. She killed herself and the letter she left said something like "I hope you'll love our daughter not like how you loved me" I know I'm a fuck up I should've let her go. I did let her go. You said it's better she knew I told her and now she's dead. I told her Xavier! I let her know she deserves someone better! Someone other than me she decided to kill herself! Fuck man I hate the shit I did to that girl.

Me: I'll be there right now.

Scrappy: Rellik-

Me: give me an Hour.

I hung up and quickly got up. Knowing scrappy he'll blame himself and kill himself. I don't like that he cheated on her because he could've just let her know he's not happy but he found love elsewhere and i knew that would be too hard for nella to handle.

Lona: where are we going?

I picked her up bridal style and walked out the jet

Lona: if you miss a step and drop me i'll slap you. \*laughs\*

She saw I wasn't laughing so she looked at me worried.

Lona: what's wrong! ?

Me: I need you to calm down for a bit.

Lona: what's wrong?

I'm guessing she didn't hear the phone call because I did walk a bit further away from her.

Lona: I need to know!

I opened the range rover door and let her in. While the door was opened i held her thighs.

Me: baby, promise me you'll be okay.

I took my phone and messaged the people working at the company of the jet to bring a doctor quick. Knowing Lona she won't take

these news lightly at all. Fuck our honeymoon is ruined. It didn't even take 10 minutes and they arrived.

Lona: they're here now. What is it!? Of you cheated on me and gave me a disease I'm so divorcing you.

Me: Nella's dead.

She looked at me shocked. She just laughed.

Lona: very funny. Now let's go baby we're late for our honeymoon.

I looked at her with sad eyes. She shook her head violently. She screamed making me very worried.

Lona: no! No no no no no! \*cries\*

She tried getting out the car and out of my grip. She screamed even hitting me who was holding her. Seeing her like this made me have tears in my eyes. I wasn't there when she first heard about King's death so seeing her like this, it really broke me. The doctor had to sedate her so she could be okay.

.

xxxx

.

-- NARRATOR'S POV --

.

Nella killed herself because she couldn't handle Scrappy falling out of love for her. He sacrificed his happiness and love for his new girl to make sure she's okay but when he finally came clean she couldn't take it. Now they're little princess

permanently lives with Scrappy and his girlfriend. Lona still hates Scrappy because to her, he took away her best friend. Although she still visits their daughter she still hates him. Muller and Jayde had a second child and still no marriage. Muller only sees marriage as a waste of time because they love each other and that's all that matters. Lona and Xavier are still going strong. Now with their twins growing, 2 boys. She wants to try again for a daughter and we all know Xavier loves the baby making process. Issy ended up finding herself a new love, she doesn't know her old one is dead. Ghost and Fifi will always be there for each other and they're still going strong. They even decided to adopt a new born to sparkle their love. Xavier still leads the gang with monster tendencies but in the household he becomes soft daddy and husband.

.

THE END.